



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

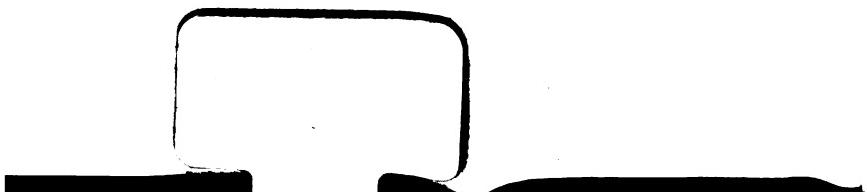
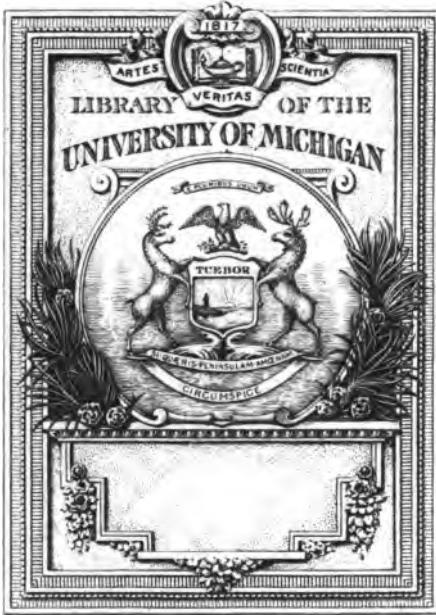
Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

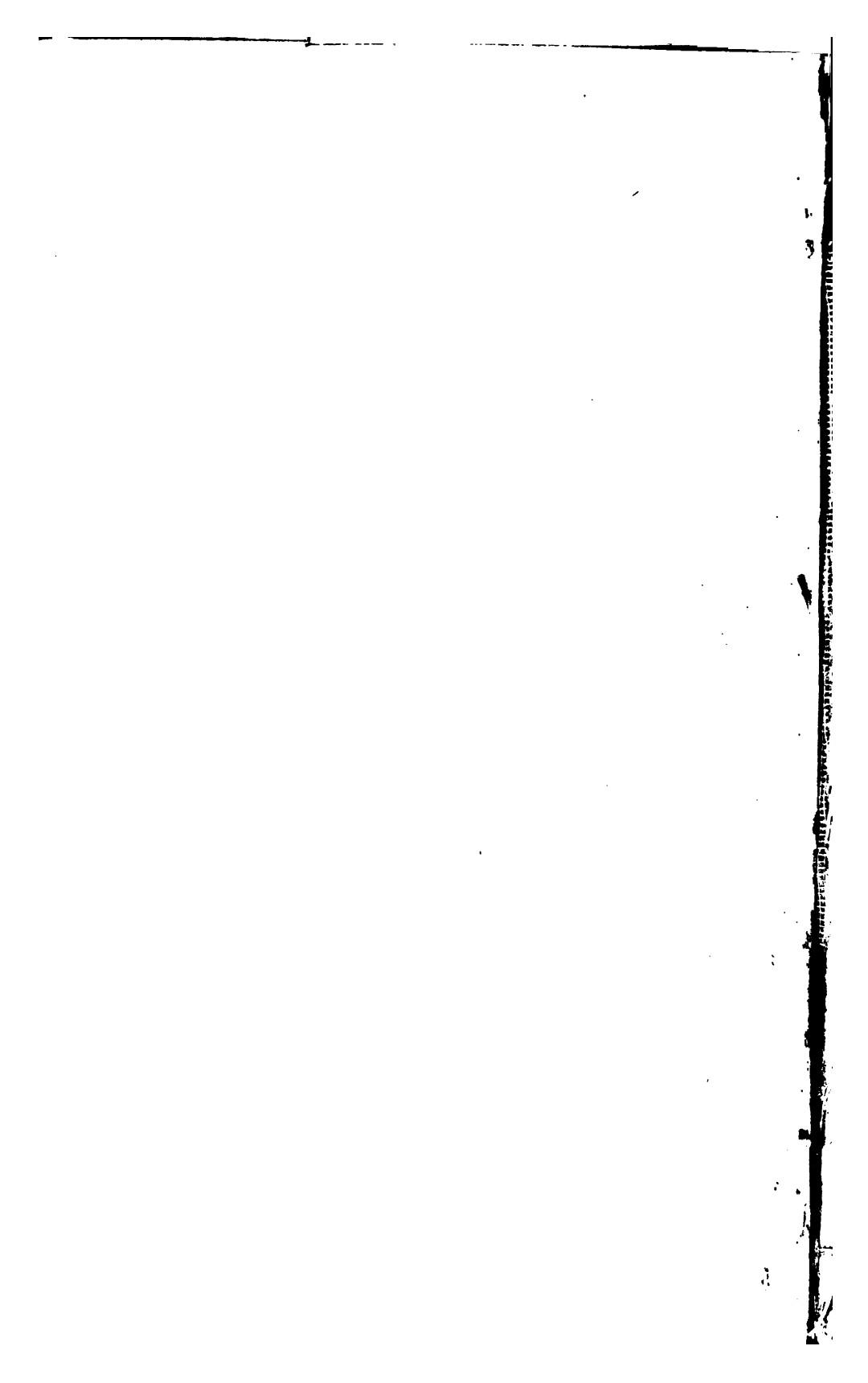
- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

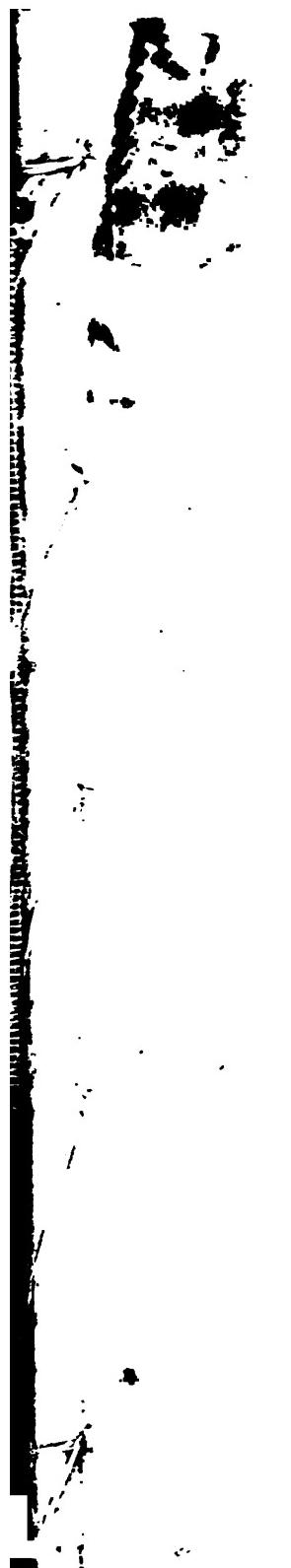
### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>



Grad. R.  
PR  
28°  
L7'  
no. 10







**EARLY PROSE AND POETICAL TRACTS.**

**VOL. I.**



EARLY  
PROSE AND POETICAL TRACTS.

ILLUSTRATIVE OF

THE DRAMA AND LITERATURE OF THE REIGN  
OF QUEEN ELIZABETH.

IN TWO VOLUMES.

VOL I.

RICH'S "FAREWELL TO MILITARY PROFESSION."

NASH'S "PIERCE PENNYLESS."

ARMIN'S "NEST OF NINNIES."

PRINTED FOR THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY,

AND TO BE HAD OF

W. SKEFFINGTON, AGENT TO THE SOCIETY, 192, PICCADILLY.

1853.



# EIGHT NOVELS

EMPLOYED BY

# ENGLISH DRAMATIC POETS

OF THE REIGN OF

## QUEEN ELIZABETH.

ORIGINALLY PUBLISHED BY BARNABY RICHE  
IN THE YEAR 1581,

AND REPRINTED FROM A COPY OF THAT DATE IN THE  
BODLEIAN LIBRARY.



LONDON:  
PRINTED FOR THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY.

---

1846.

The Council of the Shakespeare Society desire it to be understood that they are not answerable for any opinions or observations that may appear in the Society's publications; the Editors of the several works being alone responsible for the same.

## P R E F A C E.

---

It will not be disputed that the present volume contains a very amusing assemblage of early novels, independently of their claims from intimate connection with Shakespeare and other old dramatists. The author, Barnaby Riche, in the “Conclusion” of his work, informs us that some of the stories had, even then, been applied to the purposes of the stage, and we shall presently more fully advert to this interesting point.

How far any of them are original it is not very easy to decide. In his address “to the Readers in general,” Rich states that of the eight “histories” five were “but forged only for delight,” while the other three were written in Italian, by an author whom he designates by the initials L. B. Hence we might infer that the five had been “forged only for delight” by himself, if we did not know that some of them were founded upon foreign authorities. One of the five, in a manner claimed by Riche, which stands second in his volume, (and, in our view, of peculiar importance, because it was employed by Shakespeare in his “Twelfth Night”) is unquestionably, in all its main features, the same as in Bandello, who could not be the Italian writer pointed

the introductory matter having been omitted—a circumstance to be regretted, because it contains an illustration of a passage in “*Midsummer Night’s Dream*,” but not to be wondered at, inasmuch as the perfect copy of Riche’s “*Farewell*,” in 1581, had not then been brought to light.

It appears that there is an imperfect copy of the date of 1581 in the library of C. K. Sharpe, Esq., of Edinburgh; and from it, in 1835, was given the last novel it contains, called “*Philotus and Emelia*,” as an appendix to the old Scottish comedy of “*Philotus*,” 1603, when it was reprinted by Mr. J. Whitefoord Mackenzie, for the Bannatyne Club. This is a second drama, which may have been founded upon part of the contents of the work under consideration; but whether Riche alluded to it as one of the pieces actually on the stage when he published his “*Farewell*,” may, we think, be more than doubted. It seems to us questionable whether the Scottish “*Philotus*” was ever acted, or was intended by the author, whoever he might be, for representation; and, at all events, we are of opinion that when Riche spoke of the subjects of some of his novels, as having been already adapted to the purposes of public amusement at a theatre, he referred to performances in London, where the Scottish “*Philotus*” could never have been exhibited. In his able preface Mr. Mackenzie mentions that “the plot, and indeed the entire story of *Philotus*, are borrowed from Riche;” but it seems to us that the play is older than the novel: however, it is needless to enter more fully into the question, because

the old copy of “*Philotus*” in 1603, collated with a subsequent edition in 1612, may be said to have been rendered accessible, to such as wish to read it, by the very careful and beautiful fac-simile made of it in Edinburgh. Our notion is that the Scottish “*Philotus*,” though not printed until 1603, may at an early date have been derived by its author from some authority, to which, perhaps, Riche also resorted.

The incidents in the first novel of the ensuing series are very much the same as those of the play, “*The Weakest goeth to the Wall*,” which was twice printed, first in 1600, and secondly in 1618, the title-page professing that it had been “sundry times played by the right honourable Earl of Oxenford, Lord Great Chamberlain of England, his servants.” If for “Lord Great Chamberlain of England” we could read, “Lord High Chamberlain of her Majesty,” this was the company to which Shakespeare belonged, and which, subsequently to the accession of James I., changed its style, by patent, to that of the King’s Servants, or Players. “*The Weakest goeth to the Wall*” would then have had the advantage of being represented by the same actors as had been engaged in performing the works of our great dramatist. Not one of the names of the characters is the same as in Riche’s novel, the scene of action is entirely changed, and an attempt is made to give the piece a historical appearance, by the introduction of the King of France and various members of his court. In the very first scene the King is represented as about to embark on a pilgrimage to the Holy Land

and reproaching some of his peers for interposing delay :—

How long shall I entreat? how long, my lords,  
Will you detain our holy pilgrimage?  
Are not our vows already registered  
Upon the unvalued Sepulchre of Christ?

The last line affords an instance of the precise mode in which Shakespeare uses the word “unvalued” for *invaluable* in “Richard III.”; and some portions of the play would hardly be unworthy of his pen. The novel of “Sappho, Duke of Mantona,” may also have been one of those which Riche tells us existed in a dramatised form when he wrote in 1581, and that older play may have served for the foundation of “The Weakest goeth to the Wall:” as it appeared in print in 1600, it may have been a revival of the more ancient drama, with additions and alterations, such as were constantly made by our early playwrights, in order to give new attractiveness to productions they found in possession of the company for which they wrote. Of this practice we need give no proofs at this time of day, and after the illustration the point has received of late years; and the course taken, in the instance before us, was possibly this:—when Riche composed his novel, there was a play upon the subject in the course of representation, and that play, not long before it appeared in print in 1600, under the title of “The Weakest goeth to the Wall,” had received some modernizations and improvements which on revival increased its popularity. The names of the characters may, or may not, have been continued from the older drama, and it seems more likely that

Riche changed them in his narrative, which was made up from the drama, in order to afford to his work a greater appearance of novelty.

As “The Weakest goeth to the Wall” is now before us, and as it is intimately connected with the ensuing reprint, we may subjoin a few specimens from parts that more especially illustrate Riche’s story of “Sappho, Duke of Mantona.” The following is from a scene in which Emmanuel, Duke of Brabant, having discovered the clandestine love of the noble foundling Ferdinand for his daughter, accuses him of it.

*Emmanuel.* Sirrah, come hither. Didst thou never hear  
How first I found thee, being but a child,  
Hid in the sedge fast by a river side,  
As it should seem, of purpose to be lost,  
Being so young, that thou hadst not the sense  
To tell thy name, or of what place thou wast?

*Ferdinando.* I have heard your lordship often so report it.

*Emm.* Did thy adulterous parents cast thee off,  
As it should seem, ashamed of thy birth,  
And have I made a nursery of my court  
To foster thee, and, grown to what thou art,  
Enrich thee with my favours every where,  
That, from the loathsome mud from whence thou camest,  
Thou art so bold, out of thy buzzard’s nest,  
To gaze upon the sun of her perfections?  
Is there no beauty that can please thine eye,  
But the divine and splendid excellence  
Of my beloved, dear Odillia?  
How dar’st thou but with trembling and with feare  
Looke up toward the heaven of her high grace,  
And even astonished with the admiration,  
Let fall the gawdy plumes of thy proud heart?

Dare any wretch so vile, and so obscure,  
Attempt the honour of so great a princess ?  
*Fer.* Hear me, my lord !  
*Odillia.* Nay, hear me, princely father !  
For what you speak to him concerns me most.  
Never did he attempt to wrong mine honour,  
Nor did his tongue e'er utter yet one accent,  
But what a virgin's ear might safely hear.  
I never saw him exercise himself,  
In any place where I myself was present,  
But with such graceful modest bashfulness  
As well beseemed both his youth and duty, &c.

They contrive for the time to persuade Emmanuel that he is mistaken in his suspicions, but in the end the pair make their escape, as narrated in Riche's novel. Another point of close resemblance occurs where the father of Ferdinando (who is called Lodowick in the play and Sappho in the novel), in his extreme poverty, undertakes to become sexton of a country church : the author of the drama has not thought proper to vary from this somewhat degrading incident, which perhaps was fixed so fast in the popular recollection, that he could not venture to make any change. He introduces a parish priest, called Sir Nicholas, and the following is a small part of the dialogue between him and the hero. Sir Nicholas says,

Nor do I know any that lacks a servant,  
But this ; the sexton of our church is dead,  
And we do lack an honest painful man,  
Can make a grave and keep our clock in frame,  
And now and then to toll a passing bell.  
If thou art willing so to be employed,  
I can befriend thee.

*Lodowick.* Oh ! with all my heart,  
And think me treble happy by the office.

*Sir Nic.* Thy wages is not great, not much above  
Two crowns a quarter, but thy vails will help, &c.

This occupation is rather unheroical, and many would have been better pleased that a disguised duke should have spurned the base employment, and preferred starvation : when Lodowick is afterwards discovered, it reminds one a good deal of the scene in Sheridan's mock tragedy, and of the exclamation “ Am I a beefeater now ? ” We may here notice, that a good deal of absurd comic business is forced into “ The Weakest goeth to the Wall ” in the person of Barnaby Bunch, a botcher, who however is now and then amusing, and gives some curious hints illustrative of ancient manners : among other things he introduces a shred of a parody upon the celebrated ballad of John Dory :—

John Dory bought him an ambling nag,  
To Paris for to ride-a,  
And happy are they can seeke and find,  
For they are gone to hide-a.

Such matter as this is used to lighten the serious business of the piece, and from the latter portion we will make another quotation. Lodowick, being restored to rank and power by his victorious sword, Emmanuel, Duke of Brabant, makes a charge, before him and old Epernoune, against Ferdinando for having stolen his daughter Odillia : the second line of what follows contains one of Shakespeare's words.

*Epernoune.* Oh ! wherefore stain you virtue and renown  
With such foul terms of ignomy and shame ?

*Emmanuel.* Virtue, my lords! you gild a rotten stick :  
You spread fair honour's garment on the ground,  
And dignify a lothsome swine with pearl.  
This shadow of a seeming gentleman,  
This gloss of piety, deceives your sight :  
He's nothing so, nor so, but one, my lords,  
Whom I have fostered in court of alms,  
And to requite my careful indulgence  
Hath, Judas-like, betray'd his master's life,  
And stolen mine only daughter, to allay  
The sensual fire of his enkindled lust ;  
For which let me have justice and the law.

*Lodowick.* You shall have justice, though I cannot think  
So fair a shape hath had so foul a forge.

*Eper.* Alack the day, misfortune should so soon  
Disturb our friendship was so well begun !  
Come hither, Ferdinand, and tell me truth,  
If thou be guilty as the duke informs ?

*Ferdinando.* I not deny, my lord, but I am married  
Unto Odilia, though unworthy far  
Of such a gracious blessing : yet her love  
Was forward in the choice as well as mine.

*Emm.* See, how he goes about to choake the fact  
With love and marriage ! No, adulterous swain,  
Your hedge-betrothing covenant shall not serve.  
Where is your sweet companion, where is she ? &c.

Of course the whole matter is settled, when it is discovered before the end of the play (which is not divided into acts and scenes) that Ferdinand is no other than son to Lodowick : this disclosure does not, however, occur until the interest and suspense are wound up by the introduction of the headsman, who is to execute Ferdinand on the spot, as the law then stood, for stealing the daughter of a sovereign prince. The play ends with the announcement of the return of

the King of France from his pilgrimage to Jerusalem, but he has not been heard of during the whole progress of the plot. As a whole, “The Weakest goeth to the Wall” deserves reprinting, and, although anonymous, we hope it will not, at the proper time, escape the attention of the Shakespeare Society.

We have little more to say of the ensuing sheets but to warn the reader against the misprints of the original edition: some of these we have corrected, because they were obvious, while others we have allowed to remain, because it may, possibly, be a question whether they do not contain the true reading: in such cases we have not allowed ourselves to take any liberty with the text. On page 95 we have two instances of the former kind, where in line 20 it is evident from the rhyme that *thrall* is the right word, and not “*thrust*,” as it is absurdly given in the copy of 1581: in the same way, in line 29, *charge* must be right, and not “*change*,” as it is misprinted in the old edition. On the other hand, on page 113, line 17, we have permitted “*stormes and shapes*” to stand, because it is doubtful whether the author might not write it, instead of “*formes and shapes*,” which seems more to accord with the sense. Other instances it is hardly necessary to particularize.

If Riche translated all these novels, as he professes to have done some of them, he here and there took some remarkable licenses; in proof it may only be necessary to point out the mention of “Scogan’s man” (alluding to the famous English jester of the reign of Henry VIII.), and of the custom of introducing the devil into plays in England, both of which occur on

page 218: although that may, perhaps, be considered the most original part of the volume, it is indisputable that the story there told is only a modification of Machiavelli's "Belphegor." The introductory matter to the whole is highly amusing and curious, not merely where Riche gives an account of the chief dances then popular among all classes, but where he speaks individually, and by name, of his patron Sir Christopher Hatton, and of his style of housekeeping at Holdenby in Northamptonshire. These peculiarities give the volume an unusual degree of interest.

Those who wish for a personal account of Barnaby Riche, and a notice of his writings, may be referred to Mr. P. Cunningham's full and satisfactory Introduction to the reprint of our author's "Honesty of this Age" for the Percy Society in 1844: we can add nothing to it.

Riche his Farewell  
to Militarie profession : con-  
teining verie pleasaunt discourses  
fit for a peaceable tyme.

Gathered together for the onely delight of  
the courteous Gentlewomen bothe  
of England and Irelande,

For whose onely pleasure thei were collected together,  
And unto whom thei are directed and dedicated  
by Barnabe Riche, Gentleman.

*Malui me divitem esse quā vocari.*

Imprinted at London, by  
Robart Walley.



To the right courteous Gentlewomen, bothe of Englande  
and Irelande, Barnabe Riche wisheth all thynges  
thei should have appertainyng to their  
honour, estimation, and all other  
their honest delights.

Gentlewomen,—I am sure there are many (but especially of  
suche as beste knowe me) that wil not a little wonder to see  
suche alteration in me, that havyng spent my yonger daies in  
the warres emongest men, and vowed my self onely unto  
Mars, should now, in my riper yeares, desire to live in peace  
emongst women, and to consecrate my self wholy unto Venus.  
But yet the wiser sorte can verie well consider, that the older  
we waxe the riper our witte, and the longer we live, the better  
we can conceive of thynges appertainyng to our owne profites,  
though harebrained youth overhaled me for a tyme, that I  
knewe not bale from blisse. Yet wisdome now hath warned  
me, that I well knowe cheese from chalke: I see now it is  
lesse painfull to followe a fiddle in a gentlewoman's chamber,  
then to marche after a drumme in the feeld; and more sounde  
sleepyng under a silken canapie, cloase by a freend, then under  
a bushe in the open feelde, within a mile of our foe: and  
nothyng so daungerous to be wounded with the luryng looke  
of our beloved mistres, as with the crewell shotte of our hate-  
full enemie; the one possest with a pitifull harte, to helpe  
where she hath hurte; the other with a deadly hate, to kill  
where thei might save.

Experience now hath taught me, that to bee of Mars his  
crewe, there is nothyng but paine, travaill, tormoill, disquiet,

colde, hunger, thriste, penurie, badde lodging, worse fare, unquiet slepe, with a number of other calamities that haps I knowe not how. And when a souldier hath thus served in many a bloudie broile, a flappe with a foxe taile shall bee his beste reward, for I see no better recompence that any of theim can gette. Now contrary to bee of Venus bande, there is pleasure, sporte, joye, solace, mirthe, peace, quiet reste, daintie fare, with a thousande other delites, suche as I cannot rehearse ; and a man, havyng served but a reasonable tyme, maie sometymes take a taste at his mistres lippes for his better recompence.

But now (gentlewomen) as I have vowed myself to bee at your dispositions, so I knowe not how to frame myself to your contentations, when I consider with how many commendable qualities he ought to bee endued, that should be welcomed into your blessed companies. I finde in my self no one maner of exercise, that might give me the least hope to win your good likinges. As firste for dauncyng, although I like the measures verie well, yet I could never treade them aright, nor to use measure in any thyng that I went aboute, although I desired to performe all thynges by line and by leavell, what so ever I tooke in hande. Our galliardes are so curious, that thei are not for my daunsyng, for thei are so full of trickes and tournes, that he whiche hath no more but the plaine sinquepace, is no better accoumpted of then a verie bongler ; and for my part thei might assone teache me to make a capricornus, as a capre in the right kinde that it should bee.

For a jeigge my heeles are too heavie : and these braules are so busie, that I love not to beate my braines about them.

A rounde is too giddie a daunce for my diet ; for let the dauncers runne about with as muche speede as thei maie, yet are thei never a whit the nier to the ende of their course, unlesse with often tourning thei hap to catch a fall : and so thei ende the daunce with shame, that was begonne but in sporte.

These hornepipes I have hated from my verie youth ; and I knowe there are many other that love them as well as I.

Thus you maie perceive that there is no daunce but either I like not of theim, or thei like not of me, so that I can daunce neither. There resteth then, if I could plaie of any instrumente, or that I had any sight in songe, whereby I might delight your daintie eares (gentlewomen) by sweete plaiyng, or fainyng some pretie dities ; but to the firste my fingers would never be brought in frame ; for the seconde, my mouthe is so unpleasaunt, either to syng or to faigne, as would rather breedre your loathyng then your liking.

Why, yet, if I could discourse pleasauntly, to drive away the tyme with amourous devises, or that my conceipte would serve me, either to propone pretie questions, or to give readie aunsweres, with a number of other delights, too long to be rehearsed, there were some comfort that I might bee alowed of emongst you. But my capacitie is so grosse, my wittes be so blunt, and all my other senses are so dulle, that I am sure you would soner condemne me for a dunce, then confirme me for a disciple, fit to whisper at all in a gentlewoman's eare.

But yet, I truste (gentlewomen) when you shall perceive the zeale that I beare to my newe profession, although you will not presently admit me to the pulpit, yet you will not denaie me to be one of your parishe ; where, if it please you but to place me in the bodie of the churche, you shall finde my devotion as muche as he that kneles next the chauncell doore.

And here (gentlewomen) the better to manifest the farther regarde of my duetie, I have presented you with a fewe rough heawen histories ; yet, I dare undertake, so warely polished, that there is nothing let slipp that might breedre offence to your modest myndes.

I have made bolde to publish theim under your savecundites, and I trust it shall nothyng at all offend you. My last request is, that at your pleasures you shall peruse theim, and with your favours you will defende them ; whiche if I maie perceive, not to bee misliked of emongest you, my encouragement will bee suche, that I trust, within a verie shorte space, you shall see me growe from a yong punie to a sufficient scholar.

And thus (gentlewomen) wishyng to you all  
what your selves doe beste like of,  
I humbly take my leave.

Yours in the waie of honestie,

BARNABE RICHE.

To the noble Souldiers, bothe of Englande and Irelande,  
Barnabe Riche wisheth as to hymself.

There is an old proverbe (noble souldiours), and thus it foloweth : " It is better to be happie then wise ;" but what it is to bee happie how shold I discipher, who never in my life could yet attaine to any happe at all that was good, and yet I have had souldiours lucke and speede as well as the reste of my profession. And with wisedome I will not meddle—I never came where it grewe ; but this I dare boldly affirme (and the experiance of the present tyme doeth make dailey proofe), that wit standes by in a thredbare coate, where folly sometyme sittes in a velvet goun ; and how often is it seen that vice shall be advaunced, where vertue is little or naught at all regarded : small deserte shall highly bee preferred, where well doyng shall goe unrewarded, and flatterie shall be welcommed for a guest of greate accompt, where plaine Tom tell troth shall be thrust out of doores by the shoulders : and to speake a plaine truthe in deede, doe ye not see pipers, parysites, fiddlers, dauncers, plaiers, jesters, and suche others, better esteemed and made of, and greater benevolence used towarde them, then to any others that indeavour themselves to the moste commendable qualities.

Then, seeyng the abuse of this present age is suche, that follies are better esteemed then matters of greater waight, I have stept on to the stage amongst the reste, contented to plaie a part, and have gathered together this small volume of histories, all treatyng (sir reverence of you) of love.

I remember that in my last booke, intituled " The Allarum to Englande," I promised to take in hande some other thyng,

but believe me it was not this that I ment ; for I pretended then to have followed on, and where I ended with the decaie of marciall discipline, so I ment to have begun againe with the disciplines of warre, and with all to have set forthe the orders of sondrie battailles, and the maner of skirmiges, with many plattes of fortification ; but especially those of the Lowe Countries, as Delfte, Delftes Haven, Roterdame, Leiden, the Breylle, bothe the hedde and the toun, Gorcoum, Gouldfluce, Maaselandefluce, the Crympe, with diverse others worthie the perusyng, for suche as have not seen them ; but I see the tyme serves not for any suche thyng to be accoumpted of, and therefore to fitte the tyme the better, I have putte forthe these lovyng histories, the whiche I did write in Irelande at a vacant tyme, before the comyng over of James Fitz Morice : and it pleased me the better to doe it, onely to keep myself from idelnesse, and yet thei saie it were better to be idle then ill occupied. But I truste I shall please gentlewomen, and that is all the gaine that I looke for ; and herein I doe but followe the course of the worlde, for many, now adaiers, goe aboute, by as great devise as maie bee, how thei might become women theimselfes. How many gentlemen shall you see at this present daie, that I dare undertake, in the wearyng of their apparell, in the setting of their ruffes, and the freselyng of their heire, are more new fangeled and foolishe, then any curtisan of Venice.

And I beseeche you (gentlemen) give me leave to tell you a tale, that comes even now in my mynde : the matter is not worthe the hearyng, but yet very straunge unto me at the first.

It was my fortune, at my last beyng at London, to walke through the Strande towardes Westminster, where I mett one came ridyng towardes me on a footclothe nagge, apparailed in a Frenche ruffe, a Frenche cloake, a Frenche hose, and in his hande a greate fanne of feathers, bearyng them up (verie womanly) against the side of his face. And for that I had

never seen any man weare them before that daie, I beganne to thinke it impossible that there might a manne bee founde so foolishe as to make hym self a scorne to the worlde, to weare so womanish a toye ; but rather thought it had been some shamelesse woman, that had disguised herself like a manne in our hose, and our cloakes : for our dublettes, gounes, cappes, and hattes, thei had got long agoe.

But by this tyme he was come some thyng nire me, and I might see he had a bearde, whereby I was assured that he should have been a manne, whereat I beganne to muse with myself, whether his simplicitie were more to be pitied, or his follie more to be laughed at ; for in myne opinion, it is as fonde a sight to see a manne with such a bable in his hande, as to see a woman ride through the streate with a launce in hers.

And as he passed by me, I sawe three followyng that were his menne, and taking the hindermoste by the arme, I asked hym what gentlewoman his maister was ? but the fellowe, not understandyng my meanyng, told me his master's name, and so departed.

I beganne then to muse with myself, to what ende that fanne of feathers served, for it could not bee to defende the sunne from the burnyng of his beautie, for it was in the beginnyng of Februarie, when the heate of the sunne maie bee verie well indured.

Now if it were to defende the winde, or the coldnesse of the aire, my thinke a Frenche hoode had been a great deale better, for that had been both gentlewoman like, and beyng close pinde dounre aboute his eares, would have kepte his hedde a greate deale warmer ; and then, a Frenche hoode on his hedde, a Frenche ruffe aboute his necke, a Frenche cloake on his backe, and a paire of Frenche hose on his legges had been right—a la mode de Fraunce : and this had bin somethyng sutable to his witte.

But I thinkē he did it rather to please gentlewomen, and

the better to shewe what honor he bare theim, would wearre one of the greatest vanities that long to their sexe. And to this ende (gentlemen) I have tolde you my tale, that you might perceive the sundrie meanes we use, and all to please women. I see it is the pathe that all desire to pace, and sure I would wishe my frendes to tread the same trace ; for what is he that is wise, which desires to be a souldiour ? Mars, his court, is full of bale, Venus is fulle of blisse. And my good componiens and fellowe souldiours, if you will followe myne advise, laie aside your weapons, hang up your armours by the walles, and learne an other while (for your better advauncementes) to pipe, to feddle, to syng, to daunce, to lye, to forge, to flatter, to cary tales, to set ruffe, or to doe any thynge that your appetites beste serve unto, and that is better fittyng for the tyme. This is the onely meane that is best, for a man to bryng himself in credite : otherwise I knowe not whiche waies a man might bende hymself, either to gett gaine or good report.

For, first, the militarie profession, by meanes whereof menne were advaunced to the greatest renowne, is now become of so slender estimation, that there is no accompt neither made of it, nor any that shall professe it.

To become a courtier, there is as little gaines to be gotten ; for liberalitie, who was wont to be a principall officer, as well in the court as in the country, by whose meanes wel doyng could never go unrewarded, is tourned Jacke out to office, and others appointed to have the custodie of hym, to hold him short, that he range no more abroad, so that no man can speake with him ; and thei saie the poore gentleman is so fleest from tyme to tyme, by those that bee his keepers, that he hath nothing to give that is good but it falls to their shares.

To become a student in the lawe, there are suche a number of theim already, that he thinkes it is not possible that one of theim should honestly thrive by an other ; and some will saie, that one lawyer, and one goshauke, were enough in one shire.

But of my conscience there are more lawyers in some one shire in Englande, with attorneis, solicitours, or as thei are termed brokers of causes, or pettie foggers, then there are goshaunes in all Norwaie.

To become a marchaunt, traffique is so dead by meanes of thes foraine broiles, that unlesse a man would be a theefe to his countrey, to steale out prohibited wares, there were small gaines to be gotten.

To become a farmer, landes be so racked at suche a rate, that a manne should but toyle all the daies of his life to paie his landlordes rent.

But what occupation, or handy craft, might a man then followe to make hymself riche, when every science dependes upon new fangled fashions? for he that to daie is accompted for the finest workman, within one moneth some newe found fellowe comes out with some newe found fashion, and then he beares the prise, and the first accoumpted but a bungler; and within an other moneth after, the second shall be served with the same sauce, and thus there is no artificer that can hold his credite long.

Suche is the miserable condition of this our present tyms, this is the course of the worlde, but especially here in Englande, where there is no man thought to be wise but he that is wealthy; where no man is thought to speake a truth but suche as can lie, flatter, and dissemble; where there is no advise allowed for good, but suche as tendeth more for gaine then for glorie; and what pinchyng for a penie, that should be spent in our countries defence! How prodigall for a pound to be spent upon vanities and idle devises! What small recompence to souldiers, that fighte with foes for their countries quiet! How liberall to lawyers, that sette frendes at defaunce, and disquiete a whole commonwealthe! What faunyng uppon hym whom fortune doeth advaunce! What frounyng on hym whom she hath brought lowe! What little care of the poore, and suche as be in want! What feastyng

of the riche, and suche as be wealthy ! What sumptuous houses built by men of meane estate ! What little hospitalitie kept from high and lowe degree !

And here I can not but speake of the bountie of that noble gentleman, Sir Christofer Hatton, my verie good maister and upholder, who havyng builded a house in Northamptonshire, called by the name of Holdenby, whiche house, for the brauerie of the buildynges, for the statelinesse of the chambers, for the riche furniture of the lodginges, for the conveighance of the offices, and for all other necessaries appertenent to a pallas of pleasure, is thought by those that have judgement to be incomparable, and to have no fellowe in Englande that is out of her Majesties handes : and although this house is not yet fully finished, and is but a newe erection, yet it differeth farre from the workes that are used now adaias in many places—I meane where the houses are builte with a greate number of chimneis, and yet the smoke comes forthe but at one onely tunnell. This house is not built on that maner, for as it hath sundrie chimneis, so thei cast forthe severall smokes ; and suche worthie porte, and daiely hospitalitie kepte, that although the owner hymself useth not to come there once in twoo yeares, yet I dare undertake there is daiely provision to be founde convenient to entertaine any noble manne with his whole traine, that should hap to call in of a sodaine. And how many gentlemen and straungers that comes but to see the house, are there daiely welcomed, feasted, and well lodged ! From whence should he come, be he riche, bee he poore, that should not there be entertained, if it please hym to call in ? To bee short, Holdenby giveth daily relief to suche as bee in wante for the space of six or seven miles compasse.

Peradventure those that be envious will thinke this tale nothyng appertinent to the matter that I was in hand with all, but I trust my offence is the lesse, considering I have spoken but a truthe, and doe wishe that every other man were able to saie as muche for his maister, and so an ende.

And now where I lefte of I was tellyng what pride, what coveteousnesse, what whooredome, what glotonie, what blasphemie, what riot, what excesse, what dronkennesse, what swearyng, what briberie, what extortion, what usurie, what oppression, what deceipte, what forgerie, what vice in generall, is daiely entertained and practized in Englande; and although it hath pleased God, by wonderfull signes and miracles, to forewarne us of his wrathe, and call us to repentaunce, yet you see the worlde runneth forewardes, and keepeth his wonted course, without any remorse of conscience, neither making signe, nor proffer to amende. But like as we see an old sore, beyng once over run, will not be cured with any moderate medicine, but must be eaten with corosives till it comes to the quicke, and like as wee saie, one poison must bee a meane to expell an other, so what should wee otherwise thinke of our selves, but if wee bee growne to such extremitie, as no gentill admonition will serve to reclaime us, what other thyng should we looke for, but a mischief to be the medicine? God will not suffer that vice shall alwais florishe—he will surely roote it out at the laste; and how long hath he alredy borne with us in our wickednesse? And what reformation is there had emongst us, unlesse it be to go from evill to worse? But if we did duely consider how mercifully he hath still dealt with us, how favourably he hath preserved us, and how wonderfully he hath defended us, I thinke we should not be (altogether) so unthankfull as we shewe our selves to bee. For who knoweth not what an eye sore this little ile of Englande hath been to the whole worlde, and how long have we lived (as it were) in contempt of suche countries as be our nexte neighbours, who still enveighyng our quiet and happie government, have practized, by as many devises as thei could, to bring us into their owne predicament, had it not been the onely providence of God that preserved us? or what freendship might we yet hope to finde at any of their hands, if their oportunitie would serve them to be revenged of the dispote,

which long agoe thei had conceived against us? First, the Frenche hath ever been our enemies by nature; the Scottes by custome; the Spanyardes for religion; the Duche, although we have stooode them in greate steade, and holpe them at many a pinche, yet I could buye as much freendshipp as thei doe all owe us for a barrell of Englishe beere. If we should goe any further, then wee come to the Pope, the Turke, and the devill, and what frendship thei beare us, I thinke every one can imagine.

And here we might consider how wonderfully God hath wrought on our behalves, and with all humblenesse of harte give hym dailey thankes for his benefites bestowed upon us, but moste of all, and especially, for our moste gracious and soveraigne ladie Queene Elizabeth, who from tyme to tyme he hath so mightily preserved to be the verie instrumente of his mercie and lovyng kindnesse towarde us, and for whose sake (no doubt) he hath forborne us in his displeasure, as many tymes he did the children of Israell, at the request of his seruaunt Moyses.

First, how was she assaulted in her sister's tyme by those ravenyng wolves that dailey sought her death; for thei all stooode in doubt, that she should bee that Judith which should cut of proude Holofernes his hedde. And it pleased God to bryng it even so to passe, not onely defendyng her from their crueltie and rage, but raised her up (in deede) to the utter subversion of those bloudie butchers, and to the greate comfort of us all that were in bondage, and subject to tyrannie.

Not onely setting us free from those detestable enormities, that so corosived our consciences, but made open waie and passage for the worde of God freely to be published (I thinke) to our owne destruction, that so unworthely receive it. Uppon this, how many mightie enemies protested against her, and what harme have any of them been able to doe her; and how many treasons and privie conspiracies (sith that tyme) hath

been practised by our pealtyng Papistes against her ; but God hath revealed and brought them to light.

Let us therefore praie unto God, that he would so lengthen her daies, that we might still enjoye so gracious a princess long to governe and reigne over us ; and that from tyme to tyme he would so directe her noble counsaill in all their meetynges and consultations, as maie redounde to his glorie, to the benefite of their country, and to their owne immortall fame.

Let us likewise praie, that God would roote suche covetous hartes out of Englande, that for the sparyng of a penie for the present tyme care not to let slippe suche matter as maie coste many a pounde hereafter this. Now, lastly, and as mariners use to syng at the sea, “ God save my mate, and me also ; ” and God sende all souldiours that hath honestly served their country better consideration then of long tyme they have had.

And thus, noble souldiours and gentlemen all, I have heeld you with a long sermon, neither can I tell how my preaching will bee allowed of. I crave no more, but wishe you all better fortune then I knowe the present tyme will afforde you, and so will rest at your disposition.

BARNABE RICHE.

### To the Readers in generall.

I assure thee (gentle reader) when I first tooke in hande to write these discourses, I meante nothyng lesse then to put theim in print, but wrote theim at the request of some of my dearest frendes, sometymes for their disperte, to serve their private use; and now againe, by greate importunitie, I am forsed to sende them al to the printer. The histories (altogether) are eight in number, whereof the first, the seconde, the fift, the seventh and eight, are tales that are but forged onely for delight, neither credible to be beleved, nor hurtfull to be perused. The third, the fourth, and the sixt, are Italian histories, written likewise for pleasure by Maister L. B. And here, gentill reader, I must instauntly intreate thee, that if thou findest any wordes or tearmes semyng more undecent then, peradventure, thou wilte like of, thinke that I have set them doun as more apropriate to expresse the matter thei intreate of, then either for want of judgement or good maners. Trustyng that as I have written them in jest, so thou wilt read them but to make thy self merie, I wishe thei might as well please thee in the reading, as thei displease me in putting them forthe.

I bid thee hartely farewell.

BARNABE RICHE.

## W. I., Gentleman, in praise of the Auctor.

Who seekes by ladie Fame to reape renoune,  
Must aske consent of worthie vertue's grace :  
To her belongs the staument of the croune.  
She yeeldes all those their just deserved place,  
As tred her path and runne her royll race :  
Suche riche rewardes to eache she yeeldes eache where,  
As might become this worthie Riche to weare.

The painfull man that tilles his grounde reapes frute ;  
Eache merrit hath his meede, paine hath his hire :  
Deserte requires that fame should not stande mute,  
Where wisedome doeth to vertues waies aspire.  
The hope of gaine doeth set men's hartes on fire :  
Then yeeld hym thankes, that erst hath undertooke  
For thy delight to penne this little booke.

Let Momus mates chat on in their dispight,  
Let wranglers wreake and wrest the worst thei maie :  
The wisest sorte will judge and take delight,  
Though janglyng jayes, that knowe not what thei saie,  
Will oftentimes their witlesse wittes bewraie :  
Yet Riche shall reape what he by right hath wonne,  
Deserved praise for that whiche here is doen.

Finis q, W. I., Gent.

Baptiste Starre in praise of the Austhor.

If due deserte should reape rewarde,  
Or worthie merrit guerdon have,  
Why should not Riche presse forth hym self,  
The lovely laurell croune to crave:  
Whose life in fielde that wonne hym praise,  
He leadeſt at home in Pallas praise.

Skorne not then, Zoylus, his good happe,  
That can his will subdue and tame,  
But trie to treade his path, whereby  
Thou maiest thy life with vertue frame:  
Alowe his paine and penne to wright,  
Who naught pretendes but thy delight.

Loe ! he who wanted was in fielde,  
To meeſte his furious foe in face,  
Hath scalde Parnassus hill, where he,  
Attends Minerv' her noble grace:  
And there his penne doth plaie his parte,  
As did els where his shielde and darte.

Finis q. B. S.

### The Printer to the Reader.

The fragrant Rose can make no choyse,  
Who shall upon hym light ;  
The spraulyng Spider turnes to gaule,  
The Bee to honey right.

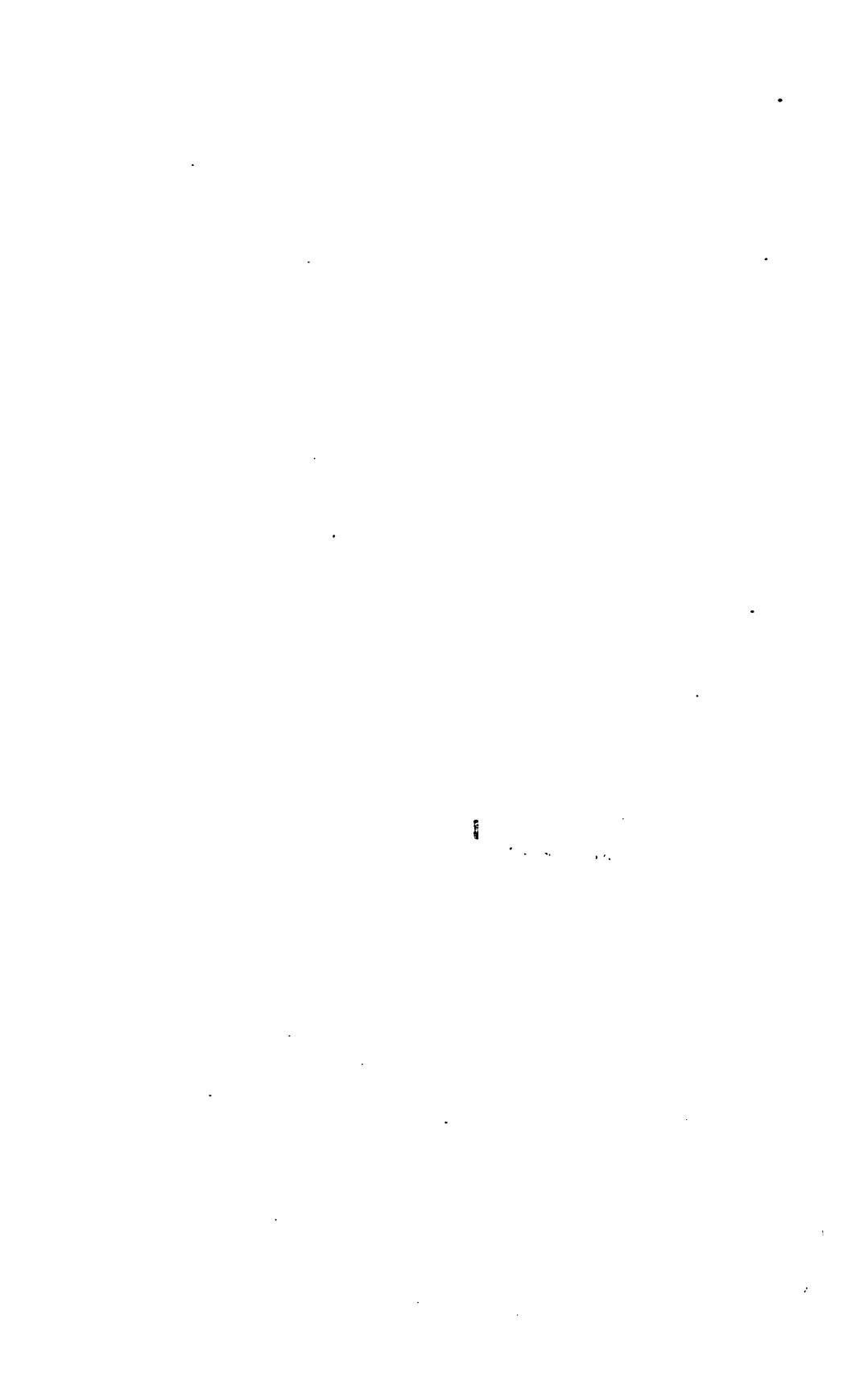
So fares it with this booke, whose leaves  
Are open spred to thee :  
Make choise, good Reader, of the best,  
Sucke honey with the Bee.

Misconster not eache merrie phraise,  
Deeme not the worst of it,  
Whiche is not pende to doe thee hurte,  
But recreate thy wit.

And for suche faultes as scaped have  
The presse, whereof thers store,  
Reprove the Printer for his haste,  
Blame not the booke therefore.

But as by mirth 'tis meant to move  
Thy minde to some delight,  
Reward his paine with praise, whiche did  
These pleasaunt stories wright.

FINIS.



## SAPPHO DUKE OF MANTONA.

### THE ARGUMENT OF THE FIRSTE HISTORIE.

*Sappho Duke of Mantona havyng long tyme served Claudiuſ, the Emperour, by whose magnanimitie and martiall prowest sundrie victories were achieved against the Turke, was by false imposition banished, hymſelf, Messilina his wife, Aurelianuſ his sonne, with Phylene his daughter, in whiche banishment thei ſustained sundrie conſtictes of Fortune, but in the ende restored againe to their former estate and dignitie.*

The one of the greatest vertues, that worldlie men can exprefſe in the common behaviour of this life, is neither to waxe proude by proſperitie, nor to fall into diſpaire by adverſitie; for Fortune, havyng a free will to come and goe, when and where ſhe liketh, the wiſe man ought not to be ſorie when he loſeth her, nor to rejoyce when he holdeth her, for that the valiant man looſeth no reputation when that Fortune faileth hym, but is the leſſe eſteemed of if he want diſcretion to beare her mutabilitieſ, the whiche for the moſt part is altogetheſ uncer‐tain; now promiſyng good, now perfo‐rmyng ill; now lifting up to the tip of the highest dignitie, now throwyng doun to the pit of perpetuall infamie; now aduauncing aloft thoſe that be unwortheſ, now throwing doun the climmers up into extreame adverſitie: ſuche are the giſtes and graces of Fortune, to have no better thing more certaine in them, then to be for the moſte parte in all thynges uncer‐taine; as the ſequell of this

historie shall more better describe, and followeth in this maner.

There was sometymes remainyng in the courte of the Emperor Clawdius, a noble duke, whose name was Sappho Duke of Mantona, who, as well through his owne magnanimitie and valiaunce, as otherwise through his greate policie and experience in marciall affaires, had atchived many notable victories in the behalfe of the Emperour againste the Turke, whiche made hym bothe famous to the worlde and feared of his enemies, but moste entirely beloved of the Emperour Claudius : but the warres beyng once finished and broughte to an ende, so that the empire remained in tranquilitie and peace, souldiors were forgotten, captaines were not cared for ; suche as had profered them selves to fight for the saftie of their countrey, were now shaken of, and suche were preferred in their romes as had any facultie in them tendyng to pleasure and delight, as dauncers, pipers, fidlers, minstriles, singers, parasites, flatterers, jesters, rimers, tale bearers, newes cariers, love makers, suche as can devise to please women with newe fangles, straunge fassions, by praisyng of their beauties, when sometymes it is scarce worthie, by commendyng of their manifolde vertues, when, God knowes, they have fewe, or none at all. But see, I pracie you, how farre my wittes beginne to square : I pretended but to penne certaine pleasaunt discourses for the onely pleasure of gentilwomen, and even at the very first entrie I am falne from a reasonable tale to a railyng rage, as it may seeme. But I pracie you, gentilwomen, beare with my weakeenesse ; and as the preacher in the pulpit, when he is out of his texte, will saie for excuse, Good people, though this bee somethyng degressing from my matter, yet it maie very well serve at this present. Take this, I pracie you, for my excuse in like case.

And now to my purpose, where I left of before. This noble Duke Sappho had no skill in courting trade : his head, which had been accustomed to beare the loftie helme, had now quite

forgotten to weare the waveryng plumes, readie to blowe awaie with every wind; his bodie, moste ineured to weare a coate of steele, could not be brought in fashion with this quaint and nice araye; his necke he thought more fitly to paise the trustie targe, then to bee hanged with gemmes, or chaines of golde; his fingers, commonlie practised to graspe the sworde or launce, could not bee brought in frame to strike the virginall or lute; his voice served hym better to cheare his souldiors in the feeld, then either to fayne or syng ditties in a ladies chamber; his tongue had more used to speake simplie and plaine, then to dissemble with his freend, or to flatter with his foe; his legges had better skill to marche after dubbe a dubbe a dubbe, then to mince it with a minion, tracyng a pavion, or galliarde uppon the rushes. What should I saie, father? this noble duke had no maner of skill in carpet trade. But thus it fell out, that parasites and flatterers, havyng once entered credite with the Emperour, (as surely it is almoste a common infirmitie, aswell emongest princes as other superiour officers, to bee seduced by flatterers, pickthankes, and talebearers) this noble Emperour, likewise, by the instigation of suche as were aboue hym, who perceivyng the Duke to bee none of their flatteryng fraternitie, and enveighyng the greate reputation wherein the Emperour helde hym, had so incensed the Emperour againste hym, that now his likyng was converted into loathyng, and his greate love tourned to a more hate, that in the ende the poore Duke was brought to answere unto many forged articles surmised against hym, who, neither in consideration of his former service dooen for his countrey, neither in respecte of the innocencie of his cause, could otherwise bee dispensed withall then to be banished into exile, hym self, Messilina his wife, Aurelianuſ his sonne, with Phylene his daughter; and although the common sorte of people helde hym in greate honour, and muche lamented his case, yet it could not bee holpen, but the Emperour's decree, openly pronounced, must needes take place.

I beseche you, gentilwomen, yet to comfort yourselves: I

knowe your gentill hartes can not endure to heare of suche ungentill partes ; but these are but the frumpes of ordinarie Fortune, not private to Duke Sappho alone, but common to all menne that bee of the like profession : for what happened better to the moste noble captaines of the worlde, or what other recompence received either Cæsar, Scipio, Haniball, or many other like, who, havyng honoured their countries with sondrie triumphes and many notable victories, when the warres were ended, and that there was no more neede of theim, finished their daies in such pitifull plight, as I will keepe to myself; because, right courteous gentilwomen, I rather desire to drawe you into delightes, then to droune you in dumphes, by revealyng of suche unnaturall factes as I knowe your gentle natures is not able to digest.

Thus you have heard how this noble Duke, with his wife and children, by sentence from the Emperoure were banished from out their native countrey, as also from any other realmes, cities, tounes, or territories, beyng within the Emperour's dominions. There resteth now for the Duke to make suche poore provision for his furnishing as his habilitie might any waies serve hym, the whiche, God knoweth, fell out so meane and skante, as it scarcely serveth hym to defraie his charges, to carrie hym from out those places from whence he was prohibited: and takyng his course towardes the partes of Mace-donia, after a long and wearie journey, he arrived at a toun called Tariffa, where beyng lodged in a meane and simple house, his money now beyng at the laste caste, wherewith to beare his charges, his poore wife and children altogether wearied with their long and troublesome travaill, and hym self all ashamed to bee knowne what he was. Now, it fell out that the hoste of the house, many tymes vewyng and castyng his eyes upon the Duchesse of Messilina, who, notwithstanding she dissembled her estate and degree, contented to leave her honourable dignitie, and to perteinicipate suche equall fortune with her housebande and children as their hard happenes had conducted them unto,

yet her beautie (whiche could not bee blemished with meane and homely garments) had so entangled her arrant hoste, that he could not be merrie when he was out of her sweete sight : and now, though he perceived his ghest beganne to waxe slacke in his paiement, and not able to disburse for his ordinarie expences, yet, for the love he bare to his wife, he was contented to chalke up the charges behinde the doore, hopyng in the ende to have cleared the scores to his better content, and as tyme and convenience might serve him. He spared not to let the Duchess understande his greate likyng towardes her, assuryng her that the courtesie that he used towardes her housebande was onely for her sake, and that if he were assured his good will might bee acceptable in her sight, she might assure her self of suche a freend of hym, as would be as carefull of her as her housebande to whom she was married.

This ladie now havynge well pondered the woordes of her amourous hoste, who would not thinke but that she was muche perplexed in her mynde, that she, who had been borne of honourable parentage, espoused to a noble duke, whose dignitie in tymes paste surmounted all the rest, whose trainyng up had ever been emongst those of the highest degree, and now that her honourable estate was not onely eclipsed by crooked destinie, but also to have her chastitie assailed by suche a simple coisterell, whom she durste not so sharplye shake of, as her harte would very well have served, for that she knewe the Duke her housebande was runne in his debt ; neither could she tell by what meanes he was able to discharge it : she was therefore constrained, with faire speeches, to shift hym of from time to tyme, the whiche the knave perceivynge very well, beganne to thinke with hym self that it was but her housebandes presence that hindered hym of his purpose, and therefore determined to finde a present remedie.

And now, commyng to his gheste, beganne to recken with hym, and to call hym to accoumpt for the charges wherein he was behinde, tellyng hym, that at that verie instaunte he had

occasion to occupie money, whiche made hym not onely to seeke up suche small sommes as were due unto hym, but also to trie his freendes otherwise to serve his tourne, and that helping him now at his present neede, he might then begin againe a newe score, and would beare with him a muche lenger time.

The poore Duke then, inforced to seeke out an old salve for a new sore, whiche is to prale when he was not able to paie, with verie courteous speeches desired his hoste to beare with his inabilitie, assuryng him that when time should serve he would so throughlie recompence hym, as he should have cause to holde hym well contented.

But what praiers maie prevale, where pitie is cleane exiled, or what gentlenesse is to be looked for, to come from suche an ungentle chorle, whose mynde was onely sette upon rape and ravine, who had premeditated before the drifte whiche (as he presupposed) was now sorted out as he looked for.

Wherefore, (as it were) halfe in a furie, he uttered forthe these woordes : My freende, content yourself, and take this for a resolute aunswere: the money whiche now resteth in your handes, although I might verie ill forbeare it, as my case standeth, yet for that it is not myne ease to runne into any farther charges, without a better assuraunce then either woordes or promises, I am, notwithstanding, contented to beare with you for that whiche is alreadie paste, mynding from this daie forwardes to give no further credite: and for that you are altogether a straunger, unto me unknowne, bothe what you are, from whence you come, whether you will, and where I should finde you, I purpose, therefore, for my better securitie, and the rather to come by that you alreadie doe owe me, to keepe your wife in paune, whom I knowe is so dearely beloved unto you, that for her sake I shall the sooner heare from you againe: otherwise I knowe not where to inquire after you, nor how to come by that is my due, whiche I am not well able to forbeare, neither doe I mynde clearely to lose.

The poore afflicted Duke, havyng never fayne before into

cutthrotes handes, perswaded in deede that the tenour of this varlettes woordes, and the keepyng of his wife tended to no other ende but for his better assuraunce to come by his money, was constrained to make a vertue of necessitie, and was so muche the better pleased, for that his wife might stil remain free from farther travaile, and thinkyng in tyme to settle hym self, and to recover his wife and children about hym: with this resolution, he began to relate unto his wife with what salutations his gentle hoste had greeted hym withall, desiryng her to comfort her self for a season, assyuryng to doe his best indevor, and to set up his sailes to the prosperous gales of Fortune.

This good ladie, hearyng her housbandes discourse, uncertaine what to doe, wepte bitterly, as well for greef to loose his presence, as for that she should bee lefte in the house of the arrant knave her hoste; but like a wise ladie, hearyng the alleaged reasons of her lorde and housebande, did thinke it not for the beste to encrease his old sorowe with a newe greef, contented her self utteryng these woordes.

Deare housebande, knowyng all that you have saied to be verie juste and true, I am contented for a certain tyme to force my will, in hope that hereafter we maie live together, joying ourselves in the companie of our children: and this I would desire you, that so often as you can, by convenience and trustie messengers, to sende me worde and intelligence of your health and estate, because the same should bryng greater contention unto me then the welfare of myne owne self.

This saied, she, imbracyng hym verie lovyngly, and he kissing her with great sorowe and greefe, tooke his leave, and badde his ladie and spouse hartely farewell, leavyng with her Phylene, her deare daughter.

Thus hym self with Aurelianus, his little soonne, departed from Taryffa, towardes the famous citie of Cayre, and as thei passed through a wildernesse, havyng loste their waie, wandering twoo or three daies without any maner of foode, savyng

hippes, hawes, and slowes, suche as thei could gather in the desert, the poore child beyng over come with faintnesse, not longer able to travaile, beganne to complaine to his afflicted father, desiryng hym to sitte doun to reste hymself a tyme: the wofull father, tormented in his mynde to see his poore distressed child, satte hym doun under a tree, where, after a while, recounting to hym self his sonderie misfortunes, beyng oppressed and wearied with travaile, he fell into a sound sleape. The childe, after he had a while rested hymself, leavyng his father a sleape, beganne to seeke about for somethyng to slake his hunger; and as he was straiyng thus about the woodes, it fortuned the Duke of Vasconia, havyng loste his companie in the pursute of a stagge where he had been a hunting, and as he was crossyng the nexte waie, to goe to the citie of Messyna, where he helde his courte, havyng in his companie but the Lorde of Sura, with three or fower servyng menne, he fortuned to espie the child runnyng in the bushes all alone; and callyng the child unto hym, he saied, Alas, my little boye, what makest thou in this place? art thou here alone, or how camest thou hether? I priae thee tell me. Forsothe, godfather (q, the child) I came hether with my father, who lyes a sleape here by, and I was seekyng somethyng to eate; for, by my troth, I am so a hongered, that I could eate worse meate then a peece of a rosted pigge, and that with all my harte.

The Duke greatly pleasuryng to heare the pretie aunswere of the childe, replied in this wise: How saiest thou, my little knave, wilt thou bee my boye, and dwell with me? and I will give thee good meate thy beallie full. How saiest thou? wilt thou goe with me?

Yea, forsoothe, godfather (q, the childe) on that condition you will give me roste meate enough, I will goe with you; for I thinke I did not eate my beallie full of roste meate this moneth and more.

The Duke then commaunded one of his menne to take up the child, whom he carried awaie with hym; and now per-

ceivyng it to be bothe well favoured, quicke witted, and very apt to learnyng, he brought it up at schoole, where he proved not onely wise and learned, but also in many other exercises convenient and fitte for gentlemen, he commonly excelled every other man : and thus leavyng hym at schoole, I will convert my tale to his wofull father, who, when he was awaked, and missed his pretie soonne, began to prie aboute in every bushe, sekyng, and callyng, What, Aurelianuſ ! Aurelianuſ ! where bee you, Aurelianuſ ? But in the ende, when he could no where finde hym, thinkyng assoredly that he had been devoured by some wilde beaste, beganne with pitifull exclamation to crie out : O, Fortune, Fortune ! more then fickle, who in a moment hoiste a man up to the highest degree, and by and by, in lesse space then in the twinklyng of an eye, she throweth hym doune againe so lowe, as more miserie is prepared for him in one daie, then she advaunced hym in an hundred yeres, whiche I now prove, and have experience in myself, and so muche the more the greater is my greef, who have been nourished delicately emongest my frendes, maintained still in moſte prosperous estate, hopyng for the full perfection of my felicities, by marriyng a noble dame, with whom I pretended to spende the residue of my life, accordyng to the scope and lotte appointed by the Almighty God ; but now, beholde, all my enterprises bee quite pluckte backe, and my purposes tourned cleane topse-torve, in ſuche wise, that from honourable estate I am driven to wander like a vacabonde, driven from poste to piller, from countrie to countrie, from region to region, to ſequeſtrate my ſelf from emongest my frendes, without any assured place where to make my abode. Oh, froward fate ! how canſt thou bee ſo hard harted, and void of pitie, ſtill to prosecute thy cruell purſute ? firſt to deprive me of my honourable dignities ; then to banishe me from emongest my lovyng frendes ; thidlie, to ſeparate me from Mefſilina, my well beloved wife, more deare unto me then the balles of my unhappy eyes ; and not yet contented, but now to bereve me of my sweete infant,

my onely hope of comforte in my olde age ! O, Death ! Death !  
the ende of all sorrowes, and the beginner of felicities, now  
make sharpe thy darte, and give no longer delaye of life ; dis-  
patche, dispatche at once the moste infortunate manne that  
lives this daie on yearth ; for what availes my life, if in the  
gulfe of sorow and greef I drounde the pleasures of the same ?  
But, ah ! I see right well thou preservest the same, of purpose  
but to delight in my greeves, and to triumphe over my adver-  
sities. And here withall the brinishe teares so streamed  
doune his cheekes, that he was not farther able to speake one  
woorde, but runnyng up and doune the woodes, sighyng and  
sobbyng, in greate anguishe of mynde, and his bodie muche  
infeebled for want of foode and sustenaunce, he fortuned to  
meete certaine labouryng menne, that dwelte in a poore village  
not farre from the place, who perceivynge by his geasture that  
he was passionated in his thoughtes, thei beganne, with suche  
curtesie as thei had learned in the countrie, to demaunde the  
occasion of his greef.

But he, knowing verie well how farre thei were unable to  
minister releef to the leaste of his afflictions, could render no  
other aunswere then piteous sighes and subbes ; but the poore  
pesauntes, when thei had better beheld the talnesse of his sta-  
ture, the seemelinesse of his countenaunce, and the comelinesse  
of his personage, were greatelie mooved with compassion to-  
wardes hym, and with suche badde eloquence as their skill  
would permit, beganne to perswade hym to walke with them  
to their cabbins, where he might refreshe hymself with suche  
homely junckettes as was provided for their owne suppers.  
The Duke, contented to yeeld to their requestes, walked along  
with them, where he remained all the night, verie pensive and  
heavie in his harte, and beganne to thinke with hymself that  
there was no more hope left for him to heare of his sonne, and  
therefore beganne to imagine how he might render some  
releef to his poore wife and daughter, whom he had left as you  
before have heard.

Now, there was dwellyng harde by the place, a nobleman that was lorde of the village, who, havyng intelligence of this distressed straunger, caused hym to be sente for ; before whom when the Duke was presented, after many questions debated betweene them, the noble manne demaunded of the Duke what countrey manne he was, and how he had been trained up, and then if he could bee contented to plaie the servyngman, and would bee carefull and diligent in his maister's affaires, that then he would bee contented to receive hym into his service, and would rewarde hym accordyngly as he was able to deserve.

The Duke, all ashamed to bee knownde what he was, reverently made aunswere that he was borne in the countrey of Achaia, and that he had been trained up in service with sondrie noble menne, and would bee very well contented to doe his best indeavour to serve him with the beste service he could doe.

Thus the poore Duke became a servyng man, whom we will leave with his maister, and returne to his wife, who was lefte in hucsters handelyng, (as you have heard) remained in the house with this verlette, who soughte by sondrie assaies to satisfie his villanous luste ; and like an experte souldier, when he commeth to besiege a holde, first sendeth his heraldes to summon the forte, proferyng many large conditions, if thei will quietly surrender, but if defiaunce be made, then presently he placeth his batterie, thunderyng forthe his canon shot against the walles, whiche if thei bee so well rampered, that there will no breache bee made, yet he ceaseth not with giftes and bribes to corrupte the warders, not caryng how he conquereth, so he maie have the spoyle.

This vilaine, in likewise, sought first with piteous sighes, whiche, saust with sugred woordes, did serve in steede of harauldes to perswade her to yeeld up the keyes of the fortresse, that with peaceable entrie he might take possession at his pleasure ; but beeynge by her repulsed, and the flagge of defiaunce displaied upon the bulworke, then with thunderyng

threates he thinketh to make his batterie, proferyng to caste her into prison for the debt whiche was owyng hym for her housbande and her self. Other whiles againe he would tempte her, and trie her with giftes, thinkyng that for the necessitie she was driven into, she would have made sale of that whiche she preferred before her owne life.

This noble dame, perceivynge her self so hardly beset on every side, fearyng in the ende the verlet should woorke her some greater despight, so enforced her self, with Phylene her little daughter, to fall to worke, that with weavyng and knittynge of laces, and otherwise with their needles, thei had gained so muche money as she was able to set her self free from out a knave's debt. And thinkyng with her self that her housebande had remained about the citie of Cayre, to the whiche he purposed to journey when he departed from her, she determined with all convenient speede to repaire thether, as well to comforte herself with the companie of her lorde and housebande, as otherwise with her yearnynges to helpe to releve hym: but for that she had understandyng that the passage by lande was not onely troublesome, but also very inconvenient for her to travaile, by reason it laie through wooddes and desertes, she gate intelligence of a small barke that was bound thether by sea, whiche onely staied but for a winde to serve her turne. Here upon she discharged her self from the towne of Taryffa, and when wether served, agreyng with the maister for her passage, her self with her daughter repaired aborde the barke, whiche beyng put to sea, was forced, by the extremitie of a contrary winde, to put themselves romer for the safetie of their lives, to a cleane contrary place. And where thei ment to have sailed to the citie of Cayre, thei were now arived at the citie of Cherona, where the ladie commyng a shore, she joyed nothyng so muche in the narrowe escape she had made with life, by reason of the tempest, as she sorrowed for beyng so farre driven from her housbande, whose fellowship she more desired then either wealthe or worldly treasure. But

forasmuche as both herself and her daughter were very evill at ease, and greatly infeebled with sicknesse at the sea, and bad lying in the shippe, she determined to make her abode still at Cherona, till she might convaie letters to Taryffa, that should certifie her housbande of all that had happened.

In the meane tyme, her housbande havyng received some small benevolence of his lorde and maister, who had conceived some good likyng of hym, by reason of the skill that he had in the ridyng of horse, very desirouse to render his wife some portion of his good fortunes, who had bin so long tyme partaker of his evill happes, cravynge leave of his lorde for a tyme, came to Taryffa, where, when he missed his wife, whose letters were not yet come from Cherona, and therefore could get no inteligence, but that she was gone to Cayre of purpose to seeke hym, in a greate perplexitie he traveiled towardes Cayre, where, makyng greate inquirie, could learne nothyng of her: from thence he posted from place to place, from citie to citie, from towne to towne, but beyng never the neare his purpose, he then began to double his dolours, and with bitter wordes to curse the celestiall signes and planets, which raigned at the daie of his nativitie and howre of his birthe, contented to yeeld hym self a captive to mishappe, and to surrender hym self a subjecte to Fortune's froward frumpes. Beyng thus turmoylede with greate anguishe of mynde, wanderyng to and fro, he was brought so low and bare, that he was readie to begge an almes from doore to doore; and commyng to a poore countrey village, his penurie was suche, that he was glad to become a seruaunt to hym that was the sexten of the parishe; whom he had not served long, but the old sexten his maister died, and for that he had now learned to ryng belles, and had some cunnyng in the keepyng of a clocke, the parishioners were contented to place hym in his maister's rome. The Duke, thinkyng hymself more then thrise happie to gett so greate preferment, thanked ladie Fortune, that had so frendly dealt with hym, resolvynge hymself to continue the office while he lived; but

Fortune, findyng hym so thankfull for a little, dealte more freendly with hym, as after you shall heare.

But I will firste declare how it happened with his sonne Aurelianus, who was taken up in the woodes by the Duke of Vasconya, as before you have heard.

But here I muste firste remember you, that the Duke chaunged his name from Aurelianus to Silvanus, whiche name he gave hym of purpose, for that he was found in the woodes.

Silvanus now, havyng been trained up at schoole, was come to mannes estate ; and besides that he had the knowledge of good letters, he was comely in his personage, and of verie good proportion, and in all maner of activitie appertainyng to a gentilman, he exceeded every other that was in the courte : besides in his demeanours he was so courteous and gentill, that he gained the good will and likyng bothe of one and other, but especially of the Duke hymself, who alowed hym suche large expenses, whereby to maintaine hym self as brave as the beste.

Now, this noble Duke havyng no other children but one onely daughter, whose name was Valerya, in whom it seemed that bothe vertue and beautie had held some greate contention who should beare awaie the prise ; for although that in beautie and good grace she exceeded every other dame, yet her vertues and good conditions surmounted more her beautie, then the finest golde surmounteth leade or drosse.

The ladie now havyng heard greate reporte of the noblenesse of Silvanus, who was suspected to bee but some poore mannes soonne, by reason he was founde in the woodes, beganne yet to beare hym very good countenaunce, whiche at the first proceeded but of the noble nature, whiche ever was accustomed to bee favourable to suche in whom was founde any worthie desarte : but, as the fishe whiche by little and little sucketh upon the baite, till at the length she swalloweth doun the hooke, whereby she hangeth faste, not able to free her self, so this Ladie Valerya, contemplating herself many tymes to beholde

that yong gentleman, Silvanus, was so farre intangeled with his sweete and pleasaunt countenaunce, that now, perforce her will, she was constrained to yeelde to love; and feelyng her self insnared, and bereved of former freedome, beyng by her self alone, she began to complaine as followeth :

Alas ! (saieth she) is it possible that now force perforce my mynde should bee so altered, that, straiyng from the boundes and limites of vowed chastitie, I should now become amourous, and subject to a certaine unacquainted luste ? From whence commeth this alteration ? or how happeneth this unaccustomed hewe ? Ah, Love, Love ! how haste thou tormented me, and taken awaie the healthe and soundnesse of my mynde ! It behoveth me to shewe myself as issued forthe of the noble house of Vasconya ; and with the greater care I ought to take heede how I degenerate from the noble blood whereof I am descended, rather then to sette my mynde on a foundlyng unknownen, unto whom, peradventure, if I discover my fondnesse, will not let to mocke me for my labour, and for all the beautie or noblenesse of my birthe, will make me his jestyng stocke, and solace hym self with the fondnesse of my conceiptes. But staie, staie, unhappy tongue, that thundereth forthe suche hatefull woordes against my beloved Silvanus. Oh, thrise accursed wenche, that can so ungently conceive against hym, that in all his demeanours doeth shewe hym self as noble as the beste ! but of what metall are either monarcke, kyng, or keiser, framed of, otherwise then of naturall and common yearth, wherof other menne doe come ? or what maketh these differences, whiche by sottish opinion we conceive, either of gentle or ungentle, otherwise then the shewe of vertue and good conditions ? Then, the partie whom I love is both vertuous, valiant, sage of good grace, learned, and wise. Vaunte thee, then, Valeria, that thou likest no inferiour fondlyng, unworthie of thy love, but a worthie gentilman, indued with noble qualities, in whom bothe heaven and nature have forgotten nothyng to make hym equall to them that marche in formoste ranke. It is Silvanus

whom I love, and of him I pretende to make a lawfull housbande, for otherwise I detest to leade the filthie life of lawlesse luste ; but thus, the bonde of mariage beeing made, I maie love and live without offence of conscience ; neither shall I doe any blotte or blemishe to the greatnessse of my house. But if any be so scrupulous as to thinke by marrying of hym I should deminishe myne honour, it is the thing that I doe leaste esteeme ; for what is honour worthe, where the mynde is voide of contention ? and where the harte is bereved of his cheefest desire, the bodie remaineth restlesse, and the mynde is never in quiet. Silvanus, therefore, shalbe my loyall housbande, meanyng thereby neither to offend God nor man.

And now from hence forwardes she devised with her self how to make her love knowne to Silvanus, not sparyng, when she was out of his presence, before all men to praise his greate perfections wherewith he was enriched ; and in his owne presence she used suche lovyng countenaunce towards hym, that although Silvanus were but yong, and had never been trained up in the schoole of love, yet he perceived verie well that those frendly glances were lent hym of good likyng, and those lovyng countenances were grounded of good will : and albeit he sawe the inequalitie and difference betweene them both, she beeyng sorted out of royll race, and hym self altogether ignorant of his owne estate and from whence he was sprong, yet beyng now ledde by love, whose lawes have no respecte either to estate or dignitie, he determined to followe his fortune and to serve her, whiche so lovyngly shewed her self to requite hym with the like. And the more he called to mynde the divine beautie of his ladie, her graces, wisedome, behaviour, and curtesie, so muche the more increased his desire, fortifying him self against all mishappes and perilles that might succede, and began to debate with hym self in this manner.

How is it possible that I should be so foolishe to despise a dutie so rare and preciouse, and to set light by that whiche the noblest would pursue with all reverence and indevour ? I am

not the first that hath obtained the love of a ladie: no, no, I see she loveth me, and shall not I requite it by yeeldyng love againe? if I were so voide of humanitie and good nature, besides I might woorke myne owne overthrowe, in seemyng to dispise so noble a ladie, so the goddes would not let to minister revenge as thei did upon Narcissus. But ah, silly wretche that I am! what folly is this that I have now premeditated with the perill of myne honour, and the hazarde of my life? see, see, how farre my affections begin to straie, through the hot assaultes of foolishe fantasie, enraged with an appetite risyng on vaine hope! what madnesse on me to thinke that Valerya will so muche forget the greatnesse of her house, or yet imbase her self in respect of me, poore silly soule! but what if she would be contented, either in respecte of mariage, or otherwise in respecte of good will, to surrender herself to satisfie my request, I, muche were I the neare my purpose? alas! nothyng at all: the first, I knowe, should be denaide me by the Duke, her father, and as for any other curtesie, although I knowe it bee farre from her thought, yet surely myne owne conscience would not suffer me to proffer so greate villanie to so noble a ladie, neither the reverence and duetie whiche I owe to her father would permitte me to requite his gentilnesse towardes me with so greate an injurie. Cease, therefore, Silvanus; subdue thy sensualitie, that, by vanquishyng thy self, thou maist set open the gate to fame, who with her trompe of everlasting glorie, she maie advaunce thee renowned to all posteritie. But, alas! shall I then give over to love my Ladie Valerya? reason willes me so to doe, but love hath so blinded all my sences, that reason giveth no maner of light: what helpe have I then hereafter to hope for? alas! I knowe no one, and therefore be content. Herewithall he staied his travaile, resolvynge with hym self to conquere his affections; and beeyng in his chamber takyng pen and ynck, he sate hym doune, and wrote these verses followyng.

No shame, I trust, to cease from former ill,  
 Nor to revert the leudnesse of the mynde ;  
 Whiche hath bin trainde, and so misled by will,  
 To breake the boundes, whiche reason had assyngde.  
 I now forsake the former tyme I spent,  
 And sorry am, for that I was miswent.

But blynde forecast was he that made me swarve,  
 Affection fond, was lurer of my lust :  
 My fancie fixte, desire did make me serve,  
 Vaine hope was he that trained all my trust.  
 Good liking then so daseled had my sight,  
 And dimnde myne eyes, that reason gave no light.

O, sugred swete, that trainde me to this trap !  
 I sawe the baite, where hooke laie hidden fast :  
 I well perceivde the drift of my mishap ;  
 I knewe the bit woulde breede my bane at last.  
 But what for this, for sweete I swallowed all,  
 Whose taste I finde more bitter now then gall.

But loe ! the fruities that grewe by fonde desire.  
 I seeke to shunne, that pleased best my mynde ;  
 I sterue for colde, yet faine would quenche the fire,  
 And glad to loose, that fainest I would finde.  
 In one self thyng I finde both baall and blisse :  
 But this is straunge, I like no life but this.

When he had thus penned these verses, he committed them to memorie ; and the next daie, beyng in the companie of certayne gentlemen and gentlewomen in the court, taking a lute, whereon he could plaie very well, and havyng likewise good knowledge in his song, and therwithall a very pleasaunt voyce, he began to sing this dittie before mentioned, in the middest

whereof came in the yong Ladie Valerya, wherewith Silvanus staied his song : but she, joynyng her self to the companie, seyng the saintc that secretly shrined in her thought, she had vowed her greatest devotion unto, desired Silvanus at her request to begin his song againe. Silvanus, makyng the matter nothyng nyce, was pleased very well to satisfie her request, and takyng the lute began his song, to the whiche the ladie gave intentive eare from the beginnyng to the ending ; and perceiving the song to be made in some extreame passion forced by love, she demaunded of Silvanus, who had penned those verses ? who aunswere, thei were of his owne pennynge, and so lately doen that he could not forget theim. The ladie then, thinkyng Silvanus to be in love with some other gentlewoman, departed very speedily, as though some sodaine motion had happened to her mynde, and commyng to her chamber, shuttyng fast the doore, she began to saie as followeth.

How muche am I unfortunate above all other women ! that beyng a ladie of suche bloud as I am, and yet am happened into so straunge a miserie, that in maner with myne owne mouth I have made request to him, whiche rather with all humilitie ought to profer me his service, and yet am scornefully rejected, and an other like to catche the birdes, whilst I doe but beate the bushe. Oh, Silvanus, Silvanus ! deemest thou me no better worthe then so lightly to rejecte my profered love ? and shall an other, that is muche lesse worthie, beare awaie the sweete fruite of my desired hope, and shall possesse without deserte the glorie due to a firme and faithfull frende ? No, no, I can not thinke thee so ingrate, and my harte foretelleth me that it is impossible my Silvanus should wander so farre from equitie, but that he is able to diserne of colours, and will not requite me with wrong for right. I am sure not to be deceived in my love—I knowe he loveth me, but that he dareth not to disclose the same, fearyng I should refuse hym, and cast hym of with shame : I will not let, therfore, with myne owne mouth to bewraie the same unto hym,

and to manifest my good will, wherby my chaste and honest amitie once knowne unto hym, vertue herself maie knitte the knotte betweene us, whiche can not chuse but bryng forthe the fruities of true and perfect freendship.

And shall I then, beeeyng a ladie of suche degree, bee constrained to sew, where every other woman of the meanest reputation bee ordinarily required, and that with the importunate instance of their suters? I shall then be noted of boldnesse, and bee thought to straie too farre from the limites and boundes of modestie, and to make a greater show of lightnesse, then is properly looked for in us that be of the feminine gender. But what strictnesse is this prescribed to our sexe, that we should bee bereaved of our libertie, and so absolutely condemned of lightnesse in seeking to satisfie our lawfull and honest desires? with what trampe bee wee tempered withall more then menne, whereby wee should bee able to withstande the forces of the fleshe, or of power to resist the concupiscesches whiche Nature it self hath assigned? Wee bee tearmed to bee the weaker vesselettes, and yet thei would have us more puissaunte then either Samson or Hercules: if manne and woman bee made of one mettall, it must needes followe by consequence wee be subject to like infirmite: from whence commeth, then, this freedome, that menne maie aske what thei desire of us, bee it never so leude, and wee maie not crave any thing of them that tendeth to good and honest pretence? It is termed to bee but a mannes parte that seeketh our dishonour, by leude and lawlesse luste; but to a woman it is imputed for lightnesse to firme her lawfull likyng with pure and loyall love: if menne will have preheminence to dooe evill, why should wee bee reproved for doyng well?

Wherupon stande I then amazed with these fonde opinions? my love is not unlawfull, neither before God nor man. I love Silvanus, whom I will take for my housbande, for otherwise to love hym my harte dooeth not intende: therefore, without any farther respite or delaye, I will make my love

knowne unto hym, and the bande of mariage once confirmed betweene us, shall cover the fault whiche menne would deme. Neither shall my mynde be altered, either by the sugred perswasion of freendes, neither terrified with any threates that maie bee thundered forthe by parentes blusteryng wrathe. I am not so farre overwhelmed with pride, that, in respecte for the greatnessse of my parentage, I should despise a gentleman indued more with vertue then with riches. Though there bee some that bee of this condition, that thei will soner preferre the greatnessse of birthe then the greatnessse of vertue, the abundance of wealthe then the abundance of witte, the perfection of beautie then the perfection of the minde; but I am out of the nomber of those women whiche care more to have their housbandes purses well lined with money, whereby thei maie bee maintained in their braverie, or sometymes fixe their fancie upon some yong man, that is of goodlie personage, although voide of vertue, qualitie, and good conditions, that ought to garnishe a gentleman, and doeth more beautifie and enriche hym then either the bare shewe of beautie, or any other giftes of fortune: but I cannot emploie my love uppon transitorie treasure, when the riches of the mynde is cleane taken awaie. No, no; it shall better content me to see a meane gentleman beloved and praised of every one for his vertues, then to marie a miser possessed with all the goodes of the worlde, hated and ill spoken of for his vices. Feare not, then, Valeria, to followe thy determination, and to put in prooфе what thou hast pretended.

Herewithall staiyng herself, she beganne to practise the meane, in what manner she might bewraie her love to Silvanus, seekyng for occasion and tyme meete for her purpose; and although there remained in her a certaine naturall shamefastnesse, wherwith maidens are commonlie accompanied, which for a tyme did close her mouthe, and made her to deferre the tyme of her desolved mynde, yet, in the ende, throughlie perswaded in her intent, she sent one of her maidens, willyng Sil-

vanus to come and speake with her aboute certaine affaires that she had to employe hym. The maide havyng finished her message, there could never more joyfull newes happen to Silvanus ; who entryng the chamber of Valeria with tremblyng harte, after he had dooen his reverence, with greate feare and bashefulnessse, saied. For that I understande your Ladiship hath to employe me aboute certaine affaires, I shall thinke my self the moste happiest man in the worlde, if my travaile and diligence might any waies dooe you service, bee it that therein I should offer or sacrifice myne honour or life, cravynge no greater benefite for the satisfaction of all my contentations received in this world, then to serve, obeye, and honour you, so long as my life doeth laste.

The ladie nowe, all ravished with joye and contentation, perceivynge by his chaunge of colour the fault proeeded of vehemente love, takyng hym aside into a windowe, Love had so closed up her mouthe, that she knewe not how to beginne her tale ; her mynde was so troubled, her wittes so farre out of course, that her tongue failed to dooe his office in suche wise that she was not able to speake one onely woerde.

He likewise, perplexed with the like fever, was now astonied to see the alteration of his ladie.

Thus these two lovers, like twoo sencelesse images, stode still, beholdinge eche other, without any maner of moovyng. In the ende, the ladie takyng courage in her self, with a tremblyng voyce, joyned with a maidenlike shamefastnesse, began to saie as followeth.

Beyng assured (my Silvanus) of your discretion and wisewome, whiche Nature hath not onely indued you withall, but art hath also accomplished what nature beganne to woorke, I wil therefore make no doubte at all to lette you knowe the hidden secretees of my harte ; neither will I goe aboute with circumstaunce to colour my woordes, but beyng well perswaded that when you shall bothe heare and savour my speeches, and therewithall sounde the deapth of my devises, you will easily

conjecture that my enterprises be none other then juste, and that my alledged reasons are grounded of good pretence. I thinke, sithence your arivall here in the court of the Duke my father, you have not seene me in any behaviour otherwise then vertue doeth permitte, nor in any my demeanours exceedingy the boundes of modestie, otherwise then becommeth a maiden of my callyng, beyng descended of so worthie a stocke ; but if this be a faulte, that beyng provoked by the purenesse of my harte and fidelitie of my good will, who to keepe the same inviolable doe voluntarilie offer my self to the honest disposition of your judgemente, as it shall please you to conceive of me, I have then committed a faulte in likyng you too well, but I trust nothyng at all offended God, who knoweth the innocencie of my crime.

Thinke not, Silvanus, that I am the freend of Fortune, and practise pleasure alone without vertue ; for it is modestie that commaundeth me, and honestie is the guide of my conceiptes, swearingyng and protestyng by the Almightye God, that never manne shall touche Valerya, excepte it bee in mariage ; and he that otherwise would assaile me, I have a harte that shall encourage my handes to sacrifice my life. And now, Silvanus, if you will not thinke me more prodigall of my present then your fancie will serve you to take in goode parte, beholde, it is you that I have chosen for my spouse and loyall housbande. And although I had determined to dissemble that whiche now I have laied open unto you, yet reposyng myself in your vertue and honestie, I truste I shall not have cause to repent me for anythyng that I have either saied or doen.

Silvanus, whiche all this while hearyng this heavenly harmonie, with full assuraunce of that he moste wished for, albeeit he sawe no possibilitie how to [bring to] passee this desired mariage, yet determined not to refuse so greate a preferment, beyng so francke and liberally offered, aunswere in this maner.

I knowe not, madame, with what humilitie and reverence I might receive and accept this your greate bountie and noble-

nesse, so graciouslie offered unto me: I dooe acknowledge my condition and state too base, and that my love maie bee thought to presume too farre beyonde the boundes of order; consideryng that my ignobilite and birthe are no meete matches for suche a peerelesse princes; yet this I dare boldlie affirme, that if love and entire affection borne to your ladiship might serve to countervail that defect, whiche by place of birth the destinies have denaided me, I dare undertake I should as well deserve to bee received, as he that is lineallie descended from the greatest monarchie of the worlde. The which love, if till this tyme I have delaied to open, I beseeche you, madame, to impute it to the greatnessse of your estate, and to the duetie of my callyng; but now, for as muche as by your own motion, grace, courtesie, and greate liberalitie, the same is profferred, and that of your owne bountie, it pleaseth you to accept me for yours, I humblie beseche you not to dispose of me as of a housebande, but as of one whiche bothe is and shall bee your servaunt for ever. Thus saied, he takyng her by the hand, kissed it with greate devotion, his tongue and wittes were so rapt and tied, as the ladie perfectly perceived this alteration, and seeyng it to proceade of love, replied in this maner.

Then, my Silvanus, there nedeth at this present no farther circumstaunce. But for that I am well assured there are some that will bee offended with my choice, but especiallie the Duke my father, who will conceive some greate displeasure against me, there resteth then that this our contracte bee kept verie secret, until it please God to appoint the tyme that the rest of our determinations maie without daunger be consummate and accomplished. In the meane tyme, trusting that your desire is godlie, and that the freendship you pretende to beare me is founded upon vertue, and to be concluded by mariage, receive me for your spouse and lawfull wife: you shall have suche part in me, as without any regard to the obedience and duetie that I owe to my parentes, I am yours, beeyng readie and disposed to obeye you, so farre as my honour maie permit me.

These twoo lovers, now grounding themselves the one in the others fidelitie, could not so cunnyngly disemble and cloke their affections, but that it was easily perceived by their secret glaunces and countenaunces conveighed from the one to the other (and as wee have a proverbe—it is ill haultyng before a creeple) so there were many about the court that were so well studied in the schoole of Love, that thei were able to have commenced maisters of arte, and could easily conjecture from whence those rowlyng looks did proceade ; that beeyng now assured of that whiche before was but suspected, the brute was spread aboue the courte of the love that was betweene Silvanus and Valeria, that in the ende it came to the Duke her father's eare, who takyng the matter verie greevouslie, that his daughter, to whom the inheritaunce of the dukedom remained after his decease, should so meanely bestowe her love of a fondlyng founde in the woodes, and mindyng to fynde a remedie for the matter, willed Silvanus that, in paine of his life, within twentie daies he should departe the courte, and never after to bee seen within the jurisdictions of the Duke-dome of Vasconia.

Valeria now, havyng intelligence what had happened, had no leasure to vexe or moleste herself, when tyme rather required a speedie remedie for the incounteryng of those mis-happs, devised with Silvanus to conveigh herself awaie, contented rather to live in the fellowship of an honest, loyng housebande, with whom she should hold faithfull and loyall companie, with what estate and fortune so ever it might please God to appoincte, then to live without hym, beautified with the graces and foolish names of honour and preheminence.

Silvanus, contented to satisfie her desire with the hazarde of his life, yeelded to her request, and, before the twentie daies were expired, so cleanly conveighed hym self and Valeria awaie, that, when thei were missyng, the Duke wist not which waies to sende after them. Wherfore, in a greate furie, he spared not to sende oute greate companies, whiche, postyng

every waie, made enquirie and searche after them ; but all in vaine, for Silvanus had so disguised hym self and Valeria, that without any maner of trouble thei quietly passed the countrey, and havyng freede theim selves from out the daunger of the Duke, desyring that the daie of their mariage might now bee prefixed, the whiche by mutuall consent was presently determined, and by greate fortune (or rather conduction, by the providence of God) thei happened to arrive in the countrey village where Duke Sappho, that was father to Silvanus, had remained all this while sexten of the parishe. In this village, because it was a place free from resort, whereby thei might remaine unknowne, and in the better safetie, thei purposed as well to celebrate their mariage as for a tyme to make their aboade till matters were better quieted, and that thei might at leisure resolve what course were beste for theim to take. Silvanus, now havyng conferred with the prieste, the mariage daie was appointed, where the poore belrynger, takyng the vewe of this newe married couple, fell in a greate likyng of Silvanus ; not for that he knewe hym to be his sonne, for thereof he could have no maner of suspition, aswell for that he deemed he had been devoured in the woodes by some wilde beaste, as also because his name was chaunged, but whether it were by the instigation and secrerie of nature, or otherwise by the will and pleasure of God, to bryng to passe that whiche afterwardes happened in effecte, this poore Sexton, I saie, lead by the secret motion of his owne affections, proffered Silvanus that if his service might any waies stande hym in stede, (for that he was a straunger in the place) he should use hym in any respecte, and should fynde hym readie to stande hym in suche steade, as his poore abilitie might any waies permit.

Silvanus in like case havyng forgotten his father, beyng separated from hym in his infancie, yet nothyng despising his freendly offer, craved his helpe for the hiering of a chamber for some reasonable rent, till tyme that he might better provide for hymself. The Sexten, verie glad that he had so good

oportunitie to pleasure hym, brought hym with his wyfe to his owne house, where he lodged hym in the beste roome that he had, profferyng not onely his house but all that was in it to be at their disposition and pleasure. This newe married couple, now gladdynge and sportyng themselves with all suche swete imbracementes, as thei can better describe whiche have been possessed with the like delights: but as some will saie it is the mannes parte to be first wearied in those veneriall sportes, so Silvanus, havyng now well feasted hym self with that sweete repaste, had leisure to bethynke hym of his owne estate, began inwardly to growe into greate sorrowe and heauinesse, not so much for hym self as for his wife, who for his sake had dispossesset herself from so great honour, abandoning her freendes, contented to yeeld her self a thrall to Fortune.

These cogitations did so nipppe hym, that he could not so well dissemble his greef, but that his wife perceived some disquietnesse in his mynde; and therefore verie greevouslie she demaunded of hym to shewe her the cause of his discontentment, whiche by outward appearance seemed inwardlie so muche to molest hym.

Silvanus, hearyng his ladies requeste, aunswered in this wise: My deare wife, the sweetest companion that ever manne did possesse, for so muche as you so earnestly desire to understande what it is that so muche withdraweth my delights, I will not let to bewraie the truthe, whiche is this. When I consider with my self of your present estate and condition, who, from the tippe and height of dignitie, have not spared for my sake to surrender your self to become a subject to all mishaps, besieged on every side with the future assualtes or ordinarie fortune; it maketh me, therefore, to have the greater care by what meanes I might endevour myself to maintaine and continue your estate, though not accordyng to your worthinesse and callyng, yet accordyng to your well contentmente and likyng. And hereupon conceivyng in my hedde diverse imaginations, no meanes but one in my fancie seemeth beste,

whiche is, that I goe to the courte of the Emperour Claudioſ, who at this present is leadyng a greate bande to encounter the Turke, at whose handes I doubtē not but to receive ſome good entertainment: and besides the honour and reputation I maie gaine by good deserte, I maie likewiſe reape ſuche livyng and good likyng of the Emperour, that, in deſpight of Fortune's teethe, wee maie live hereafter a quiet and honourable life, to our greate joye and comforde. But when I did conſider the beloved compagnie of you, deare wife, I feared to bewraie that whiche now I have diſclosed, not knoweyng in what parte you would take it, that I ſhould ſo ſodainly departe. Loe! here the cauſe of my diſquietnesſe, whiche you deſire ſo iſtantly to knowe.

The ladie, whiche was wiſe, perceivynge the greate love that her housebande diſbare her, when he had ſtaied hymſelf from talke, with glad and merrie countenaunce aunſwered in this wiſe.

Ah, Silvanus! the exemplar of all vertue and gentlenesse, let death and fortune doe what thei liſt, for I countip myself more then ſatiſfed of all that is paſt, by the onely enjoying of your preſence, contentyng myſelf to bee a partaker of your miſfortunes; and I haue no doubt but that I can ſo moderat my affections, that, duryng my liſe, I will reſt better contented with that whiche your abilitie wil permit, be it never ſo meane, then otherwiſe to bee honoured with names and titles of nobilitie in princely ſtate or porte, having not your preſence. Diſquiet not yourſelf, therefore, but perfever in your determination, and that ſorowe whiche ſhall aſſaile me by reaſon of your abſence, I will ſweten and lenefie with contentation to ſe your commendable deſire appeaſed; and the pleauant memorie of your valiaunt factes ſhall beguile my pensive thoughtes, hopyng that our nexte meetyng ſhall bee more joyfull and glad, then this our partyng ſhall be either heavie or ſad.

The ladies aunſwere diſwonderfully quiet the mynde of

Silvanus ; and callyng his hoste the sexten unto hym, whom he had made partaker of his determinations, he departed, leavyng his wife suche money and jewelles as thei had remainyng. And commyng to the courte of the Emperour Cladius he was very well entertained, and the rather for that the Emperour had greate neede of menne to supply his armie, whiche had sustainted sondrie conflictes, and divers overthowes ; for the Turke did wonderfully incroche upon the Emperour, and had taken sondrie cities, tounes, and castelles from hym, and was like still every daie more to prevaile then other, that now the Emperour beganne to repent hym of the slender accoumpte he had made of souldiours in the tyme of peace, for that he had too fewe that were sufficient to serve him in his warres : for in steede of Experience, Valiaunce, and Policie, (whiche three ought to be governours, commaunders, and cheef officers in a campe) he was glad to preferre Vainglorie, Foolishehardinesse, and Rashnesse, simple sottes that were more fitter to waite in gentlewomans' chambers, then to be made captaines, or leaders in the warres.

The Emperour now standyng in greate distresse for want of menne, for those that he had made greatest accompt of in the tyme of peace were now able to stande him in no steede in the tyme of warres, and those that had braved it up and doun the courte in the newe cuttes, straunge fashions, their haire friseled, lookyng with suche grisly and terrible countenaunces, enough to make a wiseman beleeve thei were cleane out of their wittes, now in the tyme of warres were glad to runne under a gentlewoman's farthyngall to hide them.

The Emperour (I saie) beeeyng thus perplexed, called to his remembraunce the injurie that he had doen Sappho, whom he had banished onely to satisfie the willes of those that were aboue hym, whiche he knewe did hate hym more of spight then for any occasion the Duke had given. Without any farther delaie, therefore, the Emperour sent sondrie messengers into every parte of Christendome, to make inquirie that whoso-

ever could finde the Duke, should bee worthily recompenced, and those proclamations were spread through every region, in citie, towne, and village. In so muche that in this parishe where the Duke remained sexten, as you have heard, the priest made inquierie on Sondaie in the churche (as the custome is) that where as aboute fourteene or fifteene yeares sithence the Duke of Mantona was banished by the Emperour, whiche was procured rather by envie then for any deserte, as now it was proved; who so ever, therefore, could give any intelligence of the said Duke, should bee verie liberally recompensed by the Emperour.

The sexten now hearyng these newes, did thinke it more better to live still in his sexten's rome, where he remained without envie, then to become againe the Duke of Mantona, subiecte to the spite of hatefull persones; but callyng to his mynde his wife and daughter, which he thought remained yet alive, (although he knewe not where) and for the greate love that he bare to Silvanus, whose wife remained in his house (as you heard) seeyng that Fortune offered hym so good opportunitie to pleasure them, onely for their sakes, resolved hymself to goe to the Emperour. But firste comfortyng his geste Valerya, whom for a tyme he should leave in his house onely with suche servauntes as herself had aboute her, he tolde her that he was well assured where to finde this Duke, that was so muche inquired after, and that he doubted not (if it were but in respecte of his good newes) he should woorke Silvanus, her housbande, into some credite with the Duke, who might like-wise procure his better preferment with the Emperour.

And thus the sexten departed, and with all convenience came to the courte of the Emperour, to whom when he had made hym self knowne, he was moste honourably received, and greate joye and gladnesse was made throughout the whole courte: the Emperour now, in consideration of the injurie he had doen hym, did not onely restore hym to his former rome and dignitie, but also advaunced hym in honour and

estimation, to be preferred before all other next unto hymself.

Thus after many benefites received of the Emperour, the Duke prepared hymself, accompanied with many his freendes, to goe to the Emperour's campe, of the whiche he was made generall, where he knewe well how to behave himself; and givynge out newe ordinaunces, he appointed certaine suche as he hymself knewe worthie, and gave them charge; emongest the reste, seeying Silvanus, who all this while remained in the campe, whom the Duke did very well knowe, although Silvanus did little suspecte that a poore sexten of a parishe should become a general to an Emperour's army. The Duke, perceivynge hymself to bee unknowne to Silvanus, was contented so to remaine for a tyme; but yet desirous to see what was in hym, he gave hym the leadyng of certaine horsemen, with the whiche Silvanus served so valiauntly, and there with all had so happie successe, that every manne extolled up to the heavens the worthinessse of Silvanus. This pleased the Duke passyng well, and the Duke havynge now sondrie tynies incountred with the power of the Turkes, and had given them many overthrowes, he was now preparynge a greate force for the recoverie of the citie of Cayoe, the whiche the Turkes had taken before from the Emperour; and callyng Silvanus unto hym, he saied, "God graunt, yong gentleman, that your ende agree with your good beginnyng :" then makyng Silvanus to kneele, he dubbed him knight, and made him colonell of twentie ensignes.

Silvanus, after he had dooen his reverence, thanked the Duke of the honour and favour whiche it had pleased hym to dooe hym, promisyng to dooe so well in tyme to come, as he should not bee deceived in his conceived opinion: whereof he gave assured testimonie at the assaulte that was given to the citie before mentioned, where he behaved hym self so valiantly, as he was the first that mounted upon the walles, and by his dexteritie and invincible force made waie to the souldiours in

the breache, whereby thei entered and tooke the citie, killyng and drivyng out their enemies before theim. In many suchelike attempttes Silvanus still shewed hymself so noble and valiaunt, that his praise and renowme was sounded in every place.

The Duke now havyng recovered againe all suche cities, townes, and other fortes, whiche the Turke had before taken from the Emperour, and there with all had banished the Turkes from out the boundes and borders of the empire, and a league agreed upon betweene the Emperour and the Turke, the armie beeyng broken up, and souldiours discharged, every manne well recompensed for his service, accordyng as he had deserved, Silvanus likewise, who by his worthinesse havyng not onely made himself famous to the world, but also had well lined his purse with good store of golde, bethinkyng hym now of his faire ladie, came to the Duke to have taken his leave; but the Duke, mindyng now to performe the good that he ment to Silvanus, was resolved in his minde that Silvanus, with his wife, should bee his gestes, as well at Mantona, where he was Duke, as thei had been before, where he was but a sexten, saied to Silvanus as followeth.

“ Sir knight, what haste is this, that you would so sodainly withdraw your self from out my companie? Belike you have some faire wife, to whom you make suche speede to be gone. But, sir, content yourself to beare me companie to the Emperour’s courte, where I doubt not but you shall receive some better recompence for your service so happily begunne, for it is not requisite but that the vertue of valiaunce ought to bee rewarded and cherished by princes that be aided in their necessitie, with the diligence of suche vertuous and noble gentlemen as your self.” Silvanus, greatly comforted with these wordes of the Duke, was well pleased to waite upon hym. Thus thei tooke their journey towardes the greate citie of Chirona, whiche was in the uttermoste borders of the Emperour’s dominions: there the Duke purposed to staie awhile, to recreate hymself with the rest of his companie.

Now, it fortuned that the valiaunt actes and hautie enterprises of Silvanus were so renowned and spredde, that the same, therefore, came to the eares of the Duke of Vasconya, that was father to Valerya, the wife of Silvanus, who with all possible speede made suche haste, that he came to Cherona, where he founde Silvanus in the companie of the Duke of Mantona, to whom turnyng hymself, he saied as followeth.

“ Sir Duke, the onely hope that I have, that you will not let to extende justice upon the mischeevous and ungratiouse actes of wicked menne, doth let me at this instant to forbearre, with myne owne handes, to avenge the wrong that I assure myself to have received of this traitour, Silvanus.”

The companie were wonderfully abashed with these wordes, but especially the Duke of Mantona, who loved Silvanus more dearly then any other.

But the other goyng still forwardes in his tale, said : “ If the harte breaketh that afflicteth the soule of a wofull father, whose house is made desolate by loosyng his child, by the mischivous inticementes of a theefe—if this president, I saie, move you not to minister suche speedie revenge as the lawe doeth prescribe, I suppose that all impunitie of vice and sinne hath place on your behalf.” And there with al staiyng his talke, but yet by his gesture and countenance so enraged, that he seemed like a man that were besides hymself.

The Duke of Mantona now perceivynge the matter, that Valerya was the daughter of the Duke of Vasconya, whom he supposed to have been of some meane birthe and parentage, was wonderfully sorie for Silvanus, whose facte by the lawe deserved death ; and seyng the Duke in suche a furie, he wiste not by what meanes to worke Silvanus safetie. For to intreate the Duke he thought it but vaine, and to bryng Silvanus to aunswere the facte, he knewe the lawe would condemne him, and therefore knowyng where Valerya did remaine, whom he knewe did love Silvanus as her owne life, and thinking that her teares might lenifie and soften the hardened harte of

the Duke her father, he therefore prively sent for her, to bee brought immediatly to the citie of Cherona. In the meane tyme he committed Silvanus into safe custodie, and desired the Duke, at his request, to staie hymself a while, and he should have suche justice on Silvanus as hymself would require.

Matters beeyng thus pacified for a while, I will, in like case, lette them rest for a tyme, and will now discourse how it befell to the Dutches Messilina, with her daughter Phylene.

You have heard before how, by constraint of weather at the sea, thei were driven to this citie of Cherona, where the Duke now remained, and at her first commyng, fallyng to her worke as before she had doen at Taryffa, a riche marchaunt that dwelte in the towne, takyng the viewe of this newe come workewoman, fell into so greate a likyng with her, that onely to have accesse to come into her companie, he bestowed more money in cloathe to make hym shirtes and handcarchifes in one weeke, then he was able to weare out in three yeares after, whiche he put to her to make, whereby he became somethyng well acquainted with her; but to the ende that she might thinke her self something the better beholdyng unto hym, he proffered her a more convenient house then that she was in, whiche he would furnishe with all maner of householde stufte for a reasonable rent. She, beeyng very glad of so good an offer, became his tenaunt. The marchaunt now perceivynge his tyme did so well serve hym, without any greate circumstaunce, declared unto her the greate good will he bare her; but Messilina so delaied hym with suche wise and reasonable aunswers, that from tyme to tyme the merchant hymself could not importunately crave that, whiche with suche modestie she so honestly denaied him.

Now, there laie in this citie of Cherona the olde Dutches of Petrona, who havyng inteligence of Messilina to be so good a woorkewoman, she sent for her, to whom she put sondrie parcelles of woorke; whiche she so well finished to the likyng

of the Dutches, that from time to time she still plide her with the like, whereby Messilina, with her daughter Phylene, had continuall recourse to the pallas of the Dutches, where Arabianus, the onely sonne of the Dukes of Petrona (and inheritor of the dukedom, but that he was under age) did marke and behold the beautie and good grace of this yong seamester, Phylene, was so clogged and fettered in the bandes of love, that all other thoughtes seemed lothsome unto hym, and every other joye displeasaunt, in respecte of the pleasure that he suffered by thinkyng of his faire Phylene: wherefore baityng hymself with hope, and tickled onely by love, he determined, what soever happened, to love her.

Whiche beyng perceived by his mother, she began very sharply to rate hym, blamynge hym that would so indiscretly place his love, not waiying his estate and birthe, as come of princely race, and now would make hymself a fable to the worlde, to like of suche a one so farre unworthie his degree.

Arabianus, fallyng downe upon his knees, moste humbly desired his mother to beare with all that was paste, and although it were truthe that she had saied, that he deemed her for her birthe to be unworthie his degree, yet she deserved for her beautie to be compared to the greatest dame and bravest minion els where. And whereas other girles, by artificiall meanes and trumperies, doe inforce that whiche the heavens have denaid them, yet Phylene had no other ornamant then that whiche nature had inlarged in her; and otherwise for her vertue, wisedome, and modestie, he knewe it to suche, by reporte of many, as she might bee a lanterne to the greatest dame that lived.

“ Notwithstandyng, madam, for so muche as you doe take my facte in so ill parte, consideryng the reverence that I owe to the place whiche you holde on my behauulf, and the duetie and obedience that God will, and hath commaunded, that children should beare to those that have begotten and borne them, if it please you to pardon me of this that is past, I pro-

test that from hence foorth I will bee more wise, and better advised, how I enter into anything that might turne to any suche consequence, or any maner of waies to offend you."

The Dutches, knowyng all to be true that her sonne had saied, very well pleased with his speeches, remained satisfied, thinkyng in her mynde, in deede, that if Phylene had bin the daughter but of some meane gentleman, her sonne should never have sought farther for a wife.

From this tyme forwardes, although Arabianus, by the perswasion of his mother, had vowed to revolt and let slip the love that he bare to Phylene, yet he could not so clearely loose his likyng, but that he did manifest some parte of his good will by giftes and good countenaunces whiche still he bestowed upon Phylene, causing his mother likewise to bestowe many liberal rewards upon Messilina: thus the mother and the daughter perceived them selves a thousande tymes beholding to the olde Dutches and her sonne.

In this meane space the marchaunt, before mentioned, had buried his wife, and knowyng no other but that Messilina, his tenaunte, had bin a widowe, he began now a freshe sute, and with greate importunitie requested her in the waie of mariage; and so hardly he laied unto her, that Messilina, not knowyng otherwise how to rid hym, confessed unto hym that she had a housbande alive, and therefore might not marie.

The marchaunt, thinkyng these to bee but delaies to shift hym of, came to this pointe, that if hereafter he could prove her, by her owne confession, to bee a widowe, that then before witnessse she would take hym for her lawfull housbande; and till that tyme he would no farther trouble her till he had made his profe. She beyng glad to be at rest, thinkyng that he should woorke very wisely to make her confess her self to bee a widowe, agreed to his request, and witnessse was had in the matter. The marchaunt, now letting his matter rest a tyme for his better purpose, in the ende commyng unto her, he tolde her, that although she were so dis-

courteous to forsake his frendshippe in every respecte, first in the waie of good fellowshippe, and after in the waie of marriage, whereby he was driven to goe seeke farther, but now havyng founde a wife in the countrey, to whom he was assured; and ment presently to be married, yet for the olde freedshippe that he bare her, consideryng that he would presently remaine in the countrey altogether, and forsake the citie, therefore, for her better securitie, and assuraunce of her dwellyng, he would make her a lease of the house that she dwelte in for one and twentie yeres, if it might doe her any pleasure, without payng any penie income.

Messilina, givynge hym greate thankes, tooke his offer verie courteouslie, and the lease was put to makyng, which the marchaunt signed and delivered; and here withall desired her single obligation for the performance of some small rente, were it never so little, that she might acknowledge hym to bee her landlorde, the whiche she never denaied to give.

The obligation was made in this maner:—"Knowe all men by this presentes, that I, Messilina, widowe," and so forthe, with wordes in maner and forme of every obligation. This obligation, thus made, was signed and delivered by Messilina to the marchaunte, who had now gotten that so long he had sought for, and by vertue of this obligation craved Messilina to bee his wife, she denaiyng his demaunde. But what could that prevaile, when he had her owne hande and seale to shewe, whereby she confessed her self a widowe, and then by her owne agreement (as you have heard before) she must yeeld her self to be his wife. This matter was long in fending and proving, in so muche that the Duke beyng now in the toun, ministryng of justice to suche as would crave it, the marchaunt brought the matter before the Duke, who hearyng the maner of the bargaine, and so many witnesses to affirme the same, gave sentence that the marchaunte ought in deede to have her. But Messilina, fallyng at the feete of the Duke, desiryng him with teares to deferre his judgement, the Duke

now taking better vewe of the woman, knowyng her bothe by her voyce, and also by lookyng well on her face, perceived assuredly that it was his own wife, he called againe to the marchaunte to see his obligation ; whiche when he had received, he said in this manner.

“ Maister marchaunt, this obligation which you have delivered me, now I have perused with better advise, I finde it to bee neither sufficient nor lawfull, for this woman that you would make a widowe without doubte is maried, and hath a housbande : now, she beyng under covert barne, your obligation is unpleadable ; and I knowe not who you should blame, whether yourself or the scrivener.” And here withall, beeyng replete with greate joye and gladnesse, takyng his wife up in his armes, very lovyngly imbraced her, he said.

“ Ah, my deare and lovyng wife ! how muche am I bounde to render innumerable thankes to the Almighty God, that when all hope was paste, have yet againe recovred my greatest hope and conforto.” Messilina, likewise perceivyng her lorde and housebande, claspynge her handes about his necke, was not able to speake a woerde for joye and contentation : the companie that stooede by, amased to see this sodaine happe, were likewise verie joyfull to see this freendly meetyng. The marchaunt, seyng how he had been deceived, tare his obligation, and departed all ashamed. The Duke now, desirous to see his daughter Phylene, caused her mother to sende for her, who not knowyng her father otherwise then by reporte, fell doune on her knees to crave his blesсыng. The Duke takyng her up, kissyng her with faterlie affection, could not staie his teares in remembryng her brother Aurelianuſ, whom he deemed to be dedde.

These newes were sodainly spred throughout the citie of Cherona; in so muche that Arabianuſ, havyng now intelligence that Philene was the daughter of the noble Duke Sappho, certifiyng his mother the truthe whiche he had learned, without any greate deliberation, bothe the mother and the sonne

commynge to visite the Duke and his companie, where thei were very well welcomed, but especially by Messilina, to whom the olde Duches and her sonne bothe had been verie bountifull ; and when awhile thei had passed the tyme with pleasaunt discourses of all that had passed, the Duches of Petrona craved Philene in mariage for her sonne. The Duke beyng made privie to the matter, knowyng Arabianus to bee come of greate discent, and to bee indued with large and faire posses-sions, seyng hym likewise to bee a toward yong gentleman, would not stande againste it, but referred the matter to his daughter's likyng. Philene, who had been greatly bounde to the courtesie of the yong Duke, and had received many giftes and good turnes at his handes, would not doe as a nomber of these nise dames, that will many tymes make daintie of that thei would fainest come by, gave her free consent. There was then no more to do but to prepare for the mariage, which was presently solemnized with greate pompe and glorie.

By this Valeria (whom, as you have heard before, the Duke had sent for) was come to Cherona, who was prively lodged, by the Duke's commaundment, in a privie place. The daie now beeyng come that Silvanus was brought to his aunswere, he could not deniae the facte wherewith he was charged, but that he had stolne Valeria from her father, by whiche confession the lawe condemned hym to dye. There were many that knewe the noblenesse of Silvanus, that began to entreate the Duke of Vasconia to remit the facte ; but all in vaine, for the more thei entreated, the more he hastened to see execution.

The Duke of Mantona, seyng his greate obstinacie, did thinke it hye tyme to finde a remedie for Silvanus if it might bee : therefore he saied, " Sir Duke, were it possible that this condemned manne, who is like (so farre as I can see) to beare the whole brunte, and yet might bee enticed to this facte by your daughter's meanes, or, at the leaste, your daughter muste bee halfe partner of this faulfe, and yeelded with her good

will to come awaie, for otherwise it had been unpossible for hym to have brought her from out your courte ; whiche if it bee true, if you will needes see justice so duely executed in the one, I can not see how your daughter can goe quite, but must bee as well partaker of the punishment, as she was in the facte by yeeldyng her consent."

The Duke of Vasconia aunswerd. " As it is the office and duetie of every good justicer to knowe the valour and difference betweene vertue and vice, to the ende that all vertuous actes may bee honoured, and the contrary chastised and punished, otherwise he is not worthy the name of a righteous judge, but of a cruell and traiterous tyrant ; wherefore, Sir Duke, you sittynge here in the place of justice, to minister equitie and right to every one that calleth, then I desire that I maie have the lawe extended uppon this wretche, Silvanus. As for my daughter that you speake of, as I knowe not where she is, so I doe not desire to learne what is become of her ; but this I protest, that if ever I maye finde her, rather then she should escape unpunished, I will not let with myne owne handes to do execusion upon her, accordyng to her demerites, and the filthinesse of her facte, from henceforthe denouncyng her to bee any child of nyne, and make no better accoumpt of her otherwise then to bee a filthie strompet, unworthy of me, her father, or to chalenge her descent from such a stocke."

The Duke of Mantona was now troubled worse then before, for where as he had some hope that the humble sute of Valeria should somethyng have mooved her father to compassion, he now thought that her sight would rather increase his rage and furie. Againe he thought, that to bryng her into his presence, if he continued in one moode, he might worke Valeria so greate prejudice, as he would be hartely sorie to see ; yet thinkyng with himself, that it was impossible that a father should be so voyde of good nature, to see the utter ruine of his childe without any remorse, he caused Valeria to bee sent for ; who beeyng conducted to the place, seeyng her father

and the reste of the companie, she beganne to conjecture that all was not well ; but when Silvanus sawe his Valeria, wondering by what meanes she was brought to so evill a banquett, remembryng what woordes her father before had protested, he began with a piteous voice to crie out—

“ O, my deare, beloved wife ! the onely cause of my joye and quiete ! what evill fortune hath conducted thee to this place ? what froward fates have forced thee, that thou shouldest be made a companion of my mishappes ? O fraile and inconstant fortune ! how hast thou fronted my honest desires with such a crooked spight, that where I covet the countenaunce of greatest credite, there I am forced to hazard the losse of life, and all what crooked aspecte hath governed my proceadynge, that the hoped tyme I spente in this warlike service should thus conclude with his contrary, and I forced as it were by fate to followe the unhappy event of the same, wherein I doe confesse my predestinate follies. But suche are the sonderie dealynges of this life, as those that tende their steppes to monsterous mountaines doe sometyme scarce conclude with meane moole hilles, the sondrie conflictes of fortune maskyng my hope with a shewe of happye reward, hath not onely wracked me, but it threateneth the sequell of worse successe, that insteade of happye and quiet life, my daies shalbe abridged with moste shamefull and vile death. O, Valeria, the joye and conforto of my life ! I shall no more see that incomparable beautie of thyne, whiche darkeneth and obscureth the rayes and beames of the sunne.”

Then, tournyng hymself to the Duke of Vasconia, he said, “ I moste humbly beseche your grace to have compassion upon me : not for that I would consume my life in your displeasure, I make offer of the same to your mercifull will and disposition, choosyng rather to dye, and to leave your grace satisfied and contented, then to live a happye life, your princely minde displeased ; and albeit the right good intente and unstained conscience is free from faute, yet the judgemente of

menne hath farther relation to the exterior appearance then to vertue's force. Is it a synne to marrie?—is it a faulte to flye and avoyde the synne of whoredome? What lawes be these, then, where the marriage bedde and joyned matrimonie is pursued with like severitie as murther, thefste, adulterie? But seeyng the fault of this mishap to arise by my predestinate evill lucke, I moste humbly beseche you to mitigate your rage, and to conceive no sinister opinion of this your worthie daughter, whose smallest greef is my double paine. As for my self, I am well pleased with my misfortune, contented to sacrifice my life onely to receive your cleare acquitaunce of my offence, and will make satisfaction with the price of my blood."

The Duke of Vasconia, bendyng his browes, aunswered. "No, traitour, no; it is not thy life that shall appease my furie, but I will so coole the whorishe heate of your minion, for whome you seeme so muche to pleade, that I will make her an example to all others for dooynge of an acte so detestable. But what abuse have thei committed under the title of marriage, thinkyng, without remorse of conscience, by that meanes to continue their mischeef; and their promise and faithe, that was made under a bushe, muste serve for a cloake and visarde for their moste filthie whoredome. But what if their marriage were concluded and confirmed by God hymself, is Silvanus a manne worthy to be alied or mingled with the royll blood of the house of Vasconia? No, no: I vowe I will never take sound nor restfull slepe, untill I have dispatched that infamous facte from our blood, and that vilaine whoremonger, with his trull, be used accordyng to their desertes."

Valeria now knowyng how matters were sorted out, and hearyng this cruell sentence pronounced by her father, fell doune upon her knees, and bitterly cryng out, she saied. "My deare father, most humbly I beseche you, sithe no other thing maie appease your ire then the life of the offender, let

not this gentleman abide the penaunce of that whiche he never committed ; be revenged on me, by whom the faulthe (if a woman's faithe to her housebande maie be termed a fault) is doen, and lette this unfortunate gentleman depart, who, God knowes, is innocente of any other crime then what he was brought into onely by my provocation." And as she was aboute to have proceded farther in her talke, her father interrupted her, saiyng—

" Have you founde your tongue now, pretie peate ? then wee most have an almon for parrat. How durst thou, strompette, chalenge me to bee thy father ? That without regarde either of my renowne, or of the honour of my house, thou art content to bee abandoned from this noble estate, and to become a fugitive and a straunger, to followe a rooge up and downe the countrey. No, minion, no : thinke not that any feminine flatterie shall staie me from doyng thee to death, nor your darlyng that standes by you shall escape with his life, verely beleevyng that in tyme it shall be knowne what profite the worlde shall gaine, by purgynge the same of such an infected plague. And I doe hope, besides this, that in tyme to come menne shall praise this deede of myne, who, for preservyng the honour of my house, have chosen rather to dooe to death twoo offendours, then to leave the one of them alive, as lesse faultie or giltlesse then the other."

Valeria, once againe fallyng prostrate before her father, saied, " I moste humbly beseche you, for that all other conforte is denaied me, that I maie crave this onely grace at your handes, for the laste good that ever I hope to receive, which is, that you beeyng thus greevouslie offended with me, dooe vengeance at your pleasure uppon her, who willingly yeeldeth herself to the death, with the effution of her blood to satifie your ire, graunte onely that Silvanus, who is innocente and free from fault, maie goe quite."

But her father, no longer able for anger to heare her speake, crieth out to the Duke to haste the execution. The Duke of

Mantona, whose harte did bleede in his beallie for sorowe, perceivynge it follie to delaye longer tyme, gave sentence of death, and present execution to be made, although he tooke so greate sorrow for them, as if his daughter Philene should have borne them companie: but he was not able to helpe it, the lawes and ordinaunces of the countrey would not otherwise permit; and thinking to take his laste farewell of Silvanus, he saied. " O, Silvanus ! the glorie and honour of all yong gentlemen that ever were, that bee now, or shall be hereafter this, whose vertue, valiaunce, and worthie exploites, doe glister emongst the multitude, as the sunne beames doe upon the cirquet of the yearth, Oh ! that thy harde fortune should conducte thee to suche distresse, that onely by thyne owne valiaunce and proweesse hast escaped so many daungers emongst thy thronged enemies, and now thy ruine and overthrowe should bee thus wrought, amiddest thy assured frendes, that know not how to helpe it. What heapes of cares hath besieged me on every side ! To thinke that I should crave thy companie, whereby thou art brought into the middest of so greate mischeef, which otherwise mightest have escaped this mishappe ! and thou, Valeria, would God thy unfortunate hoste, whiche departed from thee, thinkyng to dooe thy house-band pleasure, had remained with thee a poore sexten still, till this present daie !

The reste of the companie that stooode by, hearing the Duke to make so greate lamentation, was likewise striken into a marvailous greef and sorowe, in so muche that every one that durste speake, wied to the Duke of Vasconia for pardon, and that he would remitte the offence, and what pitie it were if he should seeke the death of so noble a gentleman as Silvanus had shewed hymself to bee. But the Duke, persevering still in one mynde, asked them with what face thei could make request for a verlet of no reputation, whom he had founde in the wooddes, and brought hym up to that estate he was come to, not knowyng who was his father, but by seemyng some poore

country cloune ; and forgettyng hym self from whence he sprong, neglectyng so many benefites which he had bestowed upon him, would enter into those thynges, so farre unseemely, and exceeding his degree.

The Duke of Mantona, givynge good eare to this tale, remembryng his soonne Aurelianuſ, whom he had loste in the woodes about those partes, questioned with the Duke of the tyme, and what apparell the child had on at that present, who in all thinges shewed a trothe as it was. He demanded, farther, how he knewe his name to be Silvanus, or whether he had any other name ? “ Yes (q, the Duke of Vasconia) his name, he said, was Aurelianuſ, whiche my ſelf changed to Silvanus, because I founde hym in the wooddes.

Here withall, without any farther staie, the Duke of Mantona, runnyng hastedly uppon Silvanus, imbracing hym in his armes, crying, “ O, my ſoonne ! my ſoonne ! ” and with this ſodain joye the teares trickled dounen his cheekeſ ſo fast, that he was not farther able to ſpeake one woordē.

The Duke of Vasconia, muche amazed to ſee this ſight, but a greate deale more gladde that Silvanus had founde out ſuche a father, and now nothyng at all offendeth with his daughter’s choyce, came likewiſe with chearfull countenance and imbraced Silvanus, deſiring bothe the Duke his father and hymſelf to forgiue what was paſt ; and takyng Valerya by the hande, he delivered her to Silvanus, promiſyng hym for her dowrie 40,000 franckes in golde, preſently to be paied, and after his deceaſe to remaine for his inheritor.

Silvanus, better pleased with Valerya her ſelf then with al the rest that was promiſed, gave hym greate thankes, and ſo did the Duke his father.

All the compagnie were replenished with the greateſt joie that might be to ſee this ſodaine ſight, and thus thei departed to the pallas, where the Duke kepte his abode, where Silvanus was welcomēd to his mother, to his ſister, to Arابianus, and to all the rest, where there was greate feaſtyng

and triumph, and a bonde of everlastyng amitie betwene the houses of the Duke of Mantona, the Duke of Vasconya, and the Duke of Petrona; and after a whyle thei had feasted and sported them selves, thei rode altogether in companie to the Emperour's courte, who received them with so greate honour as he could devise, and makyng hym self a partaker of their mirthe, wonderyng to here the hole discourse how thynges had happened. When after a while he had feasted them, and shewed them as greate pleasures as might be devised, he bestowed of them al large and bountifull giftes, but especially of the two yong ladies, Valerya and Phylene; and thus agreyng amongst them selves to meete once a yeare, at the least, to sporte and make themselves merrie, for this season thei departed, every one where it lyked them beste.

## OF APOLONIUS AND SILLA.

## THE ARGUMENT OF THE SECOND HISTORIE.

*Apolonius Duke, havyng spent a yeres service in the warres against the Turke, returning homward with his companie by sea, was driven by force of weather to the Ile of Cypres, where he was well received by Pontus, gouvernour of the same ile, with whom Silla, daughter to Pontus, fell so straungely in love, that after Apolonius was departed to Constantinople, Silla, with one man, followed, and commyng to Constantinople, she served Apolonius in the habite of a manne, and after many pretty accidentes falling out, she was knowne to Apolonius, who, in requitall of her love, maried her.*

There is no child that is borne into this wretched worlde, but before it doeth sucke the mother's milke, it taketh first a soope of the cupp of errorr, which maketh us, when we come to riper yeres, not onely to enter into actions of injurie, but many tymes to straie from that is right and reason; but in all other thinges, wherein wee shewe our selves to bee moste dronken with this poisoned cuppe, it is in our actions of love; for the lover is so estranged from that is right, and wandereth so wide from the boundes of reason, that he is not able to deeme white from blacke, good from badde, vertue from vice; but onely led by the apetite of his owne affections, and groundyng them on the foolishnesse of his owne fancies, will so settle his likyng on such a one, as either by desert or unworthinesse will merite rather to be loathed then loved.

If a question might be asked, what is the ground in deede of reasonable love, whereby the knot is knit of true and perfect freendship, I thinke those that be wise would answe—deserte: that is, where the partie beloved dooeth requite us with the like; for otherwise, if the bare shewe of beautie, or the comelinesse of personage might bee sufficient to confirme us in our love, those that bee accustomed to goe to faires and markettes might sometymes fall in love with twentie in a daie: desert must then bee (of force) the grounde of reasonable love; for to love them that hate us, to followe them that flie from us, to faune on them that froune on us, to currie favour with them that disdaine us, to bee glad to please theim that care not how thei offend us, who will not confesse this to be an erro-nious love, neither grounded uppon witte nor reason? Wherfore, right curteous gentilwomen, if it please you with pacience to peruse this historie following, you shall see Dame Errorre so plaiie her parte with a leishe of lovers, a male and twoo femalles, as shall woorke a wonder to your wise judgement, in notyng the effecte of their amorous devises, and conclusions of their actions: the firste neclectyng the love of a noble dame, yong, beautifull, and faire, who onely for his good will plaied the parte of a serving manne, contented to abide any maner of paine onely to behold him: he again setting his love of a dame, that despysing hym (beeyng a noble Duke) gave her self to a servyng manne (as she had thought); but it otherwise fell out, as the substance of this tale shall better describe. And because I have been somethyng tedious in my firste discourse, offending your pacient eares with the hearyng of a circumstaunce over long, from hence forthe, that whiche I minde to write shall bee dooen with suche celeritie, as the matter that I pre-teride to penne maie in any wise permit me, and thus followeth the historie.

During the tyme that the famous citie of Constantinople remained in the handes of Christians, emongst many other noble menne that kepte their abidyng in that florishyng citie,

there was one whose name was Apolonius, a worthie duke, who beyng but a verie yong man, and even then newe come to his possessions, whiche were verie greate, levied a mightie bande of menne at his owne proper charges, with whom he served againste the Turke duryng the space of one whole yere : in whiche tyme, although it were very shorte, this yong Duke so behaved hym self, as well by prowesse and valiaunce shewed with his owne handes, as otherwise by his wisdome and liberalitie used towardes his souldiors, that all the worlde was filled with the fame of this noble Duke. When he had thus spent one yeares service, he caused his trumpet to sounde a retrait, and gatheryng his companie together, and imbarkyng theim selves, he sette saile, holdyng his course towardes Constantinople : but, beeyng upon the sea, by the extreamtie of a tempest whiche sodainly fell, his fleete was desevered, some one waie, and some another ; but he hymself recovered the Isle of Cypres, where he was worthily received by Pontus, duke and gouernour of the same ile, with whom he lodged while his shippes were newe repairyng.

This Pontus, that was lorde and governour of this famous Ile, was an auncient duke, and had twoo children, a soonne and a daughter : his soonne was named Silvio, of whom hereafter we shall have further occasion to speake ; but at this instant he was in the partes of Africa, servyng in the warres.

The daughter her name was Silla, whose beautie was so peerelesse, that she had the soveraintie emongest all other dames, aswell for her beautie as for the noblenesse of hir birthe. This Silla, having heard of the worthinesse of Apolonius, this yong Duke, who besides his beautie and good graces had a certaine naturall allurement, that beeyng now in his companie in her father's courte, she was so strangely attached with the love of Apolonius, that there was nothyng might content her but his presence and sweete sight ; and although she sawe no maner of hope to attaine to that she moste desired, knowyng Apolonius to be but a geaste, and readie to take the benefite

of the next winde, and to departe into a straunge countrey, whereby she was bereaved of all possibillitie ever to see hym againe, and therefore strived with herself to leave her fonde-nesse, but all in vaine ; it would not bee, but, like the foule whiche is once limed, the more she striveth, the faster she tieth her self. So Silla was now constrained, perforce her will, to yeeld to love, wherefore, from tyme to tyme, she used so greate familiaritie with hym as her honour might well permitte, and fedde him with suchे amourous baites as the modestie of a maide could reasonably afforde ; whiche when she perceived did take but small effecte, feelyng herself so muche out raged with the extreamitie of her passion, by the onely countenaunce that she bestowed upon Apolonius, it might have been well perceived that the verie eyes pleaded unto hym for pitie and remorse. But Apolonius, commyng but lately from out the felde from the chasyng of his enemies, and his furie not yet throughly desolved, nor purged from his stomacke, gave no regarde to those amourous entisementes, whiche, by reason of his youth, he had not been acquainted with all. But his minde ranne more to heare his pilotes bryng newes of a merie winde to serve his turne to Constantinople, whiche in the ende came very prosperously ; and givynge Duke Pontus hartie thankes for his greate entertaynment, takyng his leave of hymself and the Ladie Silla, his daughter, departed with his companie, and with a happie gaale arived at his desired porte. Gentlewomen, accordyng to my promise, I will here, for brevities sake, omit to make repetition of the long and dolorous discourse recorded by Silla for this sodaine departure of her Apolonius, knowyng you to bee as tenderly hearted as Silla her self, whereby you maie the better conjecture the furie of her fever. But Silla, the further that she sawe herself bereaved of all hope ever any more to see her beloved Apolonius, so muche the more contagious were her passions, and made the greater speede to execute that she had premeditated in her mynde, which was this. Emongest many servants that did

attend upon her, there was one whose name was Pedro, who had a long tyme waited upon her in her chamber, wherby she was well assured of his fidelitie and trust: to that Pedro therefore she bewraied first the fervencie of her love borne to Apolonius, conjuring hym in the name of the goddes of love herself, and bindyng hym by the duetie that a servante ought to have, that tendereth his mistresse safetie and good likyng, and desiryng hym, with teares tricklyng doune her cheeke, that he would give his consent to aide and assiste her in that she had determined, whiche was for that she was fully resolved to goe to Constantinople, where she might againe take the vewe of her beloved Apolonius, that he, accordyng to the trust she had reposed in hym, would not refuse to give his consent, secretly to convaie her from out her father's courte, accordyng as she should give hym direction, and also to make hym self pertaker of her journey, and to waite upon her till she had seen the ende of her determination.

Pedro, perceivynge with what vehemensie his ladi and mistresse had made request unto hym, albeoit he sawe many perilles and doubtes dependyng in her pretence, notwithstandingyng, gave his consent to be at her disposition, promisyng her to further her with his beste advice, and to be readie to obeye whatsoever she would please to commaunde him. The match beyng thus agreed upon, and all thynges prepared in a readinesse for their departure, it happened there was a gallie of Constantinople readie to departe, whiche Pedro understandyng, came to the captaine, desiryng him to have passage for hymself and for a poore maide that was his sister, whiche were bounde to Constantinople upon certaine urgent affaires: to whiche request the captaine graunted, willyng hym to prepare aborde with all speede, because the winde served hym presently to departe.

Pedro now commyng to his mistres, and tellyng her how he had handeled the matter with the captaine, she likyng verie well of the devise, disguisyg herself into verie simple atyre,

stole awaie from out her father's court, and came with Pedro, whom now she calleth brother, aboarde the galleye, where all thynges beyng in readinesse, and the winde servyng verie well, thei launched forthe with their oares, and set saile. When thei were at the sea, the captaine of the galleye, takyng the vewe of Silla, perceivynge her singular beautie, he was better pleased in beholdyng of her face then in takyng the height either of the sunne or starre, and thinkyng her, by the homelinesse of her apparell, to be but some simple maiden, calling her into his cabin, he beganne to breake with her, after the sea fashion, desiryng her to use his owne cabin for her better ease, and duryng the tyme that she remained at the sea, she should not want a bedde; and then, wisperyng softly in her eare, he saied, that, for want of a bedfellow, he hym self would supplie that rome. Silla, not beyng acquainted with any suche talke, blusshed for shame, but made hym no aunswere at all. My captaine, feelyng suche a bickeryng within him self, the like whereof he had never indured upon the sea, was like to bee taken prisoner aboard his owne shippe, and forced to yeld hymself a captive without any cannon shot; wherefore, to salve all sores, and thinkyng it the readiest waie to speed, he began to breake with Silla in the waie of mariage, tellyng her how happie a voyaige she had made, to fall into the likyng of suche a one as hymself was, who was able to keepe and maintaine her like a gentilwoman, and for her sake would likewise take her brother into his fellowship, whom he would by some meanes prefarre in suche sorte, that bothe of theim should have good cause to think theimselfes thrise happie, she to light of suche a housbande, and he to light of suche a brother. But Silla, not thyng pleased with these prefermentes, desired hym to cease his talke, for that she did thynke her self in deede to bee too unworthie suche a one as he was, neither was she minded yet to marrie, and therefore desired hym to fixe his fancie uppon some that were better worthie then herself was, and that could better like of his curtesie then she could dooe. The captaine,

seyng hymself thus refused, beyng in a greate chafe, he saied as followeth.

Then, seyng you make so little accompte of my curtesie, proffered to one that is so farre unworthie of it, from henceforth I will use the office of my auctoritie: you shall knowe that I am the captaine of this shippe, and have power to commaunde and dispose of thynges at my pleasure; and seyng you have so scornfully rejected me to be your loiall housbande, I will now take you by force, and use you at my will, and so long as it shall please me will keepe you for myne owne store; there shall be no man able to defende you, nor yet to perswade me from that I have determined.

Silla, with these wordes beyng stroke into a greate feare, did thinke it now too late to rewe her rashe attempte, determined rather to dye with her owne handes, then to suffer herself to be abused in suche sorte; therefore, she moste humbly desired the captaine, so muche as he could, to save her credite, and seyng that she must needes be at his will and disposition, that for that present he would depart, and suffer till night, when in the darke he might take his pleasure, without any maner of suspition to the residue of his companie. The captaine, thinkyng now the goale to be more then half wonne, was contented so farre to satisfie her request, and departed out, leavyng her alone in his cabin.

Silla, beyng alone by her self, drue oute her knife, readie to strike herself to the harrt, and, fallyng upon her knees, desired God to receive her soule, as an acceptable sacrifice for her follies, whiche she had so wilfully committed, cravynge pardon for her sinnes and so forthe, continuyng a long and pitifull reconciliation to God, in the middest whereof there sodainely fell a wonderfull storme, the terrour whereof was suche, that there was no man but did thinke the seas would presently have swallowed them: the billowes so sodainly arose with the rage of the winde, that thei were all glad to fall to heaving out of water, for otlierwise their feeble gallie had never

bin able to have brooked the seas. This storme continued all that daie and the next night ; and thei beeyng driven to put romer before the winde, to keepe the gallie a hed the billowe, were driven upon the maine shore, where the gallie brake all to peeces : there was every man providyng to save his own life ; some gat upon hatches, boordes, and casks, and were driven with the waves to and fro ; but the greatest nomber were drowned, amongst the whiche Pedro was one ; but Silla her self beyng in the caben, as you have heard, tooke holde of a cheste that was the captaines, the whiche, by the onely pro-vidence of God, brought her safe to the shore, the whiche when she had recovered, not knowyng what was become of Pedro her manne, she deemeid that bothe he and all the rest had been drowned, for that she sawe no bodie upon the shore but her self. Wherefore, when she had a while made greate lamenta-tions, complainyng her mishappes, she beganne in the ende to comforte herself with the hope that she had to see her Appo-lonius, and found suche meanes that she brake open the chest that brought her to lande, wherin she found good store of coine, and sondrie sutes of apparell that were the captaines. And now, to prevent a nomber of injuries that might bee prof-fered to a woman that was lefte in her case, she determined to leave her owne apparell, and to sort her self into some of those sutes, that, beyng taken for a man, she might passe through the countrie in the better safetie : and, as she changed her apparell, she thought it likewise convenient to change her name ; wherefore, not readily happenyng of any other, she called her self Silvio, by the name of her owne brother, whom you have heard spoken of before.

In this maner she travailed to Constantinople, where she inquired out the palace of the Duke Apolonius ; and thinking herself now to be bothe fitte and able to plaie the servyngman, she presented herself to the Duke, cravyng his service. The Duke, verie willyng to give succour unto strangers, perceivynge him to bee a proper smogue yong man, gave hym entertain-

ment. Silla thought her self now more then satisfied for all the casualties that had happened unto her in her journey, that she might at her pleasure take but the vew of the Duke Apolonus, and above the reste of his servantes was verie diligent and attendaunt uppon hym ; the whiche the Duke perceyng, beganne likewise to growe into good likyng with the diligence of his man, and therefore made hym one of his chamber : who but Silvio then was moste neare aboue hym, in helping of hym to make hym readie in a mornyng, in the settynge of his ruffes, in the keepyng of his chamber ? Silvio pleased his maister so well, that above all the reste of his servantes aboue hym he had the greatest credite, and the Duke put him moste in trust.

At this verie instaunt there was remainyng in the citie a noble Dame, a widowe, whose housebande was but lately deceased, one of the noblest men that were in the partes of Grecia, who left his lady and wife large possessions and greate livinges. This ladies name was called Julina, who, besides the abundance of her wealth and the greatnessse of her revenues, had likewise the soveraigntie of all the dames of Constantinople for her beautie. To this Ladie Julina Apolonus became an earnest suter ; and, accordyng to the maner of woers, besides faire woordes, sorrowfull sighes, and piteous countenaunces, there must bee sendyng of lovyng letters, chaines, bracelettes, brouches, rynges, tablets, gemmes, juels, and presentes, I knowe not what. So my Duke, who in the tyme that he remained in the Ile of Cypres had no skill at all in the arte of love, although it were more then half proffered unto hym, was now become a scholler in love's schoole, and had alreadie learned his first lesson ; that is, to speake pitifully, to looke ruthfully, to promise largely, to serve diligently, and to please carefully : now he was learnyng his seconde lesson ; that is, to reward liberally, to give bountifullly, to present willyngly, and to write lovyngly. Thus Apolonus was so busied in his newe studie, that I warrant you there was no man that could

chalance hym for plaiyng the truant, he followed his profession with so good a will : and who must bee the messenger to carrie the tokens and love letters to the Ladie Julina, but Silvio, his manne : in hym the Duke reposed his onely confidence to gue betweene hym and his ladie.

Now, gentilwomen, doe you thinke there could have been a greater torment devised, wherewith to afflicte the harte of Silla, then her self to bee made the instrumente to woorke her owne mishapp, and to plaie the atturney in a cause that made so muche againte her self? But Silla, altogether desirous to please her maister, cared nothyng at all to offende herself, followed his businesse with so good a will, as if it had been in her owne preferment.

Julina, now havyng many tymes taken the gaze of this yong youth, Silvio, perceivyng hym to bee of suche excellente perfecte grace, was so intanglede with the often sight of this sweete temptation, that she fell into as greate a likyng with the man as the maister was with herself; and on a tyme, Silvio beyng sent from his maister with a message to the Ladie Julina, as he beganne very earnestly to solicit in his maister's behalfe, Julina, interruptyng hym in his tale, saied : Silvio, it is enough that you have saied for your maister ; from henceforth, either speake for your self, or saie nothyng at all. Silla, abashed to heare these wordes, began in her minde to accuse the blindnesse of Love, that Julina, neglectyng the good will of so noble a Duke, would preferre her love unto suche a one, as nature it self had deniaid to recompense her likyng.

And now, for a tyme leavyng matters dependyng as you have heard, it fell out that the right Silvio indeede (whom you have heard spoken of before, the brother of Silla) was come to his father's courte into the Ile of Cypres ; where, understanding that his sister was departed in maner as you have heard, conjectured that the very occasion did proceade of some liking had betwene Pedro her man (that was missyng with her) and herself: but Silvio, who loved his sister as dearly as his owne life,

and the rather for that, as she was his naturall sister, bothe by father and mother, so the one of theim was so like the other in countenaunce and favour, that there was no man able to descerne the one from the other by their faces, savyng by their aparell, the one beyng a man, the other a woman.

Silvio, therefore, vowed to his father, not onely to seeke out his sister Silla, but also to revenge the villanie whiche he conceived in Pedro for the carriyng awaie of his sister ; and thus departyng, havyng travailed through many cities and tounes, without hearyng any maner of newes of those he wente to seeke for, at the laste he arrived at Constantinople, where as he was walkyng in an evenyng for his owne recreation, on a pleasaunte greene yarde, without the walles of the citie, he fortuned to meeete with the Ladie Julina, who likewise had been abroad to take the aire ; and as she sodainly caste her eyes uppon Silvio, thinkyng hym to bee her olde acquaintaunce, by reason thei were so like one another, as you have heard before, saied unto hym, Sir Silvio, if your haste be not the greater, I priae you, let me have a little talke with you, seyng I have so luckely mette you in this place.

Silvio, wonderyng to heare hym self so rightlie named, beyng but a straunger, not of above twoo daies continuance in the citie, verie courteouslie came towardes her, desirous to heare what she would saie.

Julina, commaunding her traine somthyng to stande backe, saied as followeth : Seyng my good will and frendly love hath been the onely cause to make me so prodigall to offer that I see is so lightly rejected, it maketh me to thinke that men bee of this condition, rather to desire those thynges whiche thei can not come by, then to esteeme or value of that whiche bothe largely and liberallie is offered unto theim : but if the liberalitie of my proffer hath made to seme lesse the value of the thing that I ment to present, it is but in your owne conceipt, consideryng how many noble men there hath been here before, and be yet at this present, whiche hath bothe served, sued,

and moste humbly intreated, to attaine to that, whiche to you of myself I have freely offred, and I perceive is despised, or at the least verie lightly regarded.

Silvio, wonderyng at these woordes, but more amazed that she could so rightlie call hym by his name, could not tell what to make of her speeches, assuryng hym self that she was deceived and did mistake hym, did thinke, notwithstandingyng, it had been a poincte of greate simplicite, if he should forsake that whiche Fortune had so favourably proffered unto hym, perceivyng by her traine that she was some ladie of greate honour, and vewyng the perfection of her beautie and the excellencie of her grace and countenaunce, did thinke it unpossible that she should be despised, and therefore aunswered thus :

Madame, if before this tyme I have seemed to forgett my self, in neglectyng your courtesie whiche so liberally you have ment unto me, please it you to pardon what is paste, and from this daie forewardes Silvio remaineth readie prest to make suche reasonable amendes as his abilitie may any waies permit, or as it shall please you to commaunde.

Julina, the gladdest woman that might bee to heare these joyfull newes, saied : Then, my Silvio, see you faile not to morrowe at night to suppe with me at my owne house, where I will discourse farther with you what amendes you shall make me : to whiche request Silvio gave his glad consent, and thus thei departed, verie well pleased. And as Julina did thinke the tyme verie long till she had reapte the fruite of her desire, so Silvio he wishte for harvest before corne could growe, thinkyng the tyme as long till he sawe how matters would fall out ; but, not knowyng what ladie she might bee, he presently (before Julina was out of sight) demaunded of one that was walkyng by, what she was, and how she was called ? who satisfied Silvio in every poincte, and also in what parte of the toun her house did stande, whereby he might enquire it out.

Silvio, thus departing to his lodging, passed the night with

verie unquiet sleapes, and the nexte mornyng his mynde ran so muche of his supper, that he never cared neither for his breakfast nor dinner; and the daie, to his seemyng, passed awaie so slowlie, that he had thought the statelie steedes had been tired that drawe the chariot of the sunne, or els some other Josua had commaunded them againe to stande, and wished that Phaeton had been there with a whippe.

Julina, on the other side, she had thought the clocke setter had plaied the knave, the daie came no faster forwardes: but sixe a clocke beeeyng once stroken, recovered conforte to bothe parties; and Silvio, hastenyng hymself to the pallace of Julina, wherby her he was frendly welcomed, and a sumptuous supper beeeyng made readie, furnished with sondrie sortes of delicate dishes, thei satte them doune, passyng the supper tyme with amorous lokes, lovyng countenaunces, and secret glaunces conveighed from the one to the other, whiche did better satisfie them then the feedyng of their daintie dishes.

Supper tyme beeeyng thus spent, Julina did thinke it verie unfitly if she should tourne Silvio to goe seeke his lodgyng in an evenyng, desired hym therefore that he would take a bedde in her house for that night; and, bringyng hym up into a faire chamber that was verie richely furnished, she founde suche meanes, that when all the reste of her houshold servauntes were a bedde and quiet, she came her self to beare Silvio companie, where, concludyng uppoun conditions that were in question between them, thei passed the night with suche joye and contentation as might in that convenient tyme be wished for. But onely that Julina, feedyng too muche of some one dishe above the reste, received a surfet, whereof she could not bee cured in fourtie weekes after, a naturall inclination in all women whiche are subjecte to longyng, and want the reason to use a moderation in their diet: but the mornyng approchynge, Julina tooke her leave, and conveighed her self into her owne chamber; and when it was faire daie light, Silvio, makyng hym self readie, departed likewise about his affaires in the

toune, debatyng with hymself how thynges had happened, beyng well assured that Julina had mistaken him ; and, therefore, for feare of further evilles, determined to come no more there, but tooke his journey towardes other places in the partes of Grecia, to see if he could learne any tidynges of his sister Silla.

The Duke Apolonus, havyng made a long sute and never a whit the nerer of his purpose, came to Julina to crave her direct aunswere, either to accept of hym and of suche condicions as he proffered unto her, or els to give hym his laste farewell.

Julina, as you have heard, had taken an earnest penie of another, whom she had thought had been Silvio, the Duke's man, was at a controversie in her self what she might doe : one while she thought, seyng her her occasion served so fitt, to crave the Duke's good will, for the mariyng of his manne ; then againe, she could not tell what displeasure the Duke would conceive, in that she should seeme to preferre his man before hymself, did thinke it therefore beste to conceale the matter, till she might speake with Silvio, to use his opinion how these matters should be handled : and hereupon resolvynge herself, desirynge the Duke to pardon her speeches, saied as followeth.

Sir Duke, for that from this tyme forwardes I am no longer of myself, havyng given my full power and authoritie over to another, whose wife I now remaine by faithfull vowe and promise : and albeit I knowe the worlde will wonder when thei shall understande the fondnesse of my choice, yet I trust you yourself will nothyng dislike with me, sithe I have ment no other thing then the satisfiying of myne owne contention and likyng.

The Duke, hearyng these woordes, aunswered : Madam, I must then content my self, although against my wil, having the lawe in your owne handes to like of whom you liste, and to make choise where it pleaseth you.

Julina, givyng the Duke greate thankes, that would content

himself with suche pacience, desired hym likewise to give his free consent, and good will to the partie whom she had chosen to be her housebande.

Naie, surely, madam, (q, the Duke) I will never give my consent that any other man shall enjoye you then myself: I have made too greate accompt of you, then so lightly to passe you awaie with my good will. But seeyng it lieth not in me to let you, havyng (as you saie) made your owne choise, so from hence forwardes I leave you to your owne likyng, alwaies willyng you well, and thus will take my leave.

The Duke departed towards his owne house, verie sorrowfull that Julina had thus served hym: but in the meane space that the Duke had remained in the house of Julina, some of his servantes fell into talke and conference with the servantes of Julina; where, debatyng betwene them of the likelihood of the mariage betweene the Duke and the ladie, one of the servantes of Julina saied, that he never sawe his ladie and mistres use so good countenaunce to the Duke hym self, as she had doen to Silvio his manne; and began to report with what familiaritie and courtesie she had received hym, feasted hym, and lodged hym, and that, in his opinion, Silvio was like to speede before the Duke, or any other that were suters.

This tale was quickly brought to the Duke hymself, who, makynge better inquirie in the matter, founde it to be true that was reported; and, better consideryng of the woordes whiche Julina had used towardes hymself, was verie well assured that it could bee no other then his owne manne, that had thrust his nose so farre out of joynte: wherefore, without any further respect, caused hym to be thrust into a dongeon, where he was kept prisoner in a verie pitifull plight.

Poore Silvio, havyng gotted intelligence by some of his fellowes what was the cause that the Duke his maister did beare suche displeasure unto hym, devised all the meanes he could, as well by meditation by his fellowes, as otherwise by petitions and supplications to the Duke, that he would suspende his judge-

mente till perfecte proofe were had in the matter, and then, if any maner of thyng did fall out againste hym, wherby the Duke had cause to take any greef, he would confesse hym self worthie not onely of imprisonmente, but also of moste vyle and shamefull death. With these petitions he dailey plied the Duke, but all in vaine ; for the Duke thought he had made so good proofe, that he was throughlie confirmed in his opinion against his man.

But the Ladie Julina, wonderyng what made Silvio that he was so slacke in his visitation, and why he absented hym self so long from her presence, beganne to thinke that all was not well ; but in the ende, perceivynge no decoction of her former surfette, received as you have heard, and findyng in her self an unwonted swellyng in her beallie, assuryng her self to bee with child, fearyng to become quite bankroute of her honour, did thinke it more then tyme to seeke out a fathur, and made suche secret searche and diligent enquirie, that she learned the truthe how Silvio was kepte in prison by the Duke his maister ; and mindyng to finde a present remedie, as well for the love she bare to Silvio, as for the maintenaunce of her credite and estimation, she speedily hasted to the pallace of the Duke, to whom she saied as followeth.

Sir Duke, it maie bee that you will thinke my commyng to your house in this sorte doeth somethyng passe the limites of modestie, the whiche I protest, before God, proceadeth of this desire, that the worlde should knowe how justly I seke meanes to maintaine my honour. But to the ende I seeme not tedious with prolixitie of woordes, nor to use other then direct circumstances, knowe, sir, that the love I beare to my onely beloved Silvio, whom I doe esteeme more then all the jewelles in the worlde, whose personage I regard more then my owne life, is the onely cause of my attempted journey, beseechyng you, that all the whole displeasure, whiche I understand you have conceived against hym, maie be imputed unto my charge, and that it would please you lovingly to deale with him, whom of

myself I have chosen, rather for the satisfaction of mine honest likyng, than for the vaine preheminences or honourable dignities looked after by ambitious myndes.

The Duke, having heard this discourse, caused Silvio presently to be sent for, and to be brought before hym, to whom he saied: Had it not been sufficient for thee, when I had reposed myself in thy fidelitie and the trustinessse of thy service, that thou shouldest so traiterously deale with me, but since that tyme hast not spared still to abuse me with so many forgeries and perjured protestations, not onely hatefull unto me, whose simplicitie thou thinkest to bee suche, that by the plotte of thy pleasaunt tongue thou wouldest make me beleeve a manifest untrothe; but moste habominable bee thy doynges in the presence and sight of God, that hast not spared to blaspheme his holy name by callyng hym to bee a witnesse to maintaine thy leasynges, and so detestably wouldest forswear thyself in a matter that is so openly knowne.

Poore Silvio, whose innocencie was suche that he might lawfully sweare, seing Julina to be there in place, aunswered thus.

Moste noble Duke, well understandyng your conceived greefe, moste humbly I beseeche you paciently to heare my excuse, not mindyng therby to aggravate or heape up youre wrathe and displeasure, protestyng, before God, that there is nothyng in the worlde whiche I regarde so muche, or dooe esteeme so deare, as your good grace and favour; but desirous that your grace should know my innocencie, and to cleare my self of suche impositions, wherewith I knowe I am wrongfully accused, whiche, as I understande, should be in the practisyng of the Ladie Julina, who standeth here in place, whose acquitaunce for my better discharge now I moste humbly crave, protestyng, before the Almightye God, that neither in thought, worde, nor deede, I have not otherwise used my self then accordyng to the bonde and duetie of a servante, that is bothe willyng and desirous to further his maister's sutes; which if I

have otherwise saied then that is true, you, Madame Julina, who can verie well deside the depthes of all this doubte, I moste humbly beseche you to certifie a trothe, if I have in any thyng missaied, or have other wise spoken then is right and just.

Julina, havyng heard this discourse whiche Silvio had made, perceivynge that he stoode in greate awe of the Duke's displeasure, aunswere thus: Thinke not, my Silvio, that my commyng hither is to accuse you of any misdemeanour towardes your maister, so I dooe not deniae but in all suche imbassages wherein towardes me you have been employed, you have used the office of a faithfull and trustie messenger, neither am I ashamed to confesse, that the first daie that mine eyes did beholde the singular behaviour, the notable curtesie, and other innumerable giftes wherewith my Silvio is endued, but that beyonde all measure my harte was so inflamed, that impossible it was for me to quenche the fervente love, or extinguishe the least parte of my conceived torment, before I had bewraied the same unto hym, and of my owne motion craved his promised faithe and loialtie of marriage; and now is the tyme to manifest the same unto the worldle whiche hath been doen before God and betwene ourselves, knowyng that it is not needefull to keepe secret that whiche is neither evill doen nor hurtfull to any persone. Therefore (as I saied before) Silvio is my housbande by plited faithe, whom I hope to obtaine without offence or displeasure of any one, trustyng that there is no manne that will so farre forget hymself as to restraine that whiche God hath left at libertie for every wight, or that will seeke by crueltie to force ladies to marrie, otherwise then accordyng to their owne likyng. Feare not then, my Silvio, to keepe your faith and promise whiche you have made unto me; and as for the reste, I doubt not thynges will so fall out as you shall have no maner of cause to complaine.

Silvio, amased to heare these woordes, for that Julina by her speeche seemed to confirme that whiche he moste of all

desired to bee quite of, saied: Who would have thought that a ladie of so greate honour and reputation would her self bee the embassadour of a thyng so prejudicall and uncomely for her estate! What plighted promises be these whiche bee spoken of? altogether ignoraunt unto me, whiche if it bee otherwise then I have saied, you sacred goddes consume me straight with flashyng flames of fire. But what woordes might I use to give credite to the truthe and innocencie of my cause? Ah, Madame Julina! I desire no other testimonie then your owne, I desire no other testimonie then your owne honestie and vertue, thinkyng that you will not so muche blemishe the brightnesse of your honour, knowyng that a woman is, or should be, the image of curtesie, continencie, and shamfastnesse, from the whiche so sone as she stoopeth, and leaveth the office of her duetie and modestie, besides the degraduation of her honour, she thrusteth her self into the pitte of perpetuall infamie. And as I can not thinke you would so farre forgette yourself by the refusall of a noble Duke, to dimme the light of your renowne and glorie, whiche hetherto you have maintained emongest the beste and noblest ladies, by suche a one as I knowe my self to bee, too farre unworthie your degree and callyng, so moste humbly I beseche you to confesse a trothe, whereto tendeth those vowes and promises you speake of, whiche speeches bee so obscure unto mee, as I knowe not for my life how I might understande them.

Julina, somethyng nipped with these speeches, saied: And what is the matter, that now you make so little accompte of your Julina? that, beeyng my housband in deede, have the face to deniae me, to whom thou art contracted by so many solemne othes? What! arte thou ashamed to have me to thy wife? How muche oughtest thou rather to be ashamed to breake thy promised faithe, and to have despised the holie and dreadfull name of God? but that tyme constraineth me to laye open that whiche shame rather willeth I should dissemble and keepe secret, behold me then here, Silvio, whom thou haste

gotten with childe ; who, if thou bee of suche honestie, as I trust for all this I shall finde, then the thyng is doen without prejudice, or any hurte to my conscience, consideryng that by the professed faithe thou diddest accoumpte me for thy wife, and I received thee for my spouse and loyall housbande, swaeyng by the Almighty God that no other then you have made the conquest and triumphe of my chastitie, whereof I crave no other witnesse then yourself and mine owne conscience.

I priae you, gentilwoment, was not this a foule oversight of Julina, that would so precisely sweare so greate an othe that she was gotten with childe by one that was altogether unfurishte with implementes for suche a tourne ? For God's love, take heede, and let this bee an example to you, when you be with childe, how you sweare who is the father before you have had good prooфе and knowledge of the partie ; for men be so subtil and full of sleight, that, God knoweth, a woman may quickly be deceived.

But now to retурне to our Silvio, who, hearyng an othe sworne so devinely that he had gotten a woman with childe, was like to beleeve that it had bin true in very deede ; but, remembryng his owne impediment, thought it impossible that he should committe suche an acte, and therefore, half in a chafe, he saied. What lawe is able to restraine the foolish discretion of a woman that yeeldeth herself to her owne desires ? what shame is able to bridle or withdrawe her from her mynd and madnesse, or with what snaffell is it possible to holde her backe from the execution of her filthinesse ? but what abomination is this, that a ladie of suche a house should so forget the greatnessse of her estate, the aliaunce whereof she is descended, the nobilitie of her deceased housbande, and maketh no conscience to shame and slander her self with suche a one as I am, beyng so farre unfit and unseemely for her degree ! but how horrible is it to heare the name of God so defaced, that wee make no more accompt but for the maintenaunce of our mischifes, we feare no whit at all to forsweare his holy

name, as though he were not in all his dealinges mooste righteous, true, and juste, and will not onely laie open our leasinges to the worlde, but will likewise punishe the same with moste sharp and bitter scourges.

Julina, not able to indure hym to proceede any farther in his sermon, was alreadie surprised with a vehement greefe, began bitterly to crie out, utteryng these speeches followyng.

Alas ! is it possible that the soveraigne justice of God can abide a mischiefe so greate and cursed ? why maie I not now suffer death, rather than the infamie whiche I see to wander before myne eyes ? Oh, happie, and more then right happie, had I bin, if inconstant fortune had not devised this treason, where in I am surprised and caught ! Am I thus become to be intangled with snares, and in the handes of hym, who, injoiyng the spoyles of my honour, will openly deprive me of my fame, by makynge me a common fable to al posteritie in tyme to come ? Ah, traitour, and discourtious wretche ! is this the recompence of the honest and firme amitie which I have borne thee ? wherein have I deserved this discourtesie ? by loving thee more then thou art able to deserve ? Is it I, arrant theefe ! is it I, uppon whom thou thinkest to worke thy mischives ? doest thou think me no better worth, but that thou maiest prodigally waste my honour at thy pleasure ? didest thou dare to adventure uppon me, having thy conscience wounded with so deadly a treason ? Ah, unhappy, and, above all other, most unhappy ! that have so charely preserved myne honour, and now am made a pracie to satisfie a yong man's lust, that hath coveted nothyng but the spoyle of my chastitie and good name.

Here withall her teares so gushed doun her cheekes, that she was not able to open her mouth to use any farther speeche.

The Duke, who stood by all this while and heard this whole discourse, was wonderfully moved with compassion towardes Julina, knowyng that from her infancie she had ever so honourably used herself, that there was no man able to detect

her of any misdemeanour, otherwise then besoemed a ladie of her estate: wherefore, beyng fully resolved that Silvio, his man, had committed this villanie against her, in a greate furie, drawyng his rapier, he saied unto Silvio:

How canst thou, arrant theefe ! shewe thy self so cruell and carelesse to suche as doe thee honour ? Hast thou so little regard of suche a noble ladie, as humbleth herself to suche a vilaine as thou art, who, without any respecte either of her renowne or noble estate, canst be content to seeke the wracke and utter ruine of her honour ? But frame thyself to make such satisfaction as she requireth, although I knowe, unworthie wretche, that thou art not able to make her the least parte of amendes, or I sweare by God that thou shalt not escape the death which I will minister to thee with my owne handes, and therefore advise thee well what thou doest.

Silvio, havyng heard this sharpe sentence, fell doun on his knees before the Duke, cravynge for mercie, desirynge that he might be suffered to speake with the Ladie Julina aparte, promising to satisfie her accordyng to her owne contentation.

Well, (q. the Duke) I take thy worde; and therewithall I advise thee that thou performe thy promis, or otherwise I protest, before God, I will make thee suche an example to the worlde, that all traitours shall tremble for feare how they doe seeke the dishonouryng of ladies.

But now Julina had conceived so greate greefe againste Silvio, that there was muche a dooe to perswade her to talke with hym ; but remembryng her owne case, desirous to heare what excuse he could make, in the ende she agreed, and beyng brought into a place severally by themselves, Silvio beganne with a piteous voice to saie as followeth.

I knowe not, madame, of whom I might make complaint, whether of you or of my self, or rather of Fortune, whiche hath conducted and brought us both into so greate adversitie. I see that you receive greate wrong, and I am condemned againste all right ; you in perill to abide the brute of spightfull

tongues, and I in daunger to loose the thing that I moste desire ; and although I could alledge many reasons to prove my saiynge true, yet I referre my self to the experience and bountie of your minde. And here with all loosing his garmentes doun to his stomacke, and shewed Julina his breastes and pretie teates, surmountyng farre the whitenesse of snowe itself, saiying : Loe, Madame ! behold here the partie whom you have chalenged to bee the father of your childe. See, I am a woman, the daughter of a noble Duke, who, onely for the love of him whom you so lightly have shaken off, have forsaken my father, abandoned my countreie, and, in maner as you see, am become a servyng-man, satisfiying myself but with the onely sight of my Apolonius. And now, Madame, if my passion were not vehement, and my tormentes without comparison, I would wish that my fained greefes might be laughed to scorne, and my desembled paines to be rewarded with floutes : but my love beyng pure, my travaile continuall, and my greefes endlesse, I trust, madame, you will not onely excuse me of crime, but also pitie my distresse, the which, I protest, I would still have kept secrete, if my fortune would so have permitted.

Julina did now thinke her self to be in a worse case then ever she was before, for now she knewe not whom to chalenge to be the father of her child ; wherfore, when she had told the Duke the very certaintie of the discourse which Silvio had made unto her, she departed to her owne house, with suche greefe and sorrowe, that she purposed never to come out of her owne doores againe alive, to be a wonder and mocking stocke to the worlde.

But the Duke, more amased to heare this straunge discourse of Silvio, came unto him, whom when he had vewed with better consideration, perceived indeede that it was Silla, the daughter of Duke Pontus, and imbracing her in his armes, he saied.

Oh, the braunche of all vertue, and the flowre of curtesie it self ! pardon me, I beseche you, of all suche discourtesies as I

have ignorantlie committed towardes you, desiring you that without farther memorie of auncient greefes, you will accept of me, who is more joyfull and better contented with your presence, then if the whole worlde were at my commaundement. Where hath there ever been founde suche liberalitie in a lover, whiche havyng been trained up and nourished emongest the delicacies and banquettes of the courte, accompanied with traines of many faire and noble ladies, living in pleasure and in the middest of delights, would so prodigallie adventure your self, neither fearing mishapps, nor misliking to take suche paines as I knowe you have not been accustomed unto ? O, liberalitie never heard of before ! O, facte that can never bee sufficiently rewarded ! O, true love moste pure and unfained ! Here with all sendyng for the moste artificiall woorkmen, he provided for her sondrie sutes of sumpteous apparell, and the marriage daie appointed, whiche was celebrated with greate triumphe through the whole citie of Constantinople, every one prasing the noblenesse of the Duke ; but so many as did behold the excellent beautie of Silla gave her the praise above all the rest of the ladies in the troupe.

The matter seemed so wonderfull and straunge, that the brute was spreade throughout all the partes of Grecia, in so muche that it came to the hearyng of Silvio ; who, as you have heard, remained in those partes to enquire of his sister : he beyng the gladdest manne in the worlde, hasted to Constantinople, where, comming to his sister, he was joyfullie receved, and moste lovynglie welcomed, and entertained of the Duke his brother in lawe. After he had remained there twoo or three daies, the Duke revealed unto Silvio the whole discourse how it happened betweene his sister and the Ladie Julina, and how his sister was chalenged for gettyng a woman with childe: Silvio, blushyng with these woordes, was striken with greate remorse to make Julina amedes, understanding her to bee a noble ladie, and was lefte defamed to the worlde through his default : he therefore bewraied the whole circumstaunce to the

Duke, whereof the Duke beyng verie joyfull, immediateli repaired with Silvio to the house of Julina, whom thei founde in her chamber in greate lamentation and mournyng. To whom the Duke saied : Take courage, madam, for beholde here a gentilman that will not sticke bothe to father your child and to take you for his wife ; no inferiour persone, but the sonne and heire of a noble Duke, worthie of your estate and dignitie.

Julina, seyng Silvio in place, did know very well that he was the father of her childe, and was so ravished with joye, that she knewe not whether she were awake, or in some dreame. Silvio, imbracyng her in his armes, cravyng forgivenesse of all that was past, concluded with her the marriage daie, which was presently accomplished with greate joye and contention to all parties. And thus, Silvio havyng attained a noble wife, and Silla, his sister, her desired housband, thei passed the residue of their daies with suche delight as those that have accomplished the perfection of their felicities.

## OF NICANDER AND LUCILLA.

## THE ARGUMENT OF THE THIRD HISTORIE.

*Lucilla, a yong maiden endued with singular beautie, for want of a convenient dowrie, was restrained from mariyng her beloved Nicander: in the ende, through the greate magnificence of the courteous yong Prince, Don Hercules, the onely sonne and heire of Alfonso, Duke of Farrara, she was relieved with the somme of 2000 crounes; the which money beyng received by the father of Nicander, the mariage was performed, to the greate contention of the noble yong Prince, but especially to the twoo lovers, Nicander and Lucilla.*

In the tyme that Alfonso, firste of that name and third duke of Ferrara, governed that state, there was in the citie of Ferrara a gentle yonge gentlewoman, named Lucilla, borne of a noble familie, but by the frowardnesse of blinde fortune reduced to greater povertie then her vertues did deserve; whose beautie appeared to be such, in the prime and flower of her yeres, as it filled with marvaile all those that caste their eyes upon her. Of this gentlewoman was fervently enamoured a gallant yong gentleman, whose name was Nicander, and in like sorte borne of noble blood, and desired nothyng more then to be joyned with her in matrimonie; but she beyng, as it is saied, poore, though of noble parentage, and endued with singular vertues, the father of the yong gentleman disdained her: who (as for the moste parte we see old men naturally inclined to covetise) regardyng rather the wealth that their daughters in lawe are to bryng into their

families, then either birthe, vertue, or giftes of the minde, could in no wise be perswaded or intreated to content his sonne in that behalf, and to suffer hym to enjoye his love, by takyng her to wife ; alledgyng, that the first thing that was to bee considered in mariage was the dowrie and the woman ; for that the vertues of the women doe not enriche the houses wherein thei came (said he), but the qualitie of gooddes and wealthe that thei brought with them.

The coveteous disposition of the father of Nicander was cause that these twoo yong folke languished in miserable love ; for although their flames were of equall force and heate, yet the yong gentlewoman, beyng of a verie honest minde, nor the yong gentleman, never thinking upon any other meanes then honestly to enjoye his desire, without touche or breache of her honor, and the obstinate wilfulness of the old man beyng cast, as a barre or blocke, betweene the unitie and concorde of their twoo mindes, thei lived in greate torment, eche consumyng, as it were meltyng awaie with desire, for love of eche other. Whilst their mutuall love continued in this sorte, eche daie with lesse hope then other through the obstinacie of th'old carle, it happened that Don Hercules, the Duke's onely sonne and heire, beyng then in the freshest tyme of his youth, passing by the streate where this gentlewoman dwelt, sawe her standyng in her doore, apparailed in white ; whiche kinde of attire encreased greatlie her naturall beautie, and consideryng somewhat curiously the comelinesse and excellencie of her personage, together with her perfection of beautie, he received with suche force into his imagination the firste impression of theim bothe, that from thence forward her lively image semed continually to be before his eyes : by the consideration whereof he grewe by degrees to conceive so veherent a desire to enjoye the singularitie which he sawe in her, that he thought it impossible for hym to live if he did not attaine it.

And ofte tymes discoursyng to hym self thereof, he would saie, What injurie hath fortune doen unto this faire gentlewoman, that as nature hath been liberaull in bestowyng of beautie upon her, meete for any greate princes, she hath not likewise caused her to bee borne of some kyng or mightie prince? which if she were, I would never cease till I had founde the meanes to gett her to bee my wife, and so enjoye her as myne owne, with the safetie of her honour, and with the satisfaction and contentment of my father.

But in the ende, although he sawe her degree to be farre unequall to his, to wishe, or to procure any suche matche, yet ceased he not by all the meanes he could to win her good will, and now by one devise, and now by another, to induce her to love hym, and to yeelde to his fervent desire. But all in vain: for where many others would have taken it for a great good fortune, that such a prince should have fallen in love with theim, Lucilla, consideryng the basenesse of her degree in respecte of the high estate of her newe lover, reputed it to bee a greate mishappe unto her, as she that considered that she could not nourishe or entertaine any suche love, but with the harme and prejudice of yer honour. Besides that, she feared least that Nicander should once perceive that this yong prince hunted after that haunte, he would forsake her, for feare of farther displeasure: wherefore to avoide both inconveniences, whereas till then she was wont to shewe herself sometyme at the dore, sometyme at the windowes, she now retired herself in suche sort that she could never be seen but on the Sondaies and holie daies, as she went to a little churche nere adjoining to the house. Wherefore Nicander not a little mervailyng, and greatly troubled in spirite, fearyng that Lucilla (waveryng as women use to doe) had forsaken hym, and turned her affection elswhere, as one full of gelousie and greef, for fault of better conforte he would watche his tymes, and followe her to that churche, there to feede his fancie with a

looke or twoo, whiche yet amid his miserie he semed to esteeme  
as a releef, without the whiche he could not live. Finally,  
not beyng able to endure those tormentes that this absence  
and straungenesse of his ladie caused hym to feele, he sent  
unto her a convenient messenger with a letter, conteinyng  
this effecte :—

The birde whiche long hath lived in pleasant feeld,  
Esteemes no whit his cage of wreathed golde :  
The dulced note, wharewith he pearst the skie,  
For greef of mynde he can not then unfolde.  
Yet lives he still, but better were to die ;  
More worse then death, even suche a life have I.

The turtle true, of his deceased mate  
Bewailes the want, he reakes no more of blisse :  
The swellyng swanne doeth hardly brooke the place,  
When he his beste beloved bride doeth misse.  
Suche is my joye : Nicander needes must die,  
Lucilla doeth his wonted presence flie.

How can I live, that double death possesse ?  
How should I joye, that drenched am in thrall ?  
What foode maie feede, or beare a pleasaunt taste,  
Where as the harte lies bathed still in gall ?  
If this be life, then life bee farre from me,  
And welcome death, to set Nicander free !

What cause, my deare, hath thy Nicander wrought,  
That makes thee shunne in whom thou shouldst delight ?  
What moves thy mynde to mewe thee up so close,  
And keepe thee from thy beste-beloved sight ?  
If I offended have, then charge me when and how :  
Nicander shall hym cleare, or to thy mercie bow.

If no offence, but fonde conceipt hath taken holde,  
 Condempane hym not that shewes his giltlesse hande ;  
 Who hether to hath never ment the thyng,  
 That justly might against your honour stande :  
 If giltie I, I aske no other grace,  
 Give dome of death, and doe my sute deface.

I saie no more, but as I doe deserve,  
 So shewe the fruite of my deserved hire ;  
 Seeme not so straunge unto thy faithfull frende,  
 Whose absence setts my scorchyng harte on fire :  
 But as my love to thee no tongue can tell,  
 Esteeme the like of me, and so farewell.

Thyne owne NICANDER.

The yong gentlewoman, who had fixed all her thoughts and setteld all the contentmentes of her harte onely upon Nicander, neither desiryng anythyng in the worlde so muche as to please and content hym, felte an intollerable perplexitie of minde, in that she sawe hym greeve thus at her late straungenesse ; and yet thought it better that he should complaine, then come by any knowledge of the love that Don Hercules did beare her : wherefore, hidyng from hym the matter, replied in this sorte.

The birde whiche is restrainde  
 Of former hartes delighte,  
 I must confess, twixt life and death,  
 Doeth alwaie combate fight.

So doeth the harte, compelled  
 By heste of parentes will,  
 Obaye for feare ; yet forst by love,  
 Continues constant still.

No absence by consent,  
 My deare Nicander, I  
 Have wrought to worke thy wo, from thee,  
 Like Cressed false, to flie.

Ne shall I live to lothe  
 What maie content thy minde :  
 Hap life or death, as true as steele  
 Thou shalt Lucilla finde.

Thy eares shall never heare,  
 Nor eyes shall never see,  
 That any wight shall reape the fruite  
 Whiche planted was for thee.

Then frame thyself, my deare,  
 To take, against thy will,  
 Our absence in good part, till tyme  
 Maie better happe fulfill.

And there withall receive  
 This pledge to cure thy paine :  
 My harte is thyne, preserve it well,  
 Till we twoo meete againe.

Ever thyne, LUCILLA.

This sweete aunswere mitigated not a little the moode of the yong gentleman, and so he framed himself the best he could to tollerate the absence of his Lucilla. On the other side, Don Hercules, who in like maner founde hymself deprived of the sight of that yong ladie, whom he loved extremely, was very muche discontented, and perceivynge that neither messages, nor faire offers, with large giftes sent unto her, whereof never any were accepted, could once move her to shewe herself courteous unto hym of so muche as a looke, and consideryng the povertie

wherein her mouther lived now in her latter yeres, beganne to imagine that it would be muche easier for him, by offeryng her liberally where withall to marrie her daughter, to perswade her to yeeld her into his handes, then to winne the yong gentlewoman to his desires.

Wherefore, havyng sent a fitt persone to Lucilla's mother, to let her understande, that if she would be content that the yong Prince might enjoye her daughter, he would give her such a dowrie, in recompence of his pleasure, that no gentleman of what degree soever should for her povertie refuse to take her to wife: whereas, if she refused that good offer, she should therby be constrained, through necessitie, either to bestowe her upon some artificer, or craftes man; or, if she would needes marrie her to a gentleman, she must give her to some such as was so poore, as that she should live all the daies of her life in want and miserie: the whiche in effect would be nothyng els but to bee cruell towards her owne daughter, in barring that good hap whiche he did offer, besides the favour that he should be able to shewe, in furtheryng her mariage, to bothe their endlesse comfortes. The mother, beyng often sollicited, and summoned to this effecte, and on the one side punished with povertie, and on the other charged with yeres, bothe whiche pressed her verie muche, after divers discourses made to and fro with her self, lastly she saied: And where to ought I to have regarde, but to the wealth and profite of my daughter, whiche bothe she shall reape aboundingantly, if, by the givynge herself unto this yong Prince, he doeth bestowe upon her that dowrie whiche he hath promised; and although, in doyng thereof, there be some touch and spotte to my daughter's honour and myne, yet shall it bee so recom-pensed with the benefite of her dowrie, that the profite will be greater then the harme. And if therein be any offence, the blame thereof is not to be imputed unto me, but unto my evill fortune, that hath brought me into this miserable neces-sitie. Besides, that my daughter beyng now alreadie eightene

yeres of age, and of moste singular beautie, and myself alreadie so olde, that from daie to daie I maie looke to goe to my grave, I might happen to dye, and leave her without any governement or oversight, and she, stirred with those appetites where to yonge folkes are enclined, through the frailtie of her sexe, and the povertie wherein I shall leave her, be brought to yeelde her self into the handes of some suche one as would not have due regard unto her callyng, but bring her unto the spoile.

And after these and suche like discourses, sondrie times had with herself, finally she sent hym worde, that if it would please hym, she would gladly speake with hym herself: whiche he havyng understoode, caused her to be brought one evenyng into a place where thei tweo alone might talke, and there, havyng given her oportunitie to saie what she would, thus she began.

Sir, the weapons wherewith necessitie and my povertie hath assaulted me, have been so sharpe and so pearcyng, that, although I have endevoured, all the waies I could devise, to resist and defende myself from them, yet in thende I have been forced to yeeld, as vanquished and overcome, and constrained to do that with my daughter, as to thinke of it onely I am so abashed, that I dare not for shame lifte up myne eyes to beholde you. But forasmuche as no other thyng hath perswaded me thereunto, but the desire whiche I have to get her a dowrie wherewith I maie afterward bestowe her honestly, I beseche you to be content to extende your liberalitie in suche sort, as she maie have that large dowrie which it hath pleased you to promise me.

Thereof I assure you, (saied the Prince) and larger too then hath been spoken of to you, besides: and, also, I will minister suche releefe unto you for your owne state, that you shall have cause to give me thankes for the same.

Then replied the olde gentlewoman, and saied: Since that you perceive, sir, that no desire to make marchaundize of my daughter, but extreame povertie, whereunto my froward fer-

tune hath brought me, doeth drive me to this exigent, I doe likewise besech you, that you will come unto my daughter at suche tyme as I shall devise moste convenient, with as muche regard unto her credite as maie be possible. I will therein be ruled wholie by you, answered the yong Prince; and looke in what sorte you will appoint me to come, so shall it be.

The first thyng, then, sir, (q. she) that I thinke requisite, • is that you come alone, without any companie, when I shall assigne you the tyme, so that the thyng rest secret betweene you and me and my daughter, and no occasion be given to publishe it, whereby my daughter might leese her good name.

This courteous yong Prince was there withall well content, and that beyng concluded and agreed upon, she saied further: I knowe, sir, the honestie of my daughter to bee suche, that if I should open my lippes unto her of any suche matter, she would not onely rejecte any perswasion that I might use unto her, but also ridde her self out of my house. And, therefore, leaste that should happen, and to the ende that you maie have your desire, and she have a dowrie, wherewith she maie be maried, if not with all the honour that the state and callyng wherein she was borne doeth require, yet with the leaste harme that maie be possible, since my hard happe is suche, and that my povertie doeth so constraine me, I have determined to doe herein as you shall heare. My daughter useth to lye in a lowe chamber, neare unto the streate doore of my house, in the whiche chamber I my self in like sorte am wont to lye, whensoever we two remaine alone in the house, as often tymes we doe; and commonly I, rising early in the mornyng about such businesse as I have, doe leave my daughter in bed, where she slepeth some tymes two howres or three after that I am gone. To morowe mornyng, therefore, will I rise and leave her alone in that chamber, and will set open the streate doore, so as you shall not neede but to pushe at it, and the chamber dore likewise.. You shall come very early, as we have concluded, all alone, and entryng into the chamber, there shall you finde my

daughter, and abide with her as long as it shall please yourself. But I doe once againe, sir, beseche you, as I have doen before, that the matter maie passe secrete, and not to bee imparted to any other then to us three, to the ende, that where I suffer myself to be led through necessitie to doe that whiche I doe, and with an entent to place my daughter in mariage, by the meane of that dowrie whiche you doe give her, the case beyng knowne, we reape not eternall shame and infamie.

At this devise, the yong Prince paused a while, thinking it straunge that he should goe to a yong maide, that not onely was unwillyng, but also not so muche as made privie of his commyng, did what he could to refuse that meane, and to perswade the mother to devise some better. But at the last, seyng none other could be founde more fitte for the purpose, beyng pricked forwarde with the vehemensie of that appetite whiche love had stirred up in him, consideryng himself to be a Prince, and a gallant yong gentilman, and that he should be alone with his love, thought that it should not be harde for hym to wynne her to his will; and so [was] content to doe as the olde gentilwoman had devised. And beyng parted eache from other, he began to attende the commyng of the nexte mornynge, and all that night, which seemed longer unto him then a hole yeare, he laie with his thoughtes and imaginacions in the armes of his Lucilla. As soon as the daie began to peepe, Don Hercules, all alone, as he had promised to the mother, went to the house of his ladie, and findyng the doores open, accordyng to promise, entered into the chamber wherein Lucilla laie, and havyng barred the doore, approched neere the bedde wherein she laie.

It was in the moneth of Julie, which season in that countrie is extreme hottie, by reason whereof Lucilla, tounblyng from one side of the bedde unto the other, had rolled of all the clothes wherewith she had been covered, so as she had lefte herself all naked; and in that sorte he found her, with coralles about her necke and her armes, whiche with the difference of

their ruddie couler did sette out and beautifie greatly the excellent fairenesse of her white bodie. She laie a slepe upon her backe, with her handes cast over her hedde (as for the moste parte yong women are wont to doo) so that forthwith the yong Prince discovered her from toppe to toe: and consideryng with a greedie eye all her whole bodie, not onely he commended her to hymself so naked, as he had dooen whilst she was apparailed, but also did so singularlie well like her in that state, that he thought he saw rather some divine thing, or some goddesse come doun from heaven, to heape hym with happinesse, then a mortall creature; and beganne to allowe and commende his owne judgemente, in that he had placed his love upon so excellente and rare a peece. And therewith bowyng doun hymself to give her a kisse, and so to awaken her, beholde she opened her eyes, whiche right well resembled twoo faire shinyng starres: and where she was used to see none other other bodie in that chamber but her mother when she waked, now seyng this young Prince standyng thus over her, and findyng herself in that sorte all naked, she gave a greate skritche, and saied—

“ Out, alas! sir, (for she knewe hym straight waie), what evill happe hath brought you hither at this tyme?” and in so sayng, as one wonderfullie ashamed to bee seene in that plignt, she wrapped about her one of the sheetes, and began with a loude voice to call her mother.

But perceiving that her mother would not heare, and that she called in vaine, she began to imagine that she was sentyng unto his commyng thither, and lamentyng with teares that trickled doun her cheekes, like droppes of dewe hanging uppon roses in a Maie morning, she said, “ Alas! now I see my mother also hath betrayed me.” Whiche thyng the young Prince understandyng, saied unto her: “ Trouble not yourself, nor greeve not (fair damsell) at my commyng hether, but rather rejoice that your singuler beautie hath so enflamed me, as one in a maner forgettingyng my estate have beene con-

tented to come hether all alone, as a private manne, to enjoye your companie, if it will please you to accepte my good will ; whiche though a thousande other dames of this citie doo wishe, and would bee glad of, yet have I deemed none of them worthie thereof but yourself. And seeyng your mother, who hath that power over you, that in reason she ought to have over her childe, and knoweth beste what is for your good and commoditie, doeth consent hereunto, you (in my judgement) are not but to shewe yourself in like sorte content ; for in givynge yourself to me, you doe not abase or caste yourself away upon any vilde persone, but shewe yourself courteous unto a Prince, whom your beautie hath made thrall, and in whom you shall finde nothyng but gratefull courtesie, to your benefite and satisfaction."

And with these, and other like wordes, stretched forthe his hande towarde her breastes, that were like two little balles of ivorie, and drawing nere here to kisse her, she, with her hande thrustyng hym modestly back, saied thus—" Sir, I beseche you, by the princely nobilitie that is in you, and by that love which you say you beare me, that it wil please you not to force me, or to seeke at my hands anything against my will ; and that since my mother, who ought to have beene the cheef defender of mine honestie, hath abandoned and forsaken me, you will yet of your courtesie vouchsafe to give me the hearyng of a fewe wordes, whiche the speciaill care I have of mine honour doeth force me to expresse."

The courteous yong Prince, at this request, staid hymself proeadyng any further ; and not beeyng desirous to have her, but with her owne good will, stooede still to heare what it was that Lucilla would saie unto hym, yet ever hoping with faire meanes to winne her at the laste, and she wepyng verie tenderly, beganne to say unto him in this sorte.

" I am verie sorie, moste noble Prince (q. she), that fortune hath been so muche myne enemie, that she hath made me a woman farre unworthie and unmeetee for you ; for that you,

beyng so great a Prince as you are, and I so meane a gentlewoman, I see so greate a space and distaunce between your high estate and my lowe degree, that betweene us there can be no portion, or convenient equalitie. For the whiche cause (sir) I, consideryng myne owne estate, and not mindyng to exceade my callyng, have a good while since chosen Nicander to be my lover, who in respect of his bloud, though he bee richer then I, is no whitte nor more noblie borne then myself am. By reason of whiche conformitie of bloud and birthe, our love is likewise growne to be equall, and equall the desire in us bothe, he to have me to his wife, and I to have hym for my housbande: but the coveteousnesse (let it be lawfull for me to saie so) of his father is suche, that although he knoweth me to be a gentilwoman borne, yet because I am not of that wealth, as to bryng him so greate a dowrie as his riches perchaunce require, he despiseth me, and will not yeeld by any perswasion his good will and consent, that wee maie matche together accordyng to our desire. Neverthelesse (sir) I, consideryng how fervently this yong gentleman loveth me, and that alreadie we are in mynd united and knitte together, with consent, faith and love, doe yet believe, assuredly, that God, of his speciale goodnessse and favour, will graunt us his assured grace, that we maie one daie bee joyned together in the holie state of matrimonie. Which thyng, if it should happen and come to passe, I not havyng any thyng els to bryng with me for my dowrie but my virginitie, am determined and fully resolved (by God's help) to give it unto hym, as pure and unspotted as I brought it from my mother's wombe: and if my unhappy chaunce and fortune be such, as that I can not have Nicander to my housbande, I have concluded with myself (by the grace of God) never to couple my self to any man living, but to give and vowe me wholie unto Almighty God, and in his service to spende my daies a virgine, in continual fastyng and praier. Therefore (moste excellent Prince) if honestie, if justice, if religion, have that power and force in

your noble mynde, whiche in reason they ought to have, I doe beseche you, and for that love's sake that you saie you beare me, that you will preserve and kepe unstained my honestie, and that it would please you, with the sounde discourse of reason, to temper that fervent appetite whiche hath brought you hether, to the prejudice and breache of my honestie and credit. In doyng whereof you shall shewe yourself to be, in deede, that noble Prince, that the highnesse of your birthe and bloud doeth promise you should be ; whereas, if you should force and violate me, a virgine and a weake maid without defence, there could thereof ensue nought else to me but dishonor and reproche, and withall small praise would it be unto your excellencie, when it shall be said that you had overcome a simple damsel." And here, being interrupted with sobbes and teares, excedyng for the greefe of her minde, casting doune her eyes for shame and sorowe, she helde her peace, attending what her hap, and the goodnesse of the Prince, should dispose of her, in whose courtesie she had reposed all her hope and confidence.

This yong Prince, understanding the honest desire of Lucilla, first praised her greatly to hymself for the chastnes of her minde, and beyng moved with the magnanimitie of his noble minde, though he were pricked with the sharpest darte of the blind boyes quiver, and that his ardent appetite did still stirre hym to the accomplishment of his desire, yet conquering himself with reason, he turned all the love whiche erst he bare unto this young ladie into compassion of her estate, and thus he saied unto her. " The vertue and honestie of thy mynde, faire damsell, doe require that I should make no lesse accompt of thine honour, then if I were come hether to no other entent then to defende it against any other that should goe aboute to staine or spot it : therefore, not onely thou needest not to feare any violence at my handes, but also maiest hope that I will not faile to further this thy chast purpose, so that thou maiest enjoy that yong gentleman

whiche thou hast chosen for thy housband, with all the honour and satisfaction that appertaineth to the honestie of thy minde ; and, therefore, since nothyng els doeth let thee from the gettyng of him but the povertie of thy state, whereunto thy frowarde fortune hath unworthily brought thee, I will myself supplie in that behalfe that wherein she hath failed, and cor- recte with my liberalitie the injurie that she hath doen thee." And havyng so said, he hymself opened the doore and called her mother, who had gotten herself into a chamber, and there sate bewailingy the miserie of her state, whereby she had been driven in suche sorte to prepare a dowrie for her daughter.

She beyng come, he saied unto her : " Gentlewoman, if erst I came hether as a lover unto your daughter, now I will de- parte and leave her as if I were her brother, leavyng her honour no lesse safe and untouched then I founde it, for so deserveth her vertue that I should deale with her. And for-asmuch as I perceive she is in love with a yong gentleman whom I well knowe, and is in my opinion very worthie of it, and that he in like sorte is in love with her, and that onely the want of a reasonable dowrie is the cause, that she can not become his wife as she desireth, I am content to bestowe upon her, for her contentment, that summe for her dowrie whiche I had purposed to have given her in recompence of my contention, to the ende that this her honest desire maie have that effecte, whiche is moste convenient to so greate and well grounded an affection, and that her greate honestie and vertue doe deserve. Therefore sende you this daie unto my treasorer, and he shall forthwith disburse unto you 2000 pounde, which shalbe the dowrie of this your gentle and honest daughter."

And turnyng hym self towarde the yong gentlewoman, he said unto her : " And as for you, faire damsell (q. he), I crave nothyng els now at your handes, but that you keepe this faith of yours, wherewith you are lincked unto your lover, inviolate

and unspotted, even as I doe leave you inviolate and unspotted in your mother's handes." How greate the joye of the mother was when she sawe the honestie of her daughter (as it were) resaved out of this yong princes handes by the force of her owne vertue, maie better be imagined then expressed with wordes ; but, above all joyes, the joye of Lucilla exceded all other, when she understande that, through the magnificence and liberalitie of the noble yong Prince, she was to have her Nicander for her housbande.

And tournyng her eyes, full of modestie, towarde him she saied : " I could not (sir) have had any more certaine and infallible token of your love towarde me, then that whiche new of your greate courtesie and bountie you have shewed me ; whiche I acknowledge to bee so greate, that I am bounde to yeeld your excellencie my most humble and infinite thankes. But forasmuche as wordes do faile me wherewith I might doe it, I must beseche you that it maie reste in your discrete judgement to consider how muche I confesse myself to bee your debtor, when woordes dooe faile me, to yeeld you, at the least, thankes for so greate a benefite. This onely will I saie unto your grace, that the remembraunce of so noble an acte shall never weare out of my minde ; and that I will, so long as I live, prae unto Almightie God so to preserve and maintaine your noble persone, as you of your goodnesse have saved mine honestie, and so to graunt you the accomplishmente of all your noble desires, as you have offered me to make me content of mine, by havyng my Nicander to bee my housbande : unto whom, as well because I have ever been so disposed, as for that it hath pleased your excellencie to commaunde me, I will alwaies keepe sounde and unstained that faithe, whiche through your courtesie shall joyne me to him in mariage."

The damsell seemed unto the Prince at that instantt to bee in a maner greater then she was in deede, when she once stooode assured of the savegarde of her honestie ; and delight-

ing no lesse in the excellencie of her minde, then he had before doen in the beautie of her bodie, he departed from her.

And havyng caused the two thousande pounds to be paied unto her mother, as he had promised, he went unto the Duke, his father, and tolde hym all that had passed betweene Lucilla and hym : the maner whereof liked so well the Duke, that he concluded with hymself that all the vertues, that ever had been before that tyme in his progenitours, would bee moste excellently joyned in hym.

This yong Prince required his father to sende for Nicander's father, and to perswade hym to agree that his sonne might matche with Lucilla, since that she was provided and furnished with so reasonable a dowrie ; which thyng the Duke did with a very good will, for that he knewe that if his sonne should have taken in hande to perswade the old manne to any suche matter, it might have stirred some suspition in his head why the Prince should so dooe. And havyng sent for hym accordyngly, when he was come, the Duke, after some familiar speeches of course and courtesie, tolde hym he was desirous that his sonne Nicander should take Lucilla to be his wife, who as well for her birthe, as for the rare giftes of her mynde (as he had learned), was worthie to be wife to any greate lorde. The old gentleman aunswere, that although she had those vertues and giftes which he spake of, and were verie well borne, yet had she not any dowrie convenient, or agreeable to his wealthe, whereby she might deserve to bee matched with his sonne. " Yes, Marie," said the Duke, " for I myself, because I would not have so greate vertue as is in her to bee oppressed by fortune's spight, have bestowed upon her twoo thousande pounds to serve for her dowrie.

The old manne, hearyng of suche a somme, was very wel content to dooe as the Duke would have hym, and the nexte daie, through the liberalitie of the Prince, the mariage was concluded and knitte up, which had so long been delaied and hindered by the coveteousnesse of the old manne, and the

povertie of Lucilla, with the infinite joye and contentment of the twoo young lovers, who had long wished and desired that happie daie.

What vertue, or what continence of Alexander, or of Scipio, maie be compared to this? Scipio abstained from the yong gentlewoman whiche was presented unto hym in Spaine, Alexander from Darius his daughter; but it was verie easie for either of theim so to dooe, as well because thei were in the furie of warre, and the soundes of drummes and trumpettes, as for that those women were of a strange nation, and enemies unto them, and never before that tyme seen of any of them, muche lesse desired: whereas this yonge Prince, who even bathyng as it were in blisse, livyng at his ease and pleasure, in the flower of his youthe, and in the heate of his amorous flames, had a yong gentlewoman, of a rare beautie, not of straunge nation, or any otherwise to be hated, but extremely beloved, in his handes, and voluntarily yeelded and committed unto hym by her owne mother; and yet not onely tempered hymself, and refrained to defile her chast and honest bodie, but also bestowed liberally her dowrie uppon her, to the ende that an other might enjoye her, and bee her housbande, whom she had chosen to love and like of, did, without all question, farre exceade all humaine courtesie in so noble and so vertuous an acte. Whereby he made apparent, that although he were pricked forward with the sharpe spurres of love and his sensuall appetite, yet was he of that highnesse of courage, and of that constancie of minde, that he was able not onely to conquer him self, but also to subdue the forces of love, whereunto bothe mortall mennes valour doeth commonly yeeld, and the very power of the goddes themselves (if we shall beleeve the fables of the auncient writers) hath shewed itself often tymes inferiour.

And thus this honeste damsell Lucilla, by the meanes of her chastitie, the vertue and excellencie whereof did winne and maister the harte of that yonge Prince, muche more then

the perfection of her bodily beautie had dooen before, obtained  
the thyng she moste desired and joyed in, whiche was to have  
Nicander to her housebande: with whom she lived ever after  
in greate contentment and happinesse, still nourishyng with  
kinde and lovyng demeanour, eche to other, that fervent  
affection which, from their first acquaintance, had taken full  
possession of bothe their liberties.

## OF FINEO AND FIAMMA.

## THE ARGUMENT OF THE IIII HISTORIE.

*The harde adventure of Fineo with his beloved Fiamma, who, after sondrie conflictes of fortune, were in the ende soldē as slaves to the Kyng of Tunise; who, seyng their perfecte love, caused them to be married, and after honouryng theim with sondrie presentes, sent them home to Savona, where by their parentes and freendes thei were joyfully received.*

In Genova, one of the fairest and moste famous cities of Italie, there was sometyme a yong gentlewoman of excellent beautie, called Fiamma, that was in love with a yong gentleman of Savona (a citie subjecte unto the state of Genova, and distaunte from thence aboute thirtie miles) whose name was Fineo; and their love beeing mutuall, and tendyng to no other ende then to be linked and joyned together by mariage, thei would not long have staied to bryng their honest desires to a good ende and conclusion, had not the father of the gentlewoman refused his consentes, and shewed hymself contrary to this their love and good will; for he misliking with the matche, either for that he purposed to place her better, or because he would not have her married to any man that should carry her out of Genova, did ofte tymes chide and reprehende his daughter, for castyng her affection uppon that yong gentleman, that was a straunger unto theim, and in effecte but a subjecte, though he were bothe of blood and richesse equall unto them.

But for all that the father could doe, or any other of her freendes, the fire whiche love had kindled in this yong couples

breastes slaked no whit at all, but still encreased, bothe hopyng in the ende to winne her freendes good will, and attaine the fruites of their desired love. This yong damsell had to her brother a stout and valiant yong gentleman, who being offended greatly that Fineo should continue his love towarde his sister, and followe the pursute of that whiche he knewe well enough her freendes were unwillyng to yeeld unto, had caused hym to bee spoken unto, and to be warned that he should desiste and leave to sollicite her; but he for all that ceased not, but continued his suite. Wherfore this brother of hers determined to make hiin leave of by force and dint of sworde; for although there were at that time a very straight lawe in the citie that no manne should weare his sworde, and paine of death appointed for him that should hurte any man with any weapon, yet bothe these gentlemen weare their swordes, for that thei bothe had charge of soldiers, that laye then in garrison for defence of the citie.

And havyng one daie mette Fineo in the streate alone, and hymself beyng very well accompanied with other gentlemen, he beganne to give hym evill language; and beeynge a gentleman of greate courage, and, though he were a stranger there, not beyng able to endure to be injured in words, saied to him boldely and roundely againe, that if thei twoo were alone he durst not use those speeches unto hym; for he would well give hym to understande that he was no man to take wrong at his handes, and that tyme and occasion would serve one daie (he doubted not), to make hym knowe that he had offended one that would beare no coales. Whereupon his adversarie, havyng drawne forthe his sworde, whilst he was yet speakyng, ran feircely upon hym, thinkyng to have striken hym; but Fineo, also a verie lustie gentleman, and quicke of eye, and nimble of hande, drewe out his sworde, and not onely warded the blowe of his enemie, but also hurte hym, though but lightly, in the hande. Forthwith thei that were with the yong gantlewoman's brother environed hym, and tooke hym

prisoner, and delivered hym into the handes of the magistrate, or cheef officer of the citie. And the penaltie being such, as is before mentioned, for hurtyng of any man within the citie, and especially a gentleman, Fineo was condemned to lose his heade.

Neverthelesse, he beyng verie well freended, and supported by many principall gentlemen of the citie, thei laboured so muche for hym, that thei obteined that he should not be behedded, but that his penaltie should bee converted unto an other punishment, verie little better, if it were no worse ; for, havyng bounde hym faste hande and foote, thei laied hym in a small boate, and in verie stormie weather set him in the maine sea, and there left him to the rule and government of fortune, and to the disposition of God, and mercie of the waves and windes. The boate was a long while beaten and tossed by the rage and furie of the seas, and poore Fineo, under diverse and sondrie stormes and shapes, had before his eyes a thousands tynes the presence of death ; yet in that fearfull and mortall perill he ceased not to call upon the name of his deare Fiamma, and in that extremitie and imminent daunger did he yet in maner glorifie hym self and thinke hymself happie, that he should ende his life for the love of his ladie.

Whiles he was thus tossed and tormented, still lookyng for none other but present death, the tempest began to cease, and the storme and rage of seas to bee asswaged, when, loe ! he discovered a fregate of Moores that went a roaving, and were then newe gone abrode, to spie whether the storme, which was then past, had not happily prepared for theim some occasion of gaine and bootie.

These Moores had no sooner discovered this little boate thus fleetynge at all adventures, but hopyng to finde therein some prey for their profite, thei made towarde it, and havyng at the boardyng thereof founde Fineo bounde hande and foote, and perceivyng by his countenaunce and apparell that he was no very base person, thei untied him, and sette hym in their

fregate as a slave to rowe, untill suche tyme as thei should determine further what to doe with hym : who, although that servitude and captivitie were greevous unto hym, yet consideryng with hymself that it was better for hym to be in the power of men, though thei were infidels, then in the power of seas and windes, he comforted hymself that yet, if he lived, he might still hope, through the goodnesse of God, one daie to be so happie as to enjoye his ladie and love : he framed hym self to beare with pacient minde that heavie yoke of his captivitie.

Fiamma havyng understande the unfortunate accidente happened to her lover, beleeving certainly that he was dead, and that she should never see hym againe, wherefore she herself resolvynge that she would no longer live, gave herself to devise what kinde of death she were best to chuse ; and in doubt thereof she passed some fewe daies, dissemblyng still in the house her sorowe and greef with a merie and chearfull countenance, as though she had cleane forgotten, and not once remembred her lover, Fineo : but in the ende, after long debatyng with herself, she resolved to dye the same kinde of death, and to make that ende whiche slié imagined Fineo had doen.

There was an other gentleman of the citie, who was no lesse enamoured of this gentlewoman than Fineo was, who supposyng that now, since she sawe there was no remedie for her to recover her lover, whom bothe she and all the citie accompted certainly to be dedde, he might perchaunce, by sute, obtaine her good will; and so procure her to bee his wife, with the consent of her freendes : and therefore, not long after the mischaunce of Fineo, he caused her father to bee dealt withall for the bestowyng of his daughter upon hym ; and the father beyng willing enough to agree thereunto, and findyng her to give sober and obedient answere with fewe wordes, presupposyng that she was willyng to doe as he would have her, made promise of her unto this yong gentleman, and agreed upon the

dowrie, and all other circumstaunces necessarie for the coupling of twoo suche persones together.

The night that went before the daie appointed for their marriage, Fiamma, callyng unto her a Moore that was slave in her father's house, and had the keepyng of a small boate of the gentleman's, wherein, when he liste to disport hym self, he was wont to take the aire upon the sea in tyme of faire weather, and to goe to their houses of pleasure, wherof that coaste is verie plentifull, and theim of excedaing beautie: whiche Moore had lived so many yeres in that thralldome, that he was now become so olde as she thought, she needed not to feare any force or violence at his handes, she beganne to perswade hym to put on a desire to deliver hymself out of captivitie, so as he might live the reste of his yeares in libertie and at his ease. Whereunto, findyng hym readie and willyng, if the meanes or occasion were offered him, she gave hym in hand a good round somme of money, which she had laied together, and made him promise to carrie her into the sea in the boate, whereof he had the custodie, and afterwardes to doe that, whatsoever it were, that she should commaunde.

This wicked and faithlesse Moore, seyng hymself not onely to purchase his libertie, but also make so greate a gaine of readie money, that he was not like at any tyme after to live in wante or povertie, was [not] onely thankefull in his mynde towarde the yonge gentlewoman, but straight waie beganne to purpose and to devise to make a greater gaine of her owne persone, by carriyng her unto the Kyng of Tunise, and sellyng of her unto hym at a verie high prise; and with this entention, the mischeevous knave assured her that he would dooe in all poinctes as she would have hym. Wherefore, when all the reste of the house were in their firste sleape, the damsell, with this wretched Moore, went out of her father's house, and gat her into the boate, and the weather beyng verie faire, the knave began to rowe and make saile along the coast, towarde Ligorno, from whiche, by breake of the daie, they were not verie farre. When

this yong gentlewoman sawe that she was now so far from home, that she needed not to feare to bee driven backe againe to Genova, she willed the Moore to rowe to the shore, and to lande hymself, and then to shove of the boate againe; for that her determination was so to dye, swallowed up with the waves of the sea, as she supposed her Fineo to have been. But the wicked knave, who had a farther fetche in his hed, and thoughtes farre differed from the gentlewoman's, made her believe that thei were yet nere unto Genova, and advised her to bee content, that thei might goe somewhat farther, to the ende that her father, if he sent after them, might not overtake them.

Neverthelesse, she havyng often tymes urged hym to doe as she erste bad hym, and he still protracted the tyme, and shifting her offe with one tale or an other, she began to suspect his drift. The mornynge, therefore, beyng well spent, she made as though she would have looked over the boate side into the water, or have washed her handes in the sea, and on the sodaine would have caste herself over boarde; but the craftie Moore, suspectyng her entent, caught holde of her aboute the middle, and not onely held her from throwyng herself into the sea, but also bounde her faste hande and foote: and whereas she of her courtesie had bothe set hym at libertie, and liberrallie bestowed good store of wealth upon hym, he, as a treacherous infidell, bereaved her of her libertie, makynge her an unfortunate slave under his disposition, and beyng moved with a greedie, covetous mynde, thought that too little whiche she had given him, and therefore determined, as is afore saied, to sell her persone, and to encrease his goodes by that meanes.

The desolate damsell, when she sawe herself so used by that villaine, full of woe and greef, ceased not to rebuke the vilde caitive, that little regarded her speeches, the breache of his faithe and promise, and blamynge her self for trustyng of hym, and then repented, when it was too late, that she had not obeyed her father, and followed the advise of her frendes,

she began to curse her destinie, and her cruell fortune, and to crie out upon the heavens, that had made her become the unfortunatest yong woman that ever loved man. And whilst she was thus lamentyng her hard happe, and the Moore as faste as he could with his owres labouryng to speede his voyaige, a little foiste, or galley of Moores, that wente prolyng up and doune the coaste, havyng espied the small boate, drewe nere unto it, and boorded it. And havyng founde this yong gentlewoman, beeynge bounde therein, thei would have taken her awaie ; but the old knave offeryng to resist them, and to keepe her out of their handes, thei tooke her awaie from hym perforce, and woundyng hym very sore, and asked of her in their language from whence she came, and what she was ? But she, not understandyng theim, could make them no aunswere, but onely, with teares and wepyng, make them to understande that she was a wofull and unfortunate damsell : but the olde Moore, feelyng hym self wounded to death, before he died tolde theim bothe of what place and parentage she was, and laied before them, by plaine reason, how greate a bootie thei might accoumpte thei had made that mornyng, if thei did carrie her unto the Kyng of Tunise (as he had thought to have doen) and sell her unto hym. Hee beeynge dedde, thei dispoiled hym, and tooke from hym all that whiche Fiamma had given ; and so he, havyng thought by treacherie and breakyng of his faithe to make greate gaine, loste bothe his life and all that whiche he had gotten of the unadvised, and evill counselled yong gentlewoman : and, havyng placed her in their foist, and comforted her aswell as thei could, thei tooke their waie straight toward Tunise.

It fortuned that the other fregate of Moores, that had founde and taken Fineo, (as is alreadie saied before) met with this other foiste, or galleie, wherein Fiamma was, and assaulted it ; and havyng fought together a good while, (for that the other resisted, and defended themselves stoutly) in fine, the fregate wherein Finio was (who in the encounter and duryng the fight had shewed

greate valour emong the reste) overcame the other, and tooke from them all that thei had : so that Fiamma and Fineo were bothe now together, in the compasse of one smal vessell. And although in that extremitie of bothe their evill fortunes, it was a greate comfort for these twoo lovers to see one the other, and that bothe longed and desired extremely to embrace eche other, and to tell the one to the other their accidentes and unfortunat adventures, neverthelesse, Fineo made signes to Fiamma that in nowise she should take knowledge or acquaintaunce of hym ; and accordyngly she dissembled and made no shewe, but as one had never seen hym.

Fineo, for the valour and courage whiche he had shewed in the battaile, was delivered of his chaines, and muche made of emong the Moores, untill suche tyme as thei had conducted bothe hym and her (as thei did verie shortly after) unto the Kyng of Tunise ; who havynge seen and considered Fineo, and understande by the pirates that his comelie personage was accompanied with greate valour, bought him and tooke hym to his service, in good place nere his owne persone. And beyng moved with the beautie of the yong gentilwoman, bargained for her likewise for a greate somme of money, and caused her to be put in the cube, whiche is a place where he keepeth his concubines (as the Turke doeth in his seraglio) emong a greate many of other women, and esteemed her verie much for that the rovers (who had learned of those other that thei overcame all that whiche the olde Moore had declared unto them of her callyng and condition) did assure him that she was a gentlewoman, borne of a noble familie in Genova.

Fineo, by his service and discret behaviour, became in short tyme verie deare unto the Kyng, so that in lesse then the space of one whole yeare, the Kyng of speciall trust gave hym the charge of the gate of the cube, whiche office the Kynge of Tunise are never wont to give but unto suche as are in singular favour aboute theim. In the whiche Fineo, to his greate contentment, had the commoditie daiely to see his Fiamma, and

she had no lesse conforte and satisfaction to beholde and looke upon hym ; whiche oportunitie thei enjoyed and handeled so discretly, that thei never gave any cause of suspition to any persone of their fervent good will and affection.

The maner or custome of the Kyng was, to cause his concubines to come unto him, and to lye with them by order, as thei had been bought or come to his handes; by reason of whiche custome, for that there were very many bought before the commyng thether of Fiamma, there was alreadie a whole yeare and a halfe welnie paste after her sale, and yet her turne was not come to be called for. But remainyng now but three others to be brought unto the Kyng before her, Fineo consideryng to his intollerable greefe that she was, ere it were long, to be likewise called for, beganne to be tormented with incredible passion and anguishe of mynde : and his woe increased tenne thousand folde, by feare and imagination whiche he conceived that she, being above all the Kynges concubines farre the fairest, when he had once enjoyed her he would take her to be one of his wives, whiche feare did no whitte lesse torment and afflicte Fiamma then it did her lover.

Whilst bothe these yong lovers lived in this sorte, there chaunced to arrive at Tunise a shippe of Savona, with certaine marchautes of that citie, who seeyng Fineo there, and knowyng hym, were wonderfully amarveiled, findyng hym alive, for that he had been lamented at Savona of all his freendes for dedde. Fineo, likewise, knowyng those marchautes, and havyng auctoritie and meanes to pleasure them in the court, welcomed them, and made muche of them in freendly sorte ; and demaundyng of the state and welfare of his father and brother, and other freendes, thei certified hym that thei were all well, and that when thei should understande that he was alive and in so good a case, thei would be very joyfull, and think themselves happie if thei might hope to see hym once come againe, as thei doubted not but one daie he would and might.

These marchantes havyng dispatched their businesse, de-

parted thence, and by theim Fineo wrote letters to his father, and to his brother, certifiyng them of his beyng in Tunise, and how that Fiamma was with hym, and that he desired to deliver hymself out of bondage, and her with hym, whiche thyng he thought he might easily bring to passe, if his brother would come thither; and with all described unto them a plot whiche he had cast for the execution of his entent and desire.

Thei beyng returned safe unto Savona, delivered the letters unto the father and brother of Fineo, who with the rest of his freendes, and in effecte all the whole citie, were verie glad that his fortune had not been altogether so froward toward hym as thei had supposed.

And his brother, accordyng to his instructions, prepared a verie pretie fregat, verie well appointed and furnished with merchaundize, emong whiche there were many trifles and thynges of price, meete for ladies and gentlewomen. And beyng arrived therewith at Tunise, Fineo brought them unto the kyng, whom thei presented with some thynges of small price, whiche were very gratefull and acceptable unto him, and emong other speeches, thei saied that thei had abord many pretie thynges for dames and ladies, whiche thyng the kyng understandyng, commaunded Fineo that the chefest of them might be brought into the cube, to shewe suche thinges as thei had unto his concubines: by which occasion he gatte that oportunitie whiche he looked for, to conferre and deale more privatly with them, without suspition, and to give the better order for the accomplishment of asmuch as he had devised.

Fineo and his brother, therfore, beyng come into the cube, shewed forthe emong those women suche wares as they had brought to please their fancies, and gave unto theim all some one trifle or an other, as a gentle present to the firste; and the brother of Fineo presented Fiamma, emong the reste, with a very faire purse, richely embrodered with golde and pearle, in the whiche there was enclosed a letter, written by Fineo, by the contentes whereof she might understande at large al that

whiche he did wishe and would have her to doe, to make their escape together, and to ridde them selves out of that thraldom and captivitie. Assone as the twoo brethren had doen that thei came for, and were departed, Fiamma, by their manner gatheryng that the gift of that purse conteined some mysterie, withdrew herself into a secrete place, and havyng opened it, she founde therein the letter, whiche when she had redde, she thanked Almighty God, that of his goodnesse had shewed her the waie to deliver herself out of captivite, and from becoming dishonestly the concubine of an infidell kyng.

And when this appointed daie for the performing of their purpose was come, Fiamma in the night, when all was silent and others slept, came to a windowe barred with iron, where Fineo and his brother were attēndyng for her, who, with certaine instrumentes, which thei had brought for that purpose, brake and wrested the grate of the window, and takyng her awaie with them, thei gotte her into their barque, and hoisised saile, and directed their course with a merie winde toward the coaste of Italie, whiche served theim verie faire all that night long, and the moste parte of the nexte daie. In the mornyng, Fiamma beyng missed, and Fineo likewise, the Kyng was adverstised of their eskaþe, who perceivyng the marchauntes to be gone also, rested assured that it was a sette match made for the stealyng of Fiamma awaie. And beyng full of rage and despight towardes them all, he caused certaine gallies and other light vesselles to be armed in all haste, and to be sent after them, givyng straight charge and commission to his captaines that either thei should bring Fineo and the damsell, with the cheef of the marchauntes, alive unto hym, because he would cause them all three to be buried alive, or that if thei could not get them alive, thei should bring their three heddes, for that he would have them be set over the cube, for an example and a terroure to all others.

But before those gallies and other vesselles could bee in a readinesse to departe, Fortune, not havyng yet her fill of per-

secutynge and afflictingyng these two poore lovers, caused a contrarie winde, with an extreame storme and tempest to arise, by force whereof the vessell wherein thei were was not without greate daunger driven backe againe to Tunise, with so muche greefe and sorrowe of all them that were in it, as they maie imagine that knowe the crueltie and barbarousnesse of that people. But in the begynning of the storme, the brother of Fineo, dispairyng of his life, as he that was assured either to be drowned by rage of the winde and seas, or els to die in torment if he retourned into the hands of those infidels, gat himself into his cockboate, and therein hazarded his life ; and after muche adoe, and a thousande perilles of present death, recovered the coaste of Italie at the last, and retourned home to Savona, full of woe, with heavie tidynges, declaryng unto his father, that either the fregate would be lost, or els driven backe againe to Tunise, where he was well assured that bothe his brother and the yong damsell, his lover, should bee murthered in moste cruell maner.

At whiche dolefull newes, the father, as if he had seene his soonne lye dedde before hym, beganne to weepe and lamente, complainyng of his harde destinie, that caused hym to live so long, or reserved hym to see those cruell and bitter daies.

Fineo, seeyng hymself brought to so harde an exigent, for that their vessell was now driven backe nere unto Tunise, and knowyng that he should feele the smarte of his faulfe, and the kynges anger in sharpest maner and sorte, beyng determined to live no longer, and to prevent the crueltie of the kyng, drewe out his sworde, and would therewith have stroken hym self to death. But Fiamma, catchyng hym by the arme : Alas ! Fineo, (q, she) what shall become of me, if you bee dead ! Shall I remaine behinde to endure the cruell tormentes, that I knowe this infidell hath prepared for me ? Yet rather, since that death must needes deliver us of our misfortunes, before you execute upon yourself this your determination, ridde me out of the worlde, and deliver me from the paines which alreadie I feele

in my imagination, wherewith I assure myself thei will bryng me to a shameful death. And with these woordes, offeryng her breast unto him, she requested him to strike her with his swoorde ; but Fineo bad her bee of good conforte, for your beautie my Fiamma, (saied he) beeyng so singular as it is, I knowe will save you, and therefore you neede not feare, and I alone should be the manne that thei would plague, and torment to death for us bothe, and therefore, my deare, suffer me to dye before, and content thy self to live, and vouchsafe sometyme to remember thy unfortunate Fineo when he is dedde.

Whilst thei were thus talkyng and debatyng whiche should firste dye, the people whiche the kyng had sent out to apprehende them came and boured their fregate, and tooke them bothe, whom thei bound in chaines, and brought on land to the presence of the king, who, assone as he beheld the beautie of Fiamma, felte his former wrathe and crueltie entended to relent, and in muche milder maner then the two captives hoped or looked for, he saied unto her : Tell me what moved you, I pracie you, faire damsell, to runne awaie, and flie from me, at whose handes you had no cause to looke for any other entreatie than lovynge or freendlie ?

Fiamma, who in that yere and a halfe that she had been in the cube, had learned the language indifferently well, made aunswere unto hym, that no cause or meanyng to flie from hym, but her earnest desire to enjoye Fineo, whom she had loved and chosen for her housbande many yeares before, had forced her to doe that whiche she had doen : and herewith she told him the beginning of their acquaintance and love, and how many perilles and daungers thei had run through, still hopyng one daie to come unto that happie houre, wherein their troubles should have an ende, and that thei might bee honestlie united and enjoye one an other : and finallie, castyng her self doun at his feete, with abounding of teares, she besought hym with all humilitie to pardone her, if she had offended him, and withal to forgive Fineo, since that long and faithful

love had made them to procure the accomplishment of their desires.

The teares of Fiamma, and the onelie name of love, were of suche force and vertue in the harte of the Kyng, though he were barbarous and cruell of nature, that the ire and hatred, whiche he had conceived against them before, was then converted and changed into pitie and compassion of their misfortunes ; and where before he had appointed a cruell death to bee their punishments, he now determined to overcome with his courtesie the fowardnesse of their perverse fortune, and to make them, after so many perilles and dangers, contented and happie, and to see an end at last of their miseries, by making them to enjoye their long hoped-for desires. Wherefore, havyng caused them to be bothe forthwith unbounde, he tooke from his owne finger a merveilous faire and precious rubie, and giving it unto Fineo he saied unto him, “ Since your fortune hath bin suche, that after so many strange adventures, and through suche daungers, you are fallen into my handes, I, for my parte, will not be he that will extinguishe or quence the flames of so fervent and constaunte love, or unloose or dissolve the bandes wherewith your hartes bee bounde and knitte together : and therefore, Fineo, I doe not onely pardon you bothe, but also I will have thee, before thou departe hence, to wedde this damsell with this ryng, and to take her for thy wife, and that she henceforth enjoye thee for ever as her housbande.” It is not to be demaunded whether the two lovers (who looked for none other of the kynges courtesies then death) were glad to hear hym use those speeches, yea or no ; but bothe beeyng fallen on their knees, and in humblest maner having yeelded their thankes unto his majestie, Fineo, in his presence, wedded Fiamma, and tooke her for his wife, to the unspeakable joye and contentation of bothe their hartes and myndes ; and the kyng, to honour their mariage, caused a sumptuous feaste to be prepared, with no lesse charge and abundance of all

thinges, then if he had married a daughter of his owne to some greate lorde or chiefe man of that countrey.

And after certaine daies, the two yong maried lovers beyng desirous to retourne into their owne countrey, he gave them very riche and costly presentes, and sent them, honourably accompanied, home to Savona ; whose arivall was no lesse marveilous then joyful to the father and brother of Fineo, and to all the citie, thei havyng been assuredly esteemed and accompted as deade. Afterwards thei sent to Genova to Fiamma's father and brother, certifyng of al that had happened, who then perswading them selves that God and nature had created those two yong folke to bee matched and joyned together in wedlocke, were well contented with that whiche thei saw was God's will should be ; and beeyng gone both to Savona, the father embraced and accepted Fineo for his sonne-in-lawe, and the brother for his brother-in-lawe. And the two yong lovers lived ever after in greate happinesse and felicitie, givyng, by this successe of their harde fortune, an assured argument, and a notable example, whereby we maie learne, that though froward fortune doe for a while crosse and molest the desires and travailles of men, yet in the ende she can not let, but that of necessitie those thinges must come to passe, whiche God, by his devine providence, wherewith he ruleth the whole world, hath appointed shal take effecte.

## OF TWO BRETHREN AND THEIR WIVES.

## THE ARGUMENT OF THE FIFT HISTORIE.

*Two brothers making choyse of their wives, the one chouse for beautie, the other for riches: it happened unto them, after thei were married, the one of their wives proved to be of light disposition, the other a common scolde: in what maner thei lived with their housbandes, and how in the ende the first became to live orderly and well, but the other could be brought by no devise to any reason or good maner.*

Gentlewomen, before I will proceede any farther in this historie, I muste desire you to arme yourselves with pacience in readyng hereof, that if you finde anything that might breedre offence to your modeste myndes, take it in this sorte, that I have written it onely to make you merrie, and not to sette you a snarryng or grudgyng against me; for although I meane to present you with a chapter of knaverie, yet it shall be passable, and suche as you maie very well permit, and the matter that I minde to wright is upon this question, whether a man were better to bee married to a wise harlot, or to a foolishe overthwart and brauling woman? This question, I know, will seeme very doubtful unto some, and yet in my opinion very easie to bee aunswere: and to speake my mynde without dissimulation of bothe those evilles, I thinke the first is least, and therefore is to be chosen; and herein I could alledge for my better prooфе an example of the auncient Romaines, who in all their governmentes were moste wise and politique, amongst whom the infirmitie of the firste was borne

withall, because it proceaded of the frailtie of the fleshe, but the outrage of the second was ever condemned, for that it did abounde from a wicked and mischevous mynde. And in common reason is it not lesse noisome for a man to live accompanied with a wife, who, although she will some tyme fie out, can so wisely dissemble with her housebande, that he shall never so muche as suspecte her, whereby he shall receive no discontentment in his minde, then to be bedfellowe with Xantippa, a common scold, who daiely and hourelly will be checkyng, tauntyng, and railyng at him in such sorte, that he shall thinke hymself mooste blest and happie when he is farthest from her companie? But for your better confirmation I have set forthe this historie of twoo brethren, the one of them married to a wenche that could so cunnynglie behave herself towardes hym, that he had thought she had beleved there had been no other God but himself, and yet, by your leave, she would take reason when it was proffered her, but what of that? the harte never greeves what the eyes see not. The other was married to a dame, that from her navill douneward was more chast and continent, but otherwise of her tong suche a devill of helle, that the poore man her housbande could never enjoye merrie daie nor hour, although he devised many a pretie remedie, as by the readyng of the processe of this tale you shall better perceive, whiche followeth in this sorte.

There was somtime remainyng in a famous citie twoo brethren: the eldest (accordyng to the custome of the place) enjoyed his father's goodes and possessions after his death, wherby he was well able to live; the yongest had neither landes nor livynges, saving that his father had trained hym up in learning, whereby he was able to governe hymself in all maner of companies where soever he became. These twoo brethren, beyng wearie of their single lives, disposed themselves to mariage. The eldest, beeynge of hymself well able to live, sought a wife onely for her beauty, without any other respect either to her conditions or riches, and as the proverbe

is (he that sekes shall finde) so in the ende he lighted on a gentlewoman, called by the name of Mistres Dorithe, whose beautie in deede was verie excellent, and there withall had a passyng readie witte, marie her trainyng up had not been after the beste nor worst maner, but, as a man might saie, after the common sorte: this gentlewoman he married, who could so well handle hym with kissyges, cullynges, and other amarous exercises, that her housebande thought hymself the most fortunate manne that lived to light on suche a wife, although she cunnyngly armed his hedde with hornes, as after you shall heare.

The second brother left (as you have heard) without maintenance or livyng, sought for a wife onely to releve his want, and fortuned to hit of a widowe, in deede, with greate wealthe, but in conditions so overthwart, and so spitfull of her tongue, that the poore man had not been married fullie out a moneth, but he more then a thousande tymes cursed the priest that married hym, the sexton that opened the churche doore when he went to bee married, yea, and his owne unhappy legges, that had carried his bodie to bee yoked to so greate a mischeef. But because I doe minde more orderly to tell you the maners of these twoo gentlewomen, I will firste beginne with Mistres Doritie, whose housebande, after thei had been a while maried, fortuned to fall sicke; and then, accordyng to that countrey maner, a doctor of phisicke was presently sent for, who commyng many times to visite his pacient, began to beholde and contemplate the lively beautie of this gentlewoman, and lent her many rowlyng lookes and secrete countenaunces in suche sorte, that Mistres Doritie beyng well practised in the arte of love, and seyng Maister Doctor to be a man as sufficient to content a gentlewoman in her chamber that was whole, as to minister medicines to those that were sicke, did not onely requite hym againe with looke for looke, but she yeelded hym a large usurie, and paid him more then fourtie in the hundred. Master Doctor, who was likewise

skilfull enough, could well perceive whereto those lookes did tende, upon a tyme beyng alone in her companie, he saied unto her as followeth.

Mistres Doritie, if the experience whiche I have learned in Phisickes arte might crave credite, and make my tale to bee the better beleived, assure yourself, then, that I minde to saie nothyng but that that shall bee to your owne behoofe ; and the reason that makes me to enter into this discourse, is the pitie that I take to see so proper a gentlewoman as yourself should bee so deceived in a housebande, who, although you shall finde hym bothe honeste, gentle, and lovyng, yea, and peradventure maie contente you with suche rightes as appertaine to the mariage bedde, yet assure yourself he shall never be able to get you with child, consideryng your natures and complexions be so farre different the one from the other, whereby you are like for ever to remaine without issue : and one of the greateste comfortes that maie happen unto us in this worlde is to see ourselves, as it were, regenerate and borne anewe in our chil-dren, and barrenesse in the auncient tyme, hath been accompted not onely infamous, but also moste hatefull emongst women, in so muche that Sara gave her owne handmaide to her house-band, because she could not herself conceive a child ; but I would wishe women more witte then to followe Sara's example. God defende thei should be so foolish to give their maidens to their housebandes ; I would wishe them rather themselves to take their menne : it hath been ever holden for the greater wisedome, rather to take then to give ; and sure thei shal finde it more for their owne profites, that if their housbandes want be suche, that he is not able to get a child, to take helpe of some other that maie supplie his imperfections. But I truste I shall not neede to use many perswasions, consideryng that every wise woman will thinke that I have reason on my side. Thus, Mistres Doritie, you have heard the somme of my taile, protestyng, that if my service maie any waies stande you in

steade, I am as readie to obeye, as he over whom you have power to commaunde.

Mistres Doritie, who all this while had well pondered his woordes, knewe verie well how to whet Maister Doctor on, and the more to set his teeth on edge, aunswered hym thus. I perceive, Maister Doctor, you are something pleasantly disposed, and hereafter, when I shall find my housbandes infirmitie to be suche as you have saied, I meane to sende for you, desiryng you that you would not be out of the waie, to helpe me when I have neede.

The Doctour knewe not well how to understande these wordes, whether thei were merily spoken, or otherwise in disdaine of his former talke, aunswered thus. Alas, Mistres Doritie, pardon me if my woordes seeme anythyng offensive unto you, assuryng you that in this meane space that I have made my recourse to your housebande, (whose healthe, by the sufferance of God, I have now well restored) am myself falne into a fever so extreame, as neither Galen, Hypocrates, Avicen, Pliny, nor any other that ever gave rules of phisick, could yet prescribe a medicine for the malladie, or diet to suppresse the humour that feedes it. I shall not neede to use longe circumstaunce in the matter, knowyng your wisedome to bee suche, that you can well conceive the somme of all my greef: it is your beautie that is like to breede my bane, and hath alreadie driven me into the greatest depth of daunger, unlesse some plaintes of pitie maie prevaile, to yeelde remorse to hym that vowes hymself to doe you service duryng life.

Mistres Doritie, seyng the matter sorted out as she looked for, could tell well enough how to handle Maister Doctor, and to make hym the more eger, she delaied hym ofwith doubtfull speeches, but yet fedde hym still with suche entisyng and pleasaunt countenaunces, that ministered greate hope of comfort to his disease: she aunswered thus.

And could you then finde in your harte, Maister Doctor, to deceive your very freend of his deare and lovyng wife? How

can you offer hym so manifest an injurie, to whom you are so lately linckt in so greate a league of freendship as is betweene my houseband and yourself? I can not think, Maister Doctor, that it is good will that hath caused you to move this sute unto me, but rather to see how I were disposed; or peradventure you use these wordes for exercise sake, knowyng the fashion of you men to bee suche, as by praisyng of our beautie you thinke to bring us into a fooles paradyse, yf we wil give credite straight waie, that you love us so soone as you shall but tell us the tale: but for my part, Maister Doctor, although I want wit to encounter you with wordes, so likewise I want wit to beleve any thing that you have said to be otherwise then wordes of course.

These speeches did ingender suche a nomber of swete and sowre alterations in Maister Doctor, that for his life he wiste not how to understande them: one while thei were like to drive hym to dispaire, an other while thei somethyng quieted hym with hope, but in the ende determinyng to followe what he had begonne, he saied.

Swete mistres, moste humbly I desire you to accompt of me, not according to my desertes, which as yet are none at all, but accordyng to the dutifull service whiche hereafter I vowe faithfully to doe unto you; and for the better testimonie of my wordes, which, as you saie, seme to be of suche ordinary course, I desire no other credite maie be given theim then shall bee agreeable to my deedes, when it shall please you to commaunde. But alas for the injurie which you speake of, that I should offer to your housebande, who in deede I make accompt to bee my verie freende, what is he, I pracie you, that is able to prescribe lawes to love? And as love is without lawe, so it is without respect, either of freende or foe, father or brother, riche or poore, mightie or weake, vertuous or vicious: the examples are so many and generall, that I should but waste the time to repeate them. But, Mistres Doritie, I proteste, the verie cause that maketh me to move this matter unto you is for no ill will

that I bear to your housbande, but for the good wil I beare to your swete self: you maie use your housbande as your housbande, and me as your freende, glad to stande at reversion, when your housebande maie take his fill of the banquet, and be glutted with more then enough: farther, if you make so greate accompte of your housbandes good likyng, as you saie, what wives be ever better beloved, or more made of by their housbandes, then those that have discretion to helpe their frendes when thei neede? But what sottishe opinion is this, whiche so many doeth holde, that they thinke it so greate an injurie for a man to seke the wife of his freende, when he is attached by love, whose arrest neither goddes nor men have bin ever able to resist? But I pracie you, Mistress Doritie, if I might aske you this question, would you not thinke your good will better bestowed upon your housbandes freende then his foe? if you love your housebande, I am sure you wil saie I have reason: What should I longer trouble you then with circumstancies? I knowe you are wise, and now I desire you, for the good will that you beare to your housebande, to pitie me, his freende, whom I trust you will restore with one drop of mercy, and the rather for your housbandes sake.

How\* thinkē you, gentlewomen, bee not these gentle persuasions to bee used by a Doctor? Marie, he was no Doctor of Divinitie, and therefore you neede not followe his doctrine, unlesse you liste yourselves; but this pitifull gentlewoman, seyng Maister Doctor at such desperate poinctes, for feare of damning of her owne soule, that so deare a freende to her housbande, as Maister Doctor was, should perishe and bee so wilfully caste awaie through her default, she received hym for her freend; and so I pracie God give them joye.

But it fortuned afterwardes this gentlewoman to light into the companie of a lawier, who perceivynge this dame to be of suche excellent beautie, joynynge hymself something nere her, he saied. Gentlewoman, although I have no skill in the arte of paintyng, yet assure your self, your forme and passing

beautie is so surely engraven and fixed in my mynde, that although yourself were absent, I could drawe your perfect counterfecte, savyng that I thinke all the apothecaries in this citie were not able to furnishe me with colours to make the perfecte distaine of the beautie in your face.

Mistres Doritie, knowyng whereto these speeches pretended, aunswere. . Indeede, sir, it should seeme you would prove a passyng painter, that can so cunnyngly painte forthe with wordes that whiche I knowe is too farre unworthie of so excellent a florishe as you would give it.—Mistres, (q. the Lawier) if I have committed any offence in these woordes whiche I have spoken, it is in that I have taken upon me to praise your beautie, and not able to give it suche due commendations as I see it doeth deserve, the sight whereof doeth so captivate my affections, and hath so crepled all my sences, that it hath caused me in maner to forgette myself: no marvaile, then, though my tongue doeth faile, and is not able to expresse the perfection of you, unto whom with vowe of continuall service I subiecte my life, livyng, and libertie, if it please you to accept of it.

This gentlewoman, that had yet but one freende to truste upon besides her housbande, beganne to think that store was no sore, and therefore determined not to forsake his frendlie offer, but firste she demaunded of hym of his facultie, and what trade of life he used? to whiche he aunswere, that he was a gentleman appertainyng to the lawe. It maie well bee so, (q. she) for I perceive, by your experience, that this is not the firste plea that you have framed.—And yet beleeve me, (q. the Lawier) I was never brought before to pleade at beauties barre, but sithe my happe is suche, I humblie holde up my handes, desiryng to be tried by your courtesie and myne owne loialtie, contentyng myself to abide suche dome and judgement as it shall please you to appointe, beeyng the cheef and soveraigne judge yourself. She replieng saied: Seeyng you have constituted me to give sentence at my pleasure, it is not the office

of a good justicer to bee parciall in his owne cause ; and therefore, this is the hope you shal looke for at my handes, that if hereafter in your deedes I shall see as plaine proofe of perfecte good will, as your woordes by pretence importe likelyhood of earnest love, you shall finde me ready to render suche recompence as shall fall out to your owne contention and likyng.

This comfortable aunsware verie well pleased hym ; and within a verie little space after, he so handeled the matter, that he had entered his action in her common place.

Thus, what betweene Maister Doctor on the one side, who was still ministeryng of phisicke unto her, so long as there were any drugges remainyng in his storehouse, and the Lawier on the other side, who sufficiently enstructed her with his lawe, thei used suche haunt unto this gentlewoman's companie, that the one beganne to growe suspicioous on the other, and eche of theim desirous to have her severall to hymself, beganne in the ende to envaigh the one against the other ; the Doctor against the Lawier, and the Lawier against the Doctor, and to tel her to her face what thei suspected, the one against the other. But Mistres Doritie, beeyng very angry with theim bothe, that would so narrowlie looke into her doynges, did thinke it had been sufficient for reasonable men that she had received them into her favour, and as often as it had pleased them to come she welcomed them as themselves did desire : and what can a man desire any more then to drinke so often as he shalbe a thirste ? But with faire speeches she contented them bothe for a tyme ; but she thought in th'ende to finde a remedy for that mischeef.

And thus it fell out, that a Souldiour, who was lately retourned from the warres, I gesse aboute the same tyme that Kyng Henry the Fift was retourned from the winnyng of Agincourt feelde, this Souldiour, I saie, bravynge it out aboute the streates of the citie, (as commonly the custome of soul-diours is, to spend more in a moneth then thei get in a yere) as he roomed to and fro, and fortuned to espie this blasyng

starre lookyng out at a windowe, was sodainly stroken into a greate[r] maze to see this lampe of light, then ever he had been in the feelde to see the ensignes of his enemies ; and was so farre overcharged with her love, that, but for feare to have been marked by the passers by, he would have stooode still gazyng and lookyng uppon her, but learnyng, in the ende, that she was the mistres of the house, he began to devise how he might make her understande the fervencie of his love, on whiche he determined to write unto her. But then he knewe not how to beginne his letter, because souldiours are verie seldome accustomed to endite, especially any of these lovyng lines ; and to speake unto her, he was likewise to learne how to use his tearmes : neither wiste he how to come into her presence ; but you shall see Fortune favoured hym, for in an evenyng, as he passed through the streate, she was sittynge alone in her doore to take the aire, and commyng unto her, not knowyng for his life how to begin his tale, in the ende, Mistres, (q, he) I priae you, is your housebande within ?

No, surely, sir, (q, she) he is abroade in the toun, but I knowe not where. And I would gladlie have spoken with hym, (q, the Souldiour) if he had ben within. Beleeve me, sir, he is not within, (q, she) but if it please you to leave your arrande with me, at his commyng home, I will shew hym your minde. In faith, mistres, (q, the Souldiour) my arrande is not greate : I would but have craved his helpe in chusyng me a wife, because I perceive he hath some experiance in the facultie, or els think he could never have chosen so well for hymself. If your arrande be no other then this, (q, Mistres Doritie) you maie at your owne leisure come and doe it yourself ; and as for my housbandes experiance that you speake of, although peradventure it bee not fittyng to your fancie, yet I am well assured that he hath made his choyse of suche a one as he hymself very wel liketh. I believe it well, (q, the Souldiour) and if without offence I might speake it, I sweare, so God help me, I like his choise so wel, that I would thinke myself more then a thousand

tymes happie, if I might be his halfe ; or if my unworthinesse deserved not so greate a portion, I would crave no more then yourself would willingly bestow on me, accordyngly as you should see me able to deserve it. Why, sir, (q, Mistres Doritie) I doe not understande whereunto your speeches doeth tende, neither what part you would have me to give you, when I have alreadie bestoweded of my housebande bothe my hande, my harte, my minde, and good will. Alas ! gentlewoman, (q, the Souldiour) these bee none of them that I would crave : there is yet an overplus whiche you have not yet spoken of, whiche, if you please to bestow of a souldiour, I should think myself the happiest man alive, whose love and good likyng towrdes you is such, that I trust, in tyme to come, yourself will judge me worthie for my well deservyng zeale to have deserved hire. Souldiours are seldome seene (q, Mistres Doritie) to marche under the banner of Venus ; but what so ever you bee, doe you thinke to overthrowe my vertues with the assault of your wanton perswasions, or would you make me beleeve that you love me as you saie, when you have no more respect to the hurt of my soule ? Gentlewoman, (q, the Souldiour) I am not able to encounter you with wordes, because it hath not been my profession, nor trainyng up, but if you doubt of my love and good likyng, please it you to make triall : commaund anythyng that your self shall thipke requisite, whiche if I doe not performe to the uttermoste, then esteeme my love in deede to be but feined, and where you thinke that I goe aboute to seeke the prejudice or hurte of your soule, beleeve me I never ment it.

Mistres Doritie, who had beene well acquainted before with many suiters, had never been apposed with such a rough hewen fellowe, that was so blunt and plaine, aswell in his gesture as in his tearmes, beganne to thinke with herself that he might well bee a Souldiour, for she knewe that thei had little skill in the courting of gentlewomen ; yet she perceived by his countenaunce the vehemencie of the love he bare unto her, and perceiving his plainesse, she beganne to thynke hym more fitter

for her diet then either Maister Doctor, or Maister Lawyer, that could not be contented the one with the other, when she gave them bothe so muche as thei could crave: and therefore thinkyng with herself that to loose any longer tyme were but a poinet of follie, takyng the Soul diour by the hande, she ledde hym up into a chamber, where other speeches were passed betweene them in secrete, whiche I could never yet understande. And what thei did farther, when thei were by themselves, gentlewomen, I pracie gesse you, but this I must advertise you of, that before thei came foorth of the chamber againe, the Soul diour had pleased Mistres Doritie so wel, that both Maister Doctor and Maister Lawyer were put quite out of conceipt; so that from that tyme forwards, when thei came of their visitation, the gentlewoman was not well at ease, or she had companie with her, or she was not at home, that thei could no more speake with her, which tourned them both into a wonderfull agonie. The Doctor had thought she had forsaken hym for the love of the Lawyer: the Lawyer he thought asmuche by the Doctor; that, in the ende, not knowing otherwise how to spitte out their venime against her, they devised eache of them a letter, whiche thei sent her.

The first of these letters delivered unto her came from the Doctor, whiche letter he left unpointed of purpose, because that in the readyng of it it might bee poincted two waies, and made to seeme either to her praise or dispraise; but Mistres Doritie herself, in the readyng of it, poincted it as I have set it doune, and followeth in this sorte:

And who would have thought, Mistres Doritie, that for the loyng adverisementes given you by your frende, you could so lightly have shaken hym of, if I burdened you with any thynge that might seeme greevous unto you, thinke it was love that ledde me unto it, for that I protest inwardly in my mynde I never did esteeme you otherwise then for as honest a gentlewoman as lives this daie in Bridewell, I have heard saie some

have been scourged more upon evill will, then for any deserter whereof thei might justly be accused, so if it be my happe to suffer undeserved penaunce, I must impute it to my owne misfortune, but yet contrarie to my expectation, consideryng how I have ever taken you to be given in your conditions to practise unseemely, filthie, and detestable thynges: I, knowe you have ever abhorred to live chastly, decently, and orderly: you have ever been trained up to be wanton, proude, and incontinent: you never tooke delight in that was good, honest, or commendable: you wholie gave yourself to leudenesse, luste, and lecherie: you were an open enemie to vertue, a frende to vice. What should I saie? I doe but waste the tyme in the settynge of you forth, and therefore will leave you like as I founde you.

This letter brought Mistres Doritie into suche a furie, when she had perused it, that she sware, by no beggers, she would be so revenged upon the Doctor, that she would make hym a spectacle to all the phisitions in the worlde, how they should abuse an honest gentlewoman while thei lived. And in the middest of her melancholie, her dearest freende the Souldiour happened to come in, whom she made partaker of all her secrete, shewyng him the letter whiche Maister Doctor had sent her; and as thei were devisyng how to use revengemente, a messenger was knocking at the doore, to deliver a letter from the Lawyer, the tenure whereof followeth in this maner.

Maie this bee the rewarde of my true and faithfull love whiche so firmly I have borne thee! or is this the delight of thy dalliaunce, whiche so many tymes thou haste used with me? So careleslie to shake me of, as though I had committed some notable abuse, when in deede I have loved thee a greate deale more then I perceive thou art worthie of. Oh, feminine flatterie! O, fained faunyng! O, counterfet courtesie; O, depe dissimulation! But what hope is otherwise to be looked for

in these kites of Cressides kinde? or what constancie maie any man thinke to finde in a woman? No, no; if a man maie generally speake of their sexe, you shall never finde them but counterfeft in their courtesie, fained in their frendship, dissembling in their deedes, and in all their actions moste daungerous for men to deale withall: for if she have a faire face, it is ever matched with a cruell harte; their heavenly lookes with hellishe thoughtes; their modest countenaunces with mercilesse mindes; thei have witte, but it is in wiles; if thei love, it is too vehement; when thei hate, it is to the death. But, good God! with how many fopperies are thei accustomed to feede fooles! I meane suche as bee lovemakers and [suiter]s unto theim, whom thei delaie with as many devises as thei be in number that seekes to serve them. Some thei lure with lookes; some thei practise with promises; some thei feede with flattery; some thei delaie with daliance; some thei winde in with wiles; some thei keepe with kisses; some they diet with dissimulation. One must weare her glove, an other must weare her garter; another must weare her coulers; another shall weare the spoile of as muche as she can gette from all the reste by cousonage: and yet to see how daintie these darlynges wil seeme to those that be not acquainted with their customes were able to dash a young man out of countenaunce. I warrant you, thei can make it more nice then wise; more coie then comely; more fine then honest. And to whom doe thei make the matter most daungerous, but to them that deserfeth best to be rewarded? For where thei see a man that is drouned in affection towardes them, over hym thei will triumph, and can tell how to ride the foole without a snaffle: one while thei will crosse hym with froward language, then againe comfort hym with some fained looke. Now she drives hym into desperation with frounyng face; by and by she baites hym againe with banquettes of uncertaine hope: suche is their evill nature, (as I saie) that thei will shewe themselves moste squemishe and daintie to hym that loves them moste

entirely, and hym that seekes them least dishonestly, hym thei rewarde with their coldest courtesie. For better prooфе, lette a man seeke to winne one of these tender peeces that goes for a maide, honestly, and in the waie of mariage, and I warrant you she will make the matter more coye and nice to hym that meanes good earnest, then to an other that comes but to trie and prove them. And what signes of shamefastnesse will thei seeme to make, when a man doeth but touch them, fainyng themselves to be too young, when, indeede, if thei once past the age of fifteen yeres, (if thei were not afeard of breedyng of bugges in their beallie) by their good willes they would never be without the companie of a man. Thus to conclude, their nature is openly to scorne all men, bee their loves never so honest, and secretly to refuse no manne, be his luste never so leude. Full aptly did Salomon in his Proverbes compare you to wine, that can make us so dronken with your devises, that notwithstandingyng we see the snares with our eyes, whiche you have sette to entangle us, wee can not shunne the baite whiche wee knowe will breed our bane. Thus muche, Mistres Doritie, I have thought good to signifie unto you, whose discountisie at this tyme hath caused me so generally to enviae against your whole sexe, not otherwise mindyng to accuse yourself perticularly, knowing that if you should otherwise have used me then you have, you should have degressed and swarved quite from your kinde, and so I leave you.

Gentlewomen, I beseche you, forgive me my fault, in the publishing this infamous letter: I promise you, I doe but signifie it accordyng to the copie whiche this unhappy Lawyer sent to Mistres Doritie; and when I had well considered the blasphemie that he had used against your sexe, I cutte my penne all to peeces wherewith I did copie it out, and if it had not been for the hurtyng of myself, I promise you, I would have cutte and mangled my owne fingers, wherewith I held the penne while I was writyng of it: and trust me, accordyng to my

skill, I could well have founde in my harte to have encountred hym with an aunswere in your defence, but then I was interrupted by an other, as you shall well perceive. For the Soul diour, whiche you have heard spoken of, that was remainyng with Mistres Doritie, when he had perused this letter, was put into a wonderfull chafe, and in the middest of his furie he uttered these wordes.

Ah, moste vile and blasphemous beast ! what art thou, that with suche exclamations goest about to defame those whom by all honest humanitie and manhood we bee willed specially to love, honour, and reverence ? what art thou ? a man, a devill, or a subtil Lawyer ? Yea, surelie, and so thou maiest well bee ; and herein haste thou shewed thyself no whit at al to degresse from thy profession ; for as at the firste the lawes were constituted to minister justice, and to give every one his right, so now are thei made, by the practise of a nomber of pettie foggers, the instrumentes of all iniquitie and wrong. Even so that worthie sexe, whiche at the firste were given unto man by the Almightie God himself, to be his cheefest conforter and consolation, see here the practise of a wicked caitife, who with his eloquence would perswade us that thei were our greatest ruine and desolations. Ah, wicked wretche that thou art ! how thinkest thou to escape thus, to blowe forth thy blasphemie against those blessed ones whom God hath perfited above all other creatures ? For at their firste creation thei were made of the moste beste and purified mettall of mane, where man hymself was framed but of slime and drosse. What reason, then, that, beyng at the first framed moste pure and perfecte creatures, but that thei should continue their firste perfection to the ende of the worlde ? And like as at the first thei were made more excellent then man, where should wee now seeke for grace, vertue, and goodnesse, but onely in the feminine sexe, accordyng to their singuler creation.

I trust this is so evident, that there is no man able to denaie it, and enough to prove, that as women at the firste were cre-

ated moste perfecte, so they have still remained the storehouse of all grace, vertue; and goodnesse ; and that if there be anything founde in us men that is worthie of commendation, we are onely to give thankes to women, from whom wee receive it, as beyng descended from out their entrailes. But with how greate and manifolde miseries should wee men bee daily afflicted, were it not for the comforte wee finde at womens handes ? for, besides that by their industrie we be netified, made more clendly, and kept swete, who otherwise of our selves we should become to bee moste filthie and lothsome creatures, so at all tymes and seasons thei bee so necessarie and convenient aboute us, that it were impossible for us to bee without their blessed companies. First, in our health thei content us with their familiaritie ; in our sicknesse thei cherish us ; in our mirth thei make it more abounde ; in sorrowe their companie doeth beguile our pensive thoughtes ; in pleasure thei bee our cheefe delightes ; in paine their presence bredeth comfort to our grief; in wealth what greater treasure then to enjoye our beloved ; in want what greater wealth then a lovyng and faithfull wife ; in peace we labour still to get their likyng ; in warres thei make us shewe ourselves more valiaunt. But how is it possible that women should behave themselves, but that there are some wil finde faught with them ? first, if she be familiare, we judge her to be light ; if she seeme anything straunge in her conversation, Ah ! we saie, she is a daungerous dame ; if merrie, wee thinke her to be naught ; if sad, we saie she is more grave then honest ; if she bee talkative, we saie she is a tatlyng houswife ; if silent, we saie she is a sheepe ; if clendly in her apparell, we saie she is proude ; if plaine, or homely, we saie she is a doudie, or a slut ; if thei denaie us their curtesie when we sue unto them, wee saie thei be cruell tygers, beares, and bugges ; if thei have compassion of us, we discredit them amongst our companions.

But see here the cunnyng of a caitife, that would wreste the wordes of Salomon to the dispraise of women, because in his

Proverbes he compareth them to wine. But, to interprete the words of Salomon by Salomon himself, in an other place of the same Proverbes, he willett wine should bee given to comforde those that bee feeble and weake: now, compare these places together, and see what harme he hath doen to women; and in my opinion he could not more aptly have made a comparison, for as wine is a comforde to those that are feeble and weake, so are women our greatest solace both in sicknesse and in health: but if any wil saie that wine maketh us dronken, and from reasonable men to become more brute then beastes, I aunswere, that the faught is not to be imputed to the wine, but to the beastliness of him that taketh more then enough; for there is nothyng so precious for our behoofes, but by our own abuse we make it seeme most vile and lothsome: and thus graunting Maister Lawyer his comparison to be true, he hath doen little hurt, savyng he hath shewed hymself a diligent scholler to his maister the devill, who is father of all lyes, in maintainyng so manifest a lye against suche harmlesse creatures.

There were many other speeches pronounced by this soul diour in behaufl of women, whiche I have forgot to recite; but I pray, gentlewomen, how like you by this soul diour? doe you not thynke hym worthie a sargantes fee for his aunswere? In my opinion you ought to love soul diours the better for his sake.

But to retourne to Mistres Doritie. Those two letters had so vexed her, that there was nothing in her minde but how she might be revenged. Her freende the soul diour promised for her sake, that he would so cudgill bothe Maister Doctor and the Lawier, that thei should not, in one moneth after, be able to lift their armes to their heds, savyng he wist not how to get them into a place convenient, for y<sup>t</sup> it was dangerous to deale with them in the open streates: Mistres Doritie, givyngh hym twentie kisses for his courtesie, tolde him she would devise to bryng them into some place where he might worke his will.

Presently after Mistres Doritie sent for Maister Doctor, whom she knewe very well how to handle, and in a milde maner she began greatly to blame hym, that beyng wise, as she knewe hym to be, would so rashly judge of her; for that he might well know that there was some greate cause that moved her to use hym as she had doen, otherwise then he had conjectured: and thus with many other like speeches, she so smoothed the matter with Maister Doctor, that she made hym beleeve her housbande had some suspition in their familiaritie, and that by his commaundement she had abstained his companie for a tyme: the which, Maister Doctor, (q. she) I did for no evill will that I beare you, but for a tyme to bleare my housbandes eyes, thinkyng in the ende so to have handled the matter, that we might have continued our accustomed freendship without any maner of suspition; and then drawyng forthe the letter whiche the Doctor had sent her (she said), But see, Maister Doctor, your good opinion conceived in me: loe! here the reward that I have for my courtesie bestowed of you, thus to raile and rage against me, as though I were the moste notable strumpet in a countrey.

The Doctour, knowyng in what forme he had wright the letter, and desirous againe to renue his late acquaintaunce, aunswered, that he never writte letter unto her, whereby he had given any occasion for her to take any greef. No have? (q. Mistres Doritie) read you then heare your owne lines; takyng hym the letter, which the Doctor, as I told you before, had lefte unpointed, and therefore in the readyng he pointed it after this maner:—

And who would have thought (Mistres Doritie) that for the lovyng advertisementes given you by your freende, you could so lightly have shaken hym of? If I burdened you with any thing that might seme greevous unto you, thinke it was love that ledde me unto it, for that I protest inwardlie in my minde, I did never esteeme you otherwise then for as honest a gentlewoman as lives this daie. In Bridwell, I have

heard saie, some have been scourged more upon evill will, then for any desertes whereof thei might justly be accused ; so if it be my hap to suffer undeserved penaunce, I muste impute it to mine owne misfortune, but yet contrarie to my expectation, consideryng how I have ever taken you to be given in your conditions. To practise unseemly, filthie, and detestable thinges, I knowe you have ever abhorred ; to live chastlie, decently, and orderly, you have ever bin trained up ; to be wanton, proude, and incontinent, you never tooke delight ; in that was good, honest, or commendable, you wholie gave yourself ; to leudnesse, luste, and lecherie, you were an open enemie ; to vertue a freende ; to vice—what should I saie ? I dooe but waste the tyme in the settynge of you foorth, and therefore will leave you like as I founde you.

I pracie you, Mistres Doritie (q, the Doctor) where is this railyng and ragyng you speake of ? I truste, I have written nothing that might discontent you. Mistres Doritie, perceiving the knaverie of the Doctour, and seyng the matter fell out so fitte for her purpose, first givynge him a freendly busse, she said, “ Alas ! my deare freend, I confesse I have trespassed in misconstertyng of your lines ; but forgive me, I pracie you, and now have compassion of her, whose love towarde you is suche, that it is impossible for me to live without your good likyng ; and seyng that my housebandes jelousie is so muche, that you can have no longer accesse to my house but it must needes come to his eare by suche spie and watche as he hath laied, neither my self can goe abroade to any place, but I am dogged and followed by suche as he hath appointed ; but now if your love bee but halfe so muche towardes me as I trust I have deserved, and hereafter doe meane to requite, I have alreadie devised a meane how for ever I might enjoye my desired freend, without either lette or molestation of any one, seeme he never so muche to be offended at the matter.

The Doctor, the gladdest man in the worlde to heare these newes, aunswered. And what is it, then, that should make you

stagger, or doubt of the frendship of your lovyng Doctor? no, not if thereby I should hazard the losse both of life and goodes.

Alas! (q, Mistres Doritie) God defende I should worke you so greate a prejudice; and I beseeche you use no more such speeches unto me, that I should goe about to put you into any suche perill, the remembraunce whereof is more greevous unto me, then if I had felte the force of a thousande deathes: and now behold my determination, and what I have devised. You have a house not farre hence, standyng in the feeldes, whiche you keepe for your solace and recreation in the tyme of sommer: to this house I have devised how you maie so secretly conveigh me, that you maie there keepe me at your pleasure to your owne use, and to my greate contentation, where I maie at pleasure enjoye hym, more dearely beloved unto me then the baales of myne owne eyes.—And here withall she gave him other Judas' kisse, that the Doctor desired her of all freendship not to bee long in her determination, for that he was readie to followe her direction whensoever it would please her to commaunde; yea, if it were presently, he was readie.

Mistres Doritie, who had driven the matter to that passe she looked for, saied: Naie, Maister Doctour, there resteth yet an other thyng: my housebandes jelousie (as I tolde you) is suche, that there muste bee greate circumspection used in the conveighyng me awaie, and therefore give eare to that I have devised. I have in my house a certaine male with stiffe, that is left with me to bee sent by the carriers into the countrie, whereof my housbande doeth knowe verie well: this stiffe I will cause to bee secretly taken forthe, and to bee sent to the carrier's trust up in some other thing, without any knowledge to any, savyng to my maide, that shall worke this feate herself, whose trustinesse I knowe to bee suche, as there is no suspition to be had in the matter: the whiche, when she hath doen, she shall trusse up me in the same male; then, see

that you faile not, to morowe in the evenyng, about eight of the clocke, disguised in a porter's weede, to come to my house to enquire for the same male, whiche you shall saie you will beare to the carrier's. My maide, who shall of purpose bee readie to waite for your commyng at the houre, shall make no bones to deliver you this male; and thus, without either doublte or jealousie of any one, you maie carrie me into the feeldes, where for your better ease you maie take me forthe, and disguisynge ourselves wee maie walke together to your house aforesaied, where I maie remaine, without any maner of suspition or knowledge to any, so long as it shall please yourself.

O, moste excellent devise! (q, the Doctor). I have this matter alreadie at my fingers endes, and I warrant you, you shall see me plaie the porter so cunnynglie, that how many so ever I meete, there shall none of them be able to suspect me. Thus, with a fained kisse that she againe bestowed of hym, for that tyme thei departed.

Mistres Doritie in like maner sent for the Lawyer, whom she handeled in like sorte as she had doen the Doctor, makynge hym beleeve that her housebandes jealousie was such, as she durst no more come in his companie; but of herself she loved him so entirely, that she would hazard any thynge for his sake: and because he should the better beleeve it, to morrowe (q, she) in the afternoone, my housebande will be forthe of the dores, wherefore I pracie you faile not aboute three of the clocke to come and visite me, when we shall have leisure to disporte ourselvēs to our better contention. Many like enticyng wordes she used, whiche so perswaded the Lawier, then dreadyng no badde mesure at all, he promised her not to faile, but he would keepe his hower; and thus departed, verie joyfull that he had againe recovered his mistres. And the nexte daie, even as it had stroke three of the clocke, he was knockyng at the doore of this gentlewoman, who, looking for his commyng, was readie to receive him, and up thei

goe together to a chamber, whiche she had appointed for the purpose, where for a tyme she dalied hym of with devices, and sodainly her maide (accordyng as her mistres had given her instructions) came hastily to the chamber doore, callyng her mistres, saiyng that her maister was come in, and had asked for her.

Mistres Doritie, who was not to learne to plaie her parte, seemed to be striken into a wonderful feare. Alas ! (q, she to the Lawier) for the love of God keepe yourself secret for a tyme, that I maie goe doun and ridde hym awaie, if it be possible : and thus goyng her waie doun, she shuttes the doore after her.

The Lawier, who was readie to bewraie hym self for feare, crepte under the bedde, where she lette hym alone the space of an hower ; and then commyng up into the chamber, and could not see hym, she beganne to muse what was become of hym. He, hearyng one was come in at the chamber doore, beganne to prie out under the beddes feete, and perceivynge by the skirt of her gounе who it was, with a faint voice he said, Alas ! my deare, what newes ? is your housebande gone ?

Ah, my lovyng freende ! (q, she) I was never so hardlie beset sith I was borne : my housebande is come home with three or fower of his frendes whiche he mette withall in the citie, and bee come out of the countrey of purpose to make merrie with hym, and here thei bee appoyneted this night to suppe, and hether bee come to their beddes so long as thei remaine in the citie, and this chamber is appoyneted for twoo of them to lye in, that for my life I knowe not what shifte to make, nor how to conveigh you hence.

Alas ! (q, the Lawier) then am I utterly undooen : for the love of God devise some meanes to conveigh me out of the house, for I would not remaine all night in this perplexitie, no, not for all the golde in the worlde.

Mistres Doritie, makynge a little pause, sodainlie, as though she had an invention but even then come into her hedde, she

said; I have this onely remedie left: here is in the house a male full of stuffe, whiche should this night be sent to the carriers; my devise is therefore to take forthe the stuffe, and laie it aside till somtyme the next weake, when I will make shift to sende the stuffe awaie verie well, and you shall be presently packed up in this male, whiche my maide shall doe while I am below with my husebande and his freendes, and so causyng a porter to be sent for, he shall carrie you to your chamber, or to any other place where it shall please yourself, so that my husebande seeyng this male got forthe of doores, will thinke it is the stuffe whiche he knoweth this night should be sent.

No better devise in the worlde (q. the Lawier) and let the porter conveigh this male to my chamber, you knowe where, and deliver it to my manne, as sent from his maister, and will hym to give hym fourtie pence for his labour.

The matter thus determined, Mistres Doritie sent up her maide with this emptie male, wherein she trussed up the Lawier, and there she left hym, lyng from five of the clocke untill it was past eight, and in the sommer season. The weather beyng verie hotte, the Lawier had like to have been smothered, where he laye at the length. Accordyng to pointemente comes Maister Doctour, disguised like a right porter, with a longe gaberdine doun to the calfe of his legges, and he enquires for a male that should goe to the carriers. Yea, Marie (q. the maide), if you please to come in, it is ready for you. The Doctor, beeyng a good sturdie lubber, tooke up the male verie easily, for feare of brusyng the gentlewoman's tender ribbes, whom he had thought he had upon his backe, and thus forthe of dores he goes, takyng the next waie towardes his lodgyng.

Mistres Doritie, with her beloved soldiour (whom she had made privie to her devise), stooede where she might see Mais-ter Doctor, in his porter's weede, goyng with his carriage; whereat, when thei had a while sported themselves, the soul-

diour folowed Maister Doctor an easie pase, but onely to kepe the sight of hym ; and the Doctour he tooke his waie through the streetes with a maine pase, till he had recovered the feeldes, where lookyng aboute hym, to see what companie was stirryng, sawe no bodie neare hym but the souldiour, whom he did not knowe, and then crossyng the waie from the common pathes, he came to the side of a bancke, and beyng wearie (as he was not to be blamed, consideryng the knavishe burthen that he had borne uppon his backe), he, layng doun the male tenderlie uppon the side of the bancke, seeyng nobodie but the souldiour, who was but a little distance from hym, saied, Ah ! my sweete wenche, I can see no creature stirryng in al the feeldes but one manne, which is commyng this waie, who so soone as he is paste, I will undoe the male.

The Lawier in the male, when he felt the porter lay hym doun, was in a good hope that he had been in his owne chamber, but hearyng by these speeches that he was in the feeldes, began to conjecture assuredly that the porter had spoken those wordes to some woman that was in his companie, with whom he was confederate, for the stealyng of suche thinges as thei should finde in the male, and that when thei should open the male, and finde hym there, thei would not sticke to cut his throte, for feare least he should bewraie them, and for the onely spoile of suche thynges as he had about hym, that the Lawier was in suche a perplexitie that he wiste not for his life what he might doe : one while he had thought to have cried out for helpe ; then he thought it would the soner bryng hym to his ende ; and as he continued thus in the middest of his muse the souldiour was come to the place, and speakyng to the Doctor he saied : Porter, it seemeth thou haste been knavishly loden, for I perceive thou art very hot ; but what hast thou in thy male, I pracie thee, that thou art carriyng this waie so late in the evenyng ? Marie (q, the Doctor) I have ware there, suche as it is. Hast thou ware, knave ? (q, the Souldiour) is that a sufficiente aunswere ? What ware is

it? mennes ware, or women's ware? Sir, I knoe not (q, the porter), I have but the carriyng of it to a gentleman's house that is here hard by. Well (q, the Souldiour), undoe your trusse, for I will see what wares you have there before you and I depart. Why, sir (q, the porter), should I be so bolde to undoe a gentleman's male, that is delivered me in trust to be caried? No, sir, you shall pardon me, if you were my father. And herewithall he tooke the male upon his backe, and beganne to goe his waies; but the Souldiour, knowyng better what was in the male then the porter hymself that carried it, and beeyng provided for the purpose with a good cudgell, let drive halfe a dozen bloes at the male, as it laie upon his backe, so surely, that the Lawier cries out, Alas! alas! alas!—Why, porter (q, the Souldiour), have you quicke wares in your male: no mervaise, you were so daintie in the shewyng of it.

Here withall the Doctor laied doun his male, and kneelyng doun to the Souldiour, said, Ah, sir! for the love of God bee content, and I will not let to confesse the whole truthe unto you. I have a gentlewoman in my male, whiche I have stolne from her housebande, and seyng you to be a gentleman, but yong in yeres, and impossible but that you should love the companie of a faire woman, beholde I will deliver her unto you to use at your pleasure, and when you shall see tyme to restore her unto me againe, desiryng you, sir, of all courtesie, to seeke no other displeasure against us. You have saied well (q, the Souldiour); but is she suche a one as is to bee liked, faire, freshe, and yong? Trust me, sir (q, the Doctor), if she bee not as faire and well likyng as any dame within the walles of this citie, make me an example to all other how thei shall dissemble with a gentleman suche as you are. Thou saiest well (q, the Souldiour), and now I thinke long till I have a sight of this paragon, whiche thou haste so praised unto me. You shall see her straight, sir (q, the Doctor): and here withall he began to unlase the male with great expe-

dition ; whiche, when he had unlosed at the one ende, that he might come to the sight of this gentlewoman's face (as he had thought), he saied to the Soldiour, See here the sight whiche you so muche desire ! and pullyng the ende of the male open with his handes, the Lawier thruste forthe his hedde, and looked with suche a piteous countenaunce, as though he had been readie to bee tourned of the ladder ; but the Doctor, seyng a face to appeare with a long beard, was in suche a maze, that he could not tell in the worlde what he might saie. The Souldiour, who had never more adoe then to forbeare laughter, to see how these twoo, the one beheld the other, saied to the Doctor : And is this the faire gentlewoman whiche thou hast promised me ? Haste thou no bodie to mocke but me, that with suche commendations thou givest praise to a woman, whereby to set my teeth an edge, and then in the ende thus to delude me ? But I will teache thee how to plaike the knave againe while thou livest. And here withall he layed on with his cudgell, sparyng neither hedde, shoulders, armes, backe, nor breast ; and so he bumbasted the Doctor, that for the space of a quarter of a yere after, he was not able to lift an urinall so hye as his hedde.

The Lawier, who had nothyng out of the male but his hedde, seyng this fraie, struggeled so muche as he could to have gotte forthe, and to have runne awaie, while the porter was a beatyng ; but it would not bee, his armes were so surely laced doun by his sides, that for his life he could not gette them forthe.

The Souldiour, when he had throughly requited Maister Doctour's knaverie that he had used against his beloved mistres in his letter, left hym, and beganne to bende hymself towardes the Lawier. The Lawier, seyng the Souldiour commyng, had thought verely that he had been some good fellowe that was walkyng there so late, to have taken some prey, said : O sir ! for the love of God spare my life, and take my purse : to whom the Souldiour aunswere : Naie, villaine, my commyng

is neither to take thy life nor thy purse, but to minister revengemente for thy large speeches, whiche, like a discourteous wretche, thou haste used against a woman : and there with all laied upon hym so long as he was able to fetch any breath, and then callyng the porter unto hym, he saied : Let these wordes whiche I minde to speake suffice for a warnyng to you bothe : if ever I maie learne that any of you, hereafter this, do use any misdemeanure towardes any woman, either by word or writyng, assure your selves, that although I have but dallied with you at this tyme, I wil devise some one meane or other to minister revenge, that all suche as you bee shall take an example by you. And thus I leave you ; goyng his waie to his sweete harte, tellyng her the whole discourse how he had spedde, by whom he was welcomed with a whole laste of kisses, &c.

And now to retourne to those twoo that were lefte in the feedes, as you have heard. The Doctor, takyng good vewe of the Lawyer, knewe hym verie well, but the Doctor was so disguised in his porter's apparrell, that the Lawyer did not knowe hym, but saied unto hym : A mischeef light of all suche porters, that when thei be put in truste with carriages into the citie, will bryng them into the feedes to such banquettes as these ! Marie, (q, the Doctor) a mischeef take all suche burthens, that when a manne hath almoste broken his backe with bearyng them, and then shall receive such a recompence for his labour as I have doen ! Villaine ! (q, the Lawyer) why diddest thou not beare me to my chamber, as thou wert willed when thou diddest receive me ? I would I had carried thee to the gallowes (q, the Doctor) so I had escaped this scouryng ; but I perceive this banquette was prepared for us bothe. And here withall with much adoe he got of the porter's coate, and making himself knowne to the Lawyer, eache of them conferred with the other, how cunnyngly thei had been dealt withall, and did thinke it not beste for them any farther to deale in the matter, for feare of farther mischeef ; but with much adoe got them

home, where the Lawier kept his bedde very long after. But the Doctor tooke sparmaceti, and suche like thynges that bee good for a bruse, and recovered hymself in a shorte space.

Now, it fell out afterwardes, that this Souldiour, who lived in greate credite with Mistres Doritie, (as he had well deserved) was employed in the kynges warres against forraine fooes, with a greate number of others, where he spent his life in his princes quarrell ; and Mistres Doritie, sorrowing a long tyme the losse of so faithfull a freende, seeyng the diversitie of men, that she had made her choise emongst three, and had found but one honest, feared to fall into any further infamie, contented herself to live orderly and faithfully with her housband al the rest of her life : and her housebande, who never understoode any of these actions, loved her dearely to his diying daie.

And now to saie somethyng of the other brother and his wife, whiche as you have heard was suche a notable scold, that her housebonde could never enjoy good daie, nor merie houre. She was suche a devill of her tongue, and would so crossebithe hym with suche tauntes and spightfull quippes, as if at any tyme he had been merrie in her companie, she would tell hym his mirthe proceaded rather in the remembraunce of that she had brought hym, then for any love that he had to herself. If he were sadde, it was for greef she was not dedde, that he might enjoye that she had. If he used to goe abroad, then he had been spending of that he never gotte himself. If he taried at home, she would saie it was happie he had gotten suche a wife, that was able to keepe hym so idelly. If he made any provision for good cheare, or to fare well in his house, she would bid hym spende that whiche he hymself had brought. If he shewed hymself to bee sparyng, then she would not pinche of that whiche was her owne. Thus, doe what he could, all that ever he did was taken in the worste parte ; and seyng that by no maner of faire meanes he was able to reclaime her, in the

ende he devised this waie : hymself, with a trustie freend that he made of his counsaill, gotte and pinioned her armes so faste, that she was not able to undoe them, and then putting her into an old peticoate, which he rent and tattered in peeces of purpose, and shakynge her heire loose about her eyes, tare her smocke sleeves, that her armes were all beare, and scratching them all over with a bramble, that the bloud followed, with a greate chaine about her legge, wherewith he tied her in a darke house that was on his backside, and then callyng his neibours about her, he would seeme with greate sorrowe to lament his wifes distresse, telling them that she was sodainly become lunatique ; whereas, by his geasture, he tooke so greate greefe, as though he would likewise have runne madde for companie. But his wife (as he had attired her) seemed in deede not to be well in her wittes ; but, seeyng her housebandes maners, shewed her self in her conditions to bee a right Bedlem : she used no other wourdes but cursynges and banninges, criyng for the plague and the pestilence, and that the devill would teare her housbande in peeces. The companie that were about her, thei would exhorte her, Good neighbour, forget these idle speeches, which doeth so muche distemper you, and call upon God, and he will surely helpe you.—Call upon God for help ? (q, the other) wherein should he helpe me, unlesse he would consume this wretche with fire and brimstone ? other helpe I have no need of. Her housebande, he desired his neighbours, for God's love, that thei would helpe him to priae for her ; and thus, altogether kneeling doun in her presence, he beganne to saie, Miserere, whiche all theie saied after him ; but this did so spight and vexe her, that she never gave over her railyng and ragyng againste them all. But in the ende, her houseband, who by this shame had thought to have reclaimed her, made her to become from evil to worse, and was glad hymself, in the ende, cleane to leave, and to get hymself from her into a straunge countrey, where he consumed the rest of his life.

Thus to conclude, besides the matter that I meane to prove, menne maie gather example here, when they goe a wivyng, not to chose for beautie without vertue, nor for riches without good conditions. There be other examples, if thei be well marked, worth the learning, both for men and women, whiche I leave to the discretion of the reader.

## OF GONSALES AND HIS VERTUOUS WIFE AGATHA.

### THE ARGUMENT OF THE SIXT HISTORIE.

*Gonsales, pretending to poison his vertuous wife for the love of a courtesane, craved the helpe of Alonso, a scholer, somethyng practised in phisicke, who, in the steade of poysen, gave hym a pouder, whiche did but bryng her in a sounde sleepe duryng certayne houers ; but Gonsales, judgyng (in deede) that his wife had been dedde, caused her immediately to be buried. The scholer againe, knowyng the operation of his poulder, for the greate love he bare to Agatha, went to the vault where she was entombed, about the horcer that he knewe she should awake ; when, after some speeches used betweene theim, he carried her home to his owne house, where she remained for a space. In the meane tyme, Gonsales, beeyng married to his courtisane, was by her accused to the Governour for the poisoning of his first wife ; whereof being apprehend, he confessed the facte, and was therefore judged to dye, whiche beyyng knowne to Agatha, she came to the Judge, and clearyng her housbande of the crime, thei lived together in perfect peace and amitie.*

There was sometyme in the citie of Siville, in Spaine, a gentilman named Gonsales, who, though he were a man of yeares sufficient to be staied, and to give over the wanton pranckes of youthfull follie, yet was he by nature so enclined to followe his lustes, and withall so variable and so unconstant, that he suffered hymself to be ruled wholy by his passions, and measured all his doyng rather by his delights and pleasures

then by sounde discourse, and rule of reason. This gentleman, fallyng in love with a gentlewoman of the saied citie, whose name was Agatha, sought all the meanes he could to have her to wife ; and her freendes, although thei were well enough enformed of the disposition of Gonsales, wherby thei might have feared the entreatie of their kinswoman, for that thei knewe him very riche, and her dowrie not to be very greate, thei were well content to bestowe her uppon hym, and thought that thei had in so doyng placed her very well. But, before the first yere after their marriage was fullie expired, Gonsales, followyng his wonted humour, and waxing wearie of love, grewe to desire chaunge, givyng thereby a notable example for women to learne, how little it is to their commoditie, or quiet, to matche themselves to suche that be rather riche then wise ; and how muche it were better for them to bee married to men then to their goodes.

For, beeynge come to sojourne, in that streate wherein he dwelt [lived] a notable courtesane, who to the outward shewe was verie faire, though inwardly she was moste foule, as she that under a goodlie personage did cover a wicked and dangerous minde, corrupted with all vices, as for the moste part all suche women doen. It was Gonsales chaunce to be one of the first that fell into those snares, whiche she had sette for suche simple men's mindes, as haunte after the exteriour appearance of those thynges whiche their senses make them to delight in, and not considering the daunger whereunto thei commit themselves, by followyng of their disordinate appetites, doe suffer themselves to be entrapped by suche leude dames : emong whiche this, forsoothe, was one that was of singular skill to captive men's mindes, whiche by experience and by the naturall disposition of her mynde, bent wholie to deceipte and naughtinesse, had learned a thousand giles and artes, which waie to allure men with the plesauntnesse of her baites. Wherfore, after he was once entangled with her snares, he fell so farre beyond all rea-son and past all belief, to dote upon this strumpet, that he

would finde no reste, nor no contentment, but so long as he was with her.

But she, beeyng as dissolute a dame as any lived in the world, and as greedie likewise of gaine as ever any was of her profession, would not content herself with Gonsales alone, but yeelded unto as many as list to enjoye her, if thei came with their handes full, and spared for no coste to reward her liberrallie. Whiche thyng was unto hym, that was so besotted on her, so greevous and so intollerable, that nothyng could be more.

There was at that same tyme a scholer in the citie that studied phisicke, with whom Gonsales had familiar acquaintaunce ; and the Scholler thereby havyng accesse and conversation in his house, beganne so fervently to be in love with Agatha, his wife, that he desired nothing so earnestly in the worlde as to enjoye her, and to winne her good will. Wherefore, havyng (as I have said) free accesse to her house, and to declare his affection unto her without suspition, he ceased not by al the meanes he was able to devise to sollicite and to procure her to yeelde unto his desire. With his endevour and earneste suite, although it were unto Agatha noysome and displeaunt, as she that was disposed to kepe herself honest, and that she could in that respecte have been very glad that he would forbeare to frequent her house, yet knowyng her housebande to be a man of no verie greate substaunce, and but slenderly stuffed in the hedpeece, and that he delighted greatly in the familiaritie of the Scholler, she forced herself to endure with pacience the importunate molestation whiche he still wearied her withall ; takyng from hym, neverthelesse, all hope to obtaine at any tyme any favour at her handes, and cuttyng hym shorte from all occasions as muche as she could, whereby he might have cause either to molest her, or to looke for anything to proceade from her that were lesse then honest.

The Scholer, perceivynge that his owne travaile to win her affection was but labour loste, thought best to trie, if by the

allurment or perwasion of any other, he might haply move her to shew herself more courteous and favourable unto him. Wherefore, having founde out an olde mother Elenour, a disciple of the Spanishe Celestina, such a one as was most cunnyng and skilfull in mollifyng of women's mindes, to worke them afterwarde to receive the impressions of their lovers, he caused her to take acquaintaunce of Agatha, and by degrees (as though she had been moved with pittie and compassion of her case) to declare unto her the love which her housband bare unto the courtisane, and to shewe her how unworthie he was that she should be true unto hym. And in the end, passyng from one speech to an other, she saied plainly unto her, that it was a greate follie, since her housebande did take his pleasures abroade with other women, to stande to his allowances, and to take the leavyng of his strumpets, and therewith to bee content; and that, if she were in her case, and had a houseband that would strike with the sworde, she would undoubtedly re-quite hym, and strike with the scabberde: so she counselled her to doe likewise.

Agatha, beyng a very discrete gentlewoman, and lovyng her housebande as an honest woman ought to doe, saied to her in aunswere of her talke, that she would bee right glad to see her housebande to be such a man as she wished hym to be and as he ought to be; but that since she sawe it would not be, and that he could not frame hymself thereto, she would not take from hym or barre hym of that libertie, whiche either the custome of the corrupted worlde, or the priviledge that men had usurped unto themselves, had given unto them, and that she would never, for her part, violate or breake that faithe whiche she had given hym, nor slacke or neglect that care and regarde of her honour whiche all women by kinde and nature ought to have, as the thing that maketh them to bee most commended throughout the worlde, let her housebande doe what he list, and like and love as many other women as pleased hym. And that she thought herself so muche the rather bounde so to doe,

because he did not in the rest misuse her any waie, or suffer her to want anything that reasonably she could desire or crave at his hands ; and for that she had not brought hym in effect any other dowrie, worthie to bee accompted of, then her honestie : wherefore, she was fully resolved never to varie from that constant resolution. And finally, shewyng herself somewhat moved and stirred with choler, she tolde her that she marvailed at her not a little (that beyng a woman of those yeres) that she should rather reprehend and chide yong folke, if she should see them so bent, then encourage them to evill, and mused much she could finde in her harte to give her such counsell ; whiche she assured her was so displeasant and so ungrateful, as if from henceforthe she durst presume to speake thereof any more, she would make her understande, perchaunce to her smarte, how ill she could awaie with suche pandarly practises.

This olde hag, havyng had her head washed thus without sope, departed from Agatha, and came unto the Scholler and tolde hym in breefe how ill she had sped, and in what sorte the honest gentlewoman had closed her mouth ; whereof the Scholler was very sory : yet, for all this, he thought he would not give over his pursute, imagining that there is no harte so harde or flintie, but by long love, by perseverance, praier, and teares, maie in the ende be mollified and wrought to be tender.

In this meane season, Gonsales, still continuynge his olde familiaritie with the Scholler, and havyng made hym privie of the love he bare unto the courtisane, and what a greefe it was unto him to see her enjoyed by any other then by himself, one daie, among other talke betwene them of that matter, he saied unto the Scholler, that it never grieved hym so muche to have a wife as it did then, for that if he had bin unmarried, he would have taken Aselgia (for so was the courtisane named) to be his wife, without whom he could finde no rest nor quiete in mynde ; and so long as every man hath a share with hym in her, he accompted himself as ill as if he had had no parte in

her at all: and thereto saied further, that assuredly if it were not for feare of the lawe, he would ease hymself of that burden by riddynge of Agatha out of the worlde.

Thereunto replied the Scholer, saiynge, that in deede it was a grievous thyng for a gentleman to be combred with a wife whom he could not finde in his harte to love; and that in such a case, he that did seeke the best waie he could to deliver hymself of that yoke, was not altogether unexcusible, though the rigor of justice had appointed severe punisshementes for such as violentlie should attempt or execute any such thyng: but that men, that were wise, could well enough finde out the meanes whiche waie to woorke their ententes, without incurryng any daunger of the lawe for the matter.

Whiche language, indeede, he used unto hym but to feede his humour, and to see whereunto that talke in fine would tende, and accordyng to his desire, before it was long, Gonsales, havyng used the like speeches twoo or three tymes, and still findyng hym to soothe his saiynge, tooke one daie a good harte unto him, and brake his minde unto the Scholer at large, and in plaine termes, to this effecte.

Alonso, (for that was the scholer's name) I doe assure myself, and make full accompt, that thou art my faste freende, as I am thyne, and I doubt not but that the freendship whiche is betweene us, doeth make thee no lesse sorie then myself to see me greeve with this continuall trouble of mynde wherein I live, because I can not compasse to take this woman whom I love so dearely to bee my wife, and by that meanes come to have the full possession of her unto myself, whiche is the thyng I doe desire above all other thinges in the worlde. And for as muche as I dooe perswade myself that by thy meanes, and with the helpe of thy profession, I maie happ to finde some remedie for my greef, I have thought good to tell thee a conceit whiche I have thought on often tymes, wherein I meane to use thee and thy assistance for the better accomplishyng of my purpose in that behalfe, assuryng myself that thou wilte

not refuse or denie me any furtheraunce that thy skill maie aforde me, or shrinke and drawe backe from the performyng of any frendly offer, whereby I maie come by to finde some ease of minde, and be delivered of that intollerable torment of spirite wherewith I am oppressed, for the love of this Aselgia, in whom I have fixed and sette all my joyes and delights. Thou shalte, therefore, understande that I am determined, as soone as I can possible, to ridde my handes of Agatha my wife, and by one meane or other to cause her to dye. And I have been a this good while about the execution of this my entent; but because I could never yet devise the beste waie to performe it, so that her death might not bee laied unto my charge, I haue delaied it hetherto, and perforce contente to beare the heavie burthen of my greeved mynde till nowe, whiche henceforwarde I am resolved to beare no longer, if thou wilt, accordyng to my trust in thee and as the frendship whiche is betweene us doeth require, graunt me thy fartherance and helpyng hande. Wherefore, knowyng that through thy long studie in phisicke thou haste attained so greate knowledge, that thou canst devise a noumber of secretes, whereof any one might bee sufficiente to bryng my purpose to effecte, I dooe require thee to fulfill my desire in that behalfe, and to give me thy helpe to bryng this my desire to passe: whiche if thou doe, I will acknowledge myself so long as I shall live to bee so muche bounde unto thee, that thou shalt commaunde me and all that I have, in any occasion of thine, as freelie and as boldlie as thou maiest now any thing that is thine owne.

The Scholer, when he had heard Gonsales and his demaunde, stooode still awhile, as musyng upon the requeste, and in the meane while discoursed with hymself, how by the occasion of this entente and resolution of Gonsales he might perhappes finde out a waie to come by the possession of Agatha, and to have her in his handes and at his devotion. But, keepyng secrete his thoughtes and meanyng, he made hym aunswere, that true it was that he wanted not secrete compassions, to

make folke dye with poison, so as it could never bee discerned by any phisition or other, whether the cause were violent or no, but that for twoo respectes he thought it not good to yeeld unto his requeste : the one, for that phisicke and phisitions were appointed in the worlde, not to bereve menne of their lives, but to preserve them and to cure them of such diseases as were daungerous and perillous unto theim : the other, because he did forsee in what jeoperdie he should putte his owne life, whensoever he should dispose hymself to woorke any such practise, consideryng how severely the lawes have prescribed punishmentes for such offences : and that it might fall out, how warely soever the thing were wrought, that by some sel-dome or unlooked for accident the matter might be discovered, (as for the moste parte it seemeth that God will have it) in whiche case he were like to encurre no lesse daunger then Gonsales, and bothe (assured) without remission to lose their lives. And that, therefore, he would not for the first respect take upon hym to doe that whiche was contrarie to his profession ; nor for the seconde, hazarde his life to so certaine a daunger, for so hatfull a thing as those practises are to all the worlde.

Gonsales, verie sorie to heare his deniall, told hym that the lawes and dueties of freendship doeth dispense well enough with a manne, though for his freende he straine sometyme his conscience ; and, therefore, he hoped that he would not forsake hym in a cause that concerned hym so weightilie as that did. And that neither of those twoo respectes (if thei were well considered) ought to bee able to remove hym from pleasureyng of his freende ; for that now adaies, aswell were they accompted and estemed phisitions that killed their pacientes, as thei that did cure them : and because the thing beyng kept secret betweene them twoo alone, he needed not to doubt, or feare any daunger of his life by the lawe ; for if it should by any mischaunce happen that he should bee imputed or burthened with poisonyng of his wife, he assured hym that he would never, whilst he had breathe, confesse of whom he had

the poison, but would rather suffer his tongue to be pulled out of his hedde, or endure any torment that might be devised.

The Scholler, at the laste, seemyng to bee wonne by the earneste of his petition, saied, that upon that condition and promesse of not revealynge him at any tyme, he would be content rather to shewe hymself freendlie unto hym, then a true professor of his science, or an exact regarder of his conscience, and that he would doe as he would have hym.

And, havyng lefte Gonsales verie glad and joyfull for that his promesse, he went home, and made a certaine composition or mixture of pouders, the vertue whereof was such, that it would make them that tooke any quantitie thereof to slepe so soundlie, that thei should for the space of certaine howers seme unto all menne to bee starke dedde. And the nexte daie he retourned to Gonsales, and to deliver it unto hym, saiying : Gonsales, you have caused me to dooe a thyng I proteste I would not dooe it for my life ; but since you maie see, thereby, that I have regarded more your freendshippe then my duetie, or the consideration of that whiche is honest and lawfull, I muste require you eftsones to remember your promesse, and that you will not declare to any creature living, that you have had this poison of me.

Whiche thinge Gonsales verie constauntlie upon his othe did promise hym againe ; and havyng taken the pouder of him, asked hym in what sorte he was to use it ? . And he tolde hym, that if at supper he did caste it there upon her meate, or into her brothe, she should dye that night followyng, without either paine or torment, or any greevous accidentes, but goe awaie even as though she were asleape. That evenyng, at supper tyme, Gonsales failed not to put the pouder into his wife's potage, who havyng taken it, as sone as supper was doen, feelyng herself verie heavie and drousie, went to her chamber and gatte her to bedde, (for she laie not with Gonsales but when he liste to call her, whiche had been verie seldom, since he did fall into love with the strumpet) and, within an

hower after, the operation of the pouder tooke suche force in her bodie, that she laye as though she had been dedde, and altogether sencelesse. Gonsales, in like sort, when he sawe his tyme, went to his bed, and liyng all that night with a troubled minde, thinking what would become of Agatha, and what successe his enterprise would take, the mornynge came upon hym before he could once close his eyes ; whiche beeyng come, he rose, not doubtyng but that he should assuredlie finde his wife dedde, as Alonso had promised hym.

As soone as he was up he went out of his house, and staied but an hower abroade, and then he retourned home again, and asked his maide whether her mistres were up or no. The maide made hym aunswere, that she was yet asleape ; and he, makynge as though he had marveiled at her long liyng in bedde, demaunded her how it happened that she was so sluggishe that mornynge, contrarie to her custome, whiche was to rise every mornynge by breake of the daie, and badd her goe and wake her, for he would have her to give hym something that laye under her keyes. The wenche, according to her maister's commaundement, went to her mistres beddeside, and havyng called her once or twise somewhat softely, when she sawe she waked not, she laied her hand upon her, and givynge her a shagge, she saied withall, Mistres, awake ! my maister calleth for you. But she liyng still, and not awakynge for all that the maide tooke her by the arme, and beganne to shake her good and hard, and she, notwithstandingyng, nether answweryng, nor stirryng hande or foote, the maide retourned to her maister, and tolde hym that for aught she could doe she could not gett her mistres to awake. Gonsales, hearyng the maide to saie so, was glad in his mynde ; but fainyng hymself to be busied about somwhat els, and that he regarded little her speeche, he bidde her goe againe, and shake her till she did waken. The maide did so, and rolled and tumbled her in her bed, and all in vaine : wherefore, commyng againe unto her maister, she saied unto hym, that undoubtedly she did

beleeve that her mistres, his wife, was dedde, for she had founde her verie colde, and rolled her up and doun the bedde, and that yet she stirred not.

What ! dedde ? q. Gonsales, as if he had been all agaste and amazed ; and risyng there withall, he went to her beddes side, and called her, and shaked her, and wrong her by the fingers, and did all that might bee, as he thought, to see whether she were alive. But she, not feelyng anything that he did, laie still like a dedde boddie, or rather like a stone.

Wherfore, when he sawe his purpose had taken so good effecte, to dissemble the matter he beganne to crie out, and to lament, and to detest his cruell destinie, that had so sone bereved hym of so kind, so honest, and so faithfull a wife : and having in the ende discovered her bodie, and finding no spot or marke whereby any token or signe of poisonyng might be gathered, as one that would not seme to omit any office of a lovyng husband, he sent for the phisition to loke upon her ; who, havyng used some suche meanes as he thought mete to make her come to herself, finally, seyng her to remaine unmoveable, and without sence, concluded that some sodaine accident had taken her in the night, whereof she had died, and for dead he left her.

At whiche his resolution, though Gonsales were very glad, yet to the outward shewe declaryng hymself to be verie sorie, and full of woe and heavinesse, he behaved hymself in suche cunnyng sorte, as he made all the worlde beleeve that he would not long live after her : and havyng called her freendes, and lamented with them her sodaine death and his misfortune, in fine, he caused her funerall to bee very sumptuouslie and honourably prepared, and buried her in a vaute, whiche served for a toumbe to all his ancestours, in a churche of a frierie that standes without the citie.

Alonso, that was verie well acquainted with the place, and had hymself a house not verie farre from that frierie, wente his waie that same night unto his saied house, and when he sawe

the tyme to serve for his purpose, he gatte hym to the vaute or toumbe wherein Agatha was laied, with one of these little lanterns that thei call blinde lanterns, because thei tourne them, and hide their lite when thei liste. And because he was a yong manne of verie good strengthe, and had brought with hym instrumentes of iron to open the toumbe, and lifte up the stone that covered it, he gatte it open, and havyng underpropped it surely, he went into the vaute, and toke the woman straight waie in his armes, minding to bryng her out, and carrie her awaie so asleape as she was. But the force and vertue of the pouder beeuyng finished and spent, assone as he moved her she awaked out of her sleape, and seyng herself clad in that sorte, emong ragges and dedde bones, she beganne to tremble, and to crie : Alas ! where am I ? or who hath brought me hether, wretche that I am ?—Marie, that hath your cruell and unfaithfull housebande, aunswered the Scholer ; who havyng poisoned you, to marrie a common strumpet, hath buried you here, whether I come to trie if by my skill I could revive you, and call backe your soule, by those remedies whiche I had devised, unto your bodie againe : whiche if I could not have doen as I intended, I was resolved to have died here by you, and to have laied my dedde bodie here by yours, to reste until the latter daie, hopyng that my spirite should in the meane while have come and enjoyed yours, wherever it had been. But since the heavens have been so favourable unto me, as in this extreame daunger wherein you were, to graunt suche vertue unto the remedies whiche I have used toward you, as the whiche I have been able to keepe undissolved your gentle spirite with your faire bodie, I hope (my deare) that you wil henceforthe consider what the affection of your wicked housbande hath been toward you, and how greate good will, and by consideration thereof, discerne and resolve whiche of us twoo hath beste deserved to be beloved of you.

Agatha, findyng herself in that sort buried in deede, did easily beleeve the truthe whiche the Scholer told her, and to

her self concluded that her housebande had shewed hymself, in her behalf, a man of all other moste cruell and disloyall. Wherfore, tournyng herself toward the Scholer, she saied unto hym.

Alonso, I can not deny but that my housebande hath been to me not onely unkinde, but cruell also: nor I can not but confesse that you have declared yourself to bee moste lovyng and affectioned toward me: and of force I must acknowledge myself beholding unto you, of no lesse then of my life, since (alas !) I see myself here emong dedde bodies, buried alive. But for as muche, as though my housebande have broken his vow to me, I have not yet at any tyme failed my faithe to hym, I doe require you, that if you desire that I should esteeme this kind and lovyng office of yours as it deserveth to bee esteemed, or make accompt of this life whiche you have given me, you will have due regarde and consideration of myne honestie, and that you will not, by offeryng me any villainie, (whiche neverthelesse I can not any waie misdoubte, where I have alwaies founde so muche and so greate courtesie) make this your courteous and pitifull acte to bee lesse commendable and praise worthie then it is: whiche, if you dooe bridle your unlawfull and sensuall appetite and desire, will remaine the moste vertuous and worthie of honour and fame, that ever courteous gentleman hath doen for a miserable woman, since the worlde began.

Alonso failed not with affectuall and manifest argumentes to perswade her, that her housband had now no more right or title to her at all; and that although he had, yet, if she were wise, she should not committe herself unto his courtesie againe, since, by this mortall token, he had given her a sufficient testimonie of his ranckor and evill will towardes her, whereby she might well enough bee assured not to escape, whensoever she should resolve to putte herself againe into his handes: and that, therefore, she was not to make any accompt of hym, but to shewe herself thankfull for so greate a benefite as she had re-

ceived, and to requite hym so with her favour and courtesie, as he might now in the ende attaine to gather the fruite of his long and constaunte good will, and of his travell susteined for the saffegarde of her life. And with those woordes bendyng hymself towarde her, he would have taken a kisse of her lippes, but Agatha, thrustyng hym backe, saied to hym again.

If my housebande (Alonso) have broken those bandes, where-with I was knit unto hym by matrimonie, through his wicked and leude demeanour, yet have not I for my parte dissolved theim, neither will I at any tyme, so long as I shall live. As for committing myself unto his courtesie, or goyng any more into his handes, therein I thinke it good to followe your advise: not that I would bee unwillyng to live and dwell with hym, if I might hope to finde hym better disposed, but because I would be lothe to fall eftsones into the like daunger and grevous perill. And as for requityng you for this your commendable travaile in my behalfe, I knowe not what better recompence I am able to give you, then to rest bounde unto you for ever, and to acknowledge myself beholdyng unto your courtesie for my life; whiche obligation, if it maie satisfie you, I will be as glad and as content as I maie bee in this miserable state wherein I am. But if your meanyng perchance bee, that the losse of myne honestie should bee the rewarde and hire for your paines, I dooe beseche you to departe hence out of this toumbe, and to leave me here enclosed; for I had rather dye here, thus buried quicke through the cruetie of my housband, then through any such compassion or pitie to save my life, with the losse of myne honour and good name.

The Scholer by those wordes perceived well enough the honest disposition of Agatha, whiche he wondered at, consideryng that the terror of death it self was not able once to move her from her faithfulnes and constancie of minde. And though it were grievous unto him to finde her so stedfast, yet hopyng that by tyme in the ende he might overcome her chaste and honest purpose, aunswered, that he could not but

commende her for her disposition, though he deserved a kinder recompence of his long and fervent love, and she a more loyng and faithfull housbande. But since she was so resolved, he would frame himself to be content with what she would, and not crave of her any thyng that she would not willingly graunt hym to have. And therewith helpyng her out of the sepulcher, he led her home unto his house, and lefte her there with an olde woman that kept his house, to whom he recomended her, and whose helpe he was assured of, to dispose the good will of Agatha towardes hym, and the next mornynge retourned into the citie.

Gonsales, after a fewe daies, seeming not to be able to live without a wife to take care of his familie, wedded that honest dame, Aselgia, and made her mistres of hymself and all that he had. This, his newe mariage, so sone contrived, caused the frendes of Agatha to marvaile not a little, and to misdoubte that the sodaine death of their kinsewoman had not happened without some misterie. Neverthelesse, havyng no token, nor evidence, or profe, thei helde their peace. But Gonsales havyng his desired purpose, and living with his newe wife, it befell unto hym (through Goddes just judgement with this his joly dame) as it chaunced to Agatha with hym before; for Aselgia, that was never wont to feede with so spare a diet, as she that had never bin contented before without greate chaunge, nor had not bin used to that kinde of straightnes (which Gonsales, growing jelous of her, began to keepe her in), but had alwaies lived at libertie, and with suche licentiousnesse, as women of her profession are wont to doe, became in shorte space to shewe herself so precise unto hym, and to hate and abhorre hym in suche extreme sorte, that she could not abide to see, or heare hym spoken of: by occasion of whiche her demeanour towardes hym, Gonsales, to his greefe, began at last to knowe and to discerne what difference there is betweene the honest and carefull love of an honest wife, and the dissemblyng of an arrant strumpet. Wherefore

one daie, among the rest, complainyng of the little love whiche he perceived she bare hym, and she aunsweryng hym thawtly, Gonsales, fallyng into heate of choler, saied angerly unto her. Have I, thou naughtie packe, poysoned Agatha for thy sake, that was the kindest and the lovingest wife that ever man had? and is this the rewarde I have, and the requitall thou yeeldest me, to shewe thyself every daie more despightefull and crabbed than other?—Aselgia havyng heard hym, and noted well his wordes, tooke holde of them, and straight waie thought that she had founde the waie to rid herself of Gonsales: wherefore she reveiled his speeches unto a ribalde of hers, such a one as supplied her want of that which Gonsales alone, nor ten suche as he were able to satisfie her withall, and induced hym to appeache hym for that facte, assuryng herself that the lawe would punishe hym with no lesse then death, and thereby she to remaine at libertie to dooe what she list againe, as she had doen before. This companion accused Gonsales upon his owne wordes unto the freendes of Agatha, who, havyng had halfe a suspition thereof before, went and accused him likewise before the judge, or hed magistrate of the citie; whereupon Gonsales and his woman were both apprehended, and put to their examinations, to searche out the truthe; which Gonsales being halfe convicted by the confession of the gentle peate, his newe wife, but chiefly grieved with the worme of his owne conscience, and to avoyde the torment of those terrors which he knewe were prepared for him, confessed flatly, affirmyng that he had poysoned her with a poyson which he had kept of long tyme before in his house, perfourmyng yet therein the promise whiche he had made unto the Scholer. And upon his owne confession sentence was given against hym, that he should loose his hed.

Alonso, when he understande that Gonsales was condemned to dye, was very glad thereof, supposyng that he beeyng once dead, Agatha (who all this while, for anythyng that the olde woman could saie or alledge unto her in the behalfe of Alonso,

would never yeeld or consent to any one poincte wherein her honour might have beeene touched or spotted) should remaine at his discretion, and that she would no longer refuse to graunt hym her good will, when she should see her self delivered of Gonsales. But the daie beyng come wherein he was to be put to execution, she havyng had intelligence of all that had passed, and knowyng that he was appointed to dye that daie, determined with herself that she would in that extremitie deliver her disloyall housebande, and give hym to understande how little she had deserved to bee so entreated by hym as she had been. Wherfore, havyng gotten out of Alfonso his house, she hied her unto the citie as fast as she could, and beeyng before the justice or magistrate she saied unto him: Sir, Gonsales, whom you have condemned and commaunded to be put to death this daie, is wrongfully condemned; for it is not true that he hath poysoned his wife, but she is yet alive, and I am she: therefore, I beseche you, give order that execution maie be staied, since that your sentence grounded upon a false enformation and confession, is unjust, as you maie plainly discerne, by me beyng here.

When the governour heard Agatha speake in this sorte, whom he had thought to have been deade and buried, he was all amazed, and halfe afraide to looke upon her, doubtyng that she was rather her spirite or ghoste, or some other in her like-nesse, then a lively woman in deede; for she was apparelled in a very plaine and black attyre, and was very wanne and pale, by reason of the affliction whiche she had indured, first for her owne ill fortune, and then for the mischaunce of her housband.

In this meane while the sergantes and officers had brought Gonsales before the justice or magistrate, to the ende that he (accordyng to the custome of the citie) should give them comaundement to leade hym to the place of execution, and there to fulfill his sentence upon him; but as sone as Agatha perceived hym, she ranne unto hym, and takyng hym aboute the

necke, and kissing him, she said, Alas ! my deare housebande, whereunto doe I see you brought through your owne folly and disordinate appetite, which blinded your judgement ? Beholde here your Agatha alive, and not deade ; who even in this extremitie is come to shewe herself that lovyng and faithfull wife unto you that she was ever.

The justice or governour, seyng this straunge accident, caused execution to be staied, and signified the whole case unto the lorde of the countrey, who at that tyme chaunced to be at Sciville : who, wonderyng no lesse then the other at the matter, caused bothe Gonsales and his wife to be brought before him, and demaunded of them how it had chaunced that she, havyng bin buried for deade, was now found alive ? Gonsales could saie nothyng, but that for the love he bare unto Aselgia he had poysoned his wife, and that he knewe not how she was revived againe. But Agatha declared how the Scholler, with his skill, had delivered her from death, and restored her life unto her, but how or by what meanes she could not tell.

The Lorde havyng sent for Alonso, and demaunded hym of the truth, was certified by hym, how that in steede of poison he had given to Gonsales a pouder to make her sleape ; affirmyng likewise, that notwithstandingyng the long and earnest pursuite whiche he had made to obtaine her love, and the crueltie and injurie whiche she sawe her housebande had used towarde her, to put her in that daunger and perill of her life, out of whiche he had delivered her, yet could he never by any perswasion or entreatie winne her to fulfill his desire, or bryng her to make breache of her faithe and honestie. By whiche reporte the Lorde knewe verie well, that in an honest woman the regarde and respect of her honour and chastitie doeth farre excede any other passion, for any miserie, be it never so great ; and commendyng highly the love and constancie of the woman towarde her housebande, and praisyng the pollicie of Alonso, he tourned hymself unto Gonsales, and saied unto hym. Full evill hast thou deserved to have so good and so

verteous a gentlewoman to thy wife, and in reason she ought now rather to be Alonso his wife then thine: neither wert thou worthie of lesse then that punishment which the lawe hath condempned thee unto, though she be yet alive, since thou as much as in thee laye hast doen to bereve her of her life; but I am content that her vertue and goodnesse shall so muche be available unto thee, that thou shalt have thy life spared unto thee for this tyme. Not for thy owne sake, because thou deservest it not, but for hers, and not to give her that sorowe and greefe whiche I knowe she would feele, if thou shouldest dye in that sorte; but I sware unto thee, that if ever I maie understande that thou dooest use her henceforth otherwise then lovyngly and kindly, I will make thee, to thy greevous paine, prove how severely I can punishe suche beastly and heinous factes, to the example of all others.

Gonsales, imputyng his former offence to want of witte and judgemente, made promis unto the Lorde that he would alwaies dooe as he had commanded hym; and accordinglie, havyng forsaken cleane that baggage strumpette that he had wedded, he lived al the rest of his daies in good love and peace with Agatha his wife; whose chaste and constant minde caused Alonso, where before he loved her for her exterior beauty, ever after to reverence her, and in maner to worship her as a divine creature, for the excellencie of her vertue, resolving with hymself, that a more constaunt faithe and honest disposition could not bee founde in any mortall woman.

## OF ARAMANTHUS, BORNE A LEPER.

## THE ARGUMENT OF THE VII HISTORIE.

*Aramanthus, soonne to Rodericke, Kyng of Tolosia, beeyng borne a leper, was sent by his father to the Ile of Candy for remedie, and by a tempeste at the sea the shippe was driven into Turkie, where she was caste awaie, and no manne saved but the childe; whiche was taken up by a poore fisherman, and fostered as his owne soonne, and afterwardes, servyng the Turke in his warres, shewed himself so politique, that the Turke, by his onely advise, incroached muche upon the Christians, and in fine, by his meane, the City of Tolosia was taken, his father put in prison, and how in the ende he was knowne to bee the soonne of Rodericke.*

I shall not neede by any long circumstaunce to describe how many troubles, tumultes, broyles, brabbles, murthers, treasons; how many kingdomes have been disturbed, how many countries laied waste: how many cities have been sacked, how many tounes have been rased, and how many mischeefes have ever happened, sithence the firste creation of the worlde untill this present daie, by that monsterous vice, ambition, consideryng that every historie maketh mention, every chronicle beareth recorde, and every age, tyme, and season, have seen with their eyes, and this our tale that followeth shall somethyng make more evident.

There was sometyme remainyng in the famous citie of Tolosia a worthie kyng, whose name was Rodericke, who was likewise espoused to a moste vertuous queene, called Isabell:

and truely a happie court it might bee called, whiche thei held, as well for the love that was betweene the kyng and queene, as for the vertue and clemencie wherewith bothe the one and the other were accompanied.

There was remainyng in the court the Duke of Caria, who was the onely brother of Rodericke, Kyng of Tolosia. This Duke, beeyng a greate deale more vicious then his brother was verteous, practised no other thing, but how he might come by the kyngdome of Tolosia ; knowing that there were no more betweene hym and it but the Kyng, who loved hym more dearely by a greate deale then he deserved. But it fell out the Queene Isabell was knowne to bee with childe, the Duke, verie lothe that any other heires should steppe in betwene hym and home, devised to poyson the Queene, and so had thought to have dooen by as many as the Kyng should have taken to wife (if at any tyme thei proved to be with child), but by the providence of God this poyson tooke no greate effecte in the Queene, saving that when she was delivered of a sonne, the child was founde to be in a notable leprosie : and the Kyng, havyng intelligence of an excellent phisition (but especially for the curyng of that disease) was remainyng in the isle of Candy, prepared a ship presently to sende the childe, whiche by the extreamtie of a contrarie winde was driven into Turkie, and the shippe caste awaie uppon the maine, and all the menne drouned exceptyng the childe, whiche beyng in a cradle was carried to the shore as it laye ; where a fisherman founde it, with suche sumptuous furnitures aboue it, with a verie riche jewell hangyng aboue the necke. He tooke it up in his armes, and cariying it home, with bathes and homely oyntmentes of his owne devising, within a very little space the childe was restored to perfecte health, whom he called Aramanthus, and brought hym up as his owne sonne, the childe knowyng no other in deede, but that the fisherman had been his father. And as Aramanthus grewe in yeres, so he proved of a verie comely personage, but of a moste excel-

lent and perfecte witte, although he had no other trainyng up, but used to goe to the sea with his father a fishyng.

Now, it fell out that the Turke was leaviyng a mightie armie, to set upon the Cristians: the cause was this: he had twoo children, a sonne and a daughter; the daughter, her name was Florella, whose beautie was verie excellent, and minding to matche his daughter with some noble prince, he pretended that suche countries, cities, tounes, castelles, fortes, or whatsoever he could by conquest get from the Christians, to give them all for his daughter's dowrie.

Aramanthus, hearyng of this preparation to the warres, would needes become a souldier, whereat his father, the fisherman, was greatly displeased, and beganne to preache unto his sonne of the incommodities of warre, and with how many miseries souldiers are besieged. Aramanthus, whose basenesse of his bringyng up could not conceale the nobility of his birthe, would in no wise be perswaded, but goe he would; and beyng pressed for an ordinarie souldier, when he came to the place of service shewed hymself so valiant, and in verie shorte space became to be so expert, that that captaine under whose ensigne he served bare awaie the credite from all the reste; and in the ende was hymself preferred to charge, whiche he governed with so greate discretion, and still conducted with suche celerite and sleight, that who but Aramanthus and his companie had the onely name throughout the Turkes campe: and where there was any attempt to be given, where valiancie should bee showne, Aramanthus he must give the charge; and where any policie must bee put in practise, Aramanthus he must laye the platte: that, to bee shorte, he grewe into suche credite with the greate Turke hymself, that Aramanthus onely gave hym consaill in all his affaires, and there withall had so good successe, that his practises stil prevailed, and came to happie ende, that the Turke by his advise had dooen wonderfull spoiles upon the Christians, and had taken from them many cities, tounes, and provinces. And thus,

leavyng them in the warres for a season, I will convaye my tale againe to Isabell, queene and wife to Rodericke, who was now the second time knowne to be with child ; whereat the Duke of Caria beyng wonderfully wrothe, pretendyng to finde a quicke dispatche for all together, he secretly accused the Queene of adulterie to the King, his brother, and with suche allegations and false witnesses as he had provided, so enformed the king, that his tale was credited : and the rather for the Kyng, knowyng his Queene to bee with child, did thinke hymself too farre spent in yeres to dooe suche a deede ; and yet the Kyng was replenished with so greate pitie, that he could not endure to heare of her death : he therefore by a messenger commaunded her presently to departe the court, and in paine of her life never after to come in his presence. These newes did wonderfully amaze the Queene, who, with many piteous intercessions, desired to knowe her accusers, and that she might but speake for herself before his Majestie, and then, as he should finde her, to use her accordyng to her deserthes ; but all in vaine, for the Duke had so throughlie incensed the King, that he would neither abide to see, nor heare her.

The Duke, understandyng how matters had passed, came to the Queene, and seemed muche to lamente her case, perswadyng her to holde herself contented for a little season, not doubtyng but in tyme that he hymself would so perswade with his brother, that she should bee heard to speake in her owne defence : in the meane season, if it pleased her to use his house in the country, he would provide for her all maner of necessaries whatsoever she should want ; and for her better comfort, if she had any assured freendes, whose companie she desired, that she might secretly sende for theim to holde her fellowshipp, and to passe the tyme ; and that he hymself would many tymes visite her, and daiely enforme her how matters did passe in her behalfe with the Kyng his brother.

The poore Queene, thinkyng all had proceeded of good will whiche this traitour had profferred, gave him more than a

thousande thankes, reposyng herself, and the innocencie of her cause, onely in this Judas, who practised nothyng els but her death, and the death of that she went withall.

The nexte daie he provided a couple of ruffians, such as he knewe were for his purpose, whiche should have secretlye conveighed her to the Duke's house (as she had thought); but as the Duke had willed them, as thei rode over a forest, when they came to the side of a woode, they took her from her horse, spoiled her of such thynge as were aboute her, and mynded to have killed her, and throwne her in some bushe. But it fell out that there were certaine banished menne in the woode, whiche lived in that desarte in manner of outlawes, and hearyng the piteous complainte of the Queene thei came to her rescue; but the villaines, that would have slain her, perceivynge them, fledde and left the Queene, where these outlawes came unto her, unto whom, from point to point, she declared every thynge, how it was happened unto her. The outlawes, havyng greate compassion when thei knewe her to be the Queene, for that thei had ever heard her to be noblie reported on, brought her with theim to their cave, where thei ministered such releef to her distresse as menne might dooe that were in their estates. The Queene, thinkyng that God had preserved her life to some better purpose, contented herself for a season to remaine emongest theim, where she learned to pliae the cooke, and to dresse their meate, such as thei brought in, or could provide for in the forest. And thus, leavyng the Queene with these outlawes, I will retourne againe to speake of Aramanthus, who was now devisyng to frame a plotte, how he might betraie the citie of Tolosia, whereof his father was kyng, as you have heard.

For the Turke havyng intelligence of the pleasauntnesse of this citie, and of the wonderfull wealthe and riches wherewith it did abounde, and therewithall had learned that it was of such force and invinsible strengthe, that there was no manner of hope how it might be subdued, whereat the Turke was verie

sorrowfull and sadde ; but my yong fisherman, Aramanthus, whose cunnyng never failed where courage could not helpe, caused the Turke, with his whole armie, by sea to come before this citie, which is situate faste upon the sea side, and there to come to an anker, where Aramanthus hymself, as a messenger appointed from the Turke, came to the Kyng of Tолосia, to whom he told this tale : That the Turke, his maister, havyng been in divers partes of Christendome, where he had made warres a long space, and upon divers considerations mindyng to departe with his armie into his owne countrey for a season, and beyng upon the seas, one night as he was liyng upon his bedde, beholde a vision appeared unto hym in a dreame, whiche shewed hym how greevously he had offended the God of the Christians in persecutyng, spoilyng, and the murtheryng of theim, as he had doen in this journey ; and for that he should knowe that the Christian God was the moste high and Almighty God indeed, whom with his tyrannie he had so displeased, he should bee creepled of all his limmes from that tyme forthe till his diyng daie, whiche should verie shortlie followe : with this he awaked, and givynge a piteous grone, suche as was about hym commyng unto hym, founde hym in a wunderfull maze, and so benummed in all his partes, that he was not able to stirre hande nor foote. The next daie, callyng his counsailers and captaines aboute hym, not able of hymself to come forthe emongest theim, but as he was brought out of his cabbin on men's backes, he declared unto theim the whole circumstance of the premisses, and beyng striken with a wonderfull remorse in conscience, he determined to saile backe againe, not myndyng to depart from out those partes of Christendome till he had made satisfaction of all suche spoiles and outrages as he had committed againste the Christians, and hymself with his whole armie to become christened, and there to be instructed in the true and perfect faith : and as he continued this determination, beholde a contrary winde hath driven us on these partes, where hearyng of

the fame of this noble citie of Tolosia, he hath sent me unto your grace, desiryng nothyng but your saffe conduct for hymself, and certaine of his cheef lordes and counsailers that be aboute hym, that in this noble citie thei might be baptizied, and receive the Christian faithe, promisyng hereafter not onely to joyne in league and perfecte amitie with the Christians, but also to lincke with them in religion, hymself, his countries, kyngdomes, and provinces.

This tale was not so smoothly tolde, but there was greate doubte and suspition had in the matter: in the ende, thinkyng thei could receive no prejudice by receivyng of so small a nomber, gave safe condite for the Turke hymself, and for five hundred of his companie, such as it pleased hymself to appoinete.

The next daie the Turke was brought into the citie on mennes shulders, with his appointed companie, where he was worthely received by the Kyng hymself, with the rest of his lordes, and brought into a pallace of purpose, verie richely furnished, where beyng laied doun upon a bed, as though he had been able neither to stande nor sit, and givynge the Kyng, with the rest of his companie, greate thankes for his enter-tainment, he desired hym, with the Duke his brother (accordyng to the custome) to be his godfathers when he should be christened, to whiche request thei bothe willingly agreed. The next daie the Turke hymself was the first that received christendome, and then all the reste of his noble menne that were wyth hym, the whiche beeynge finished, many godlie exhortations were preached unto theim by learned men. The Turke seemed in verie gratefull maner to take this courtesie wherewith the Kyng had used hym; and thus takyng his leave, hymself with all his companie departed againe aborde the shippes, the Turke hymself beyng caried upon mennes backes, making shewe as though he had been so feeble and weake, that he had not been able to have mooved or stirred any one joyst without helpe, fainyng that he would have departed with his companie into Turkie.

The Kyng of Tolosia, with all his people and citezens, seyng with what devotion the Turke, with the rest of his companie, had received christendome, beganne to thinke assuredly, that onely by the devine providence of God the Turke was so converted, and doubted nothyng of the tale whiche Aramanthus before had tolde them, whiche tourned in the ende to their utter subversion : for the next daie Aramanthus commyng againe to the Kyng, brought woerde of the death of the Turke, and with a piteous discourse, uttered with a nomber of fained sighes, saied, that aboue twelve a clocke of the night paste the Turke deceased, and desired at the houre of his death, that as in this worthie citie he had received the true Catholike faithe, so likewise that he might be entoumbed, and receive Christian buriall in the cathedrall churche, to the whiche he had given by his will fourtie thousands frankes ; more to the common treasure of the citie a hundred thousands frankes ; to the Kyng himself, as a president of his good will, a riche jewell, whiche hymself did weare, of greate estimation ; to the Duke, his brother, his owne armour and furniture. Item, to the releef of the poore within the citie tenne thousands frankes. Many other thynges (q, Aramanthus) he hath bequeathed that I have not spoken of, the whiche, God willing, shal be performed to the uttermoste.

The Kyng seemed greatelie to lamente the death of the Turke, and began to conjecture assuredly that it was the will of God but to preserve his life till he had received christendome, but the tyme of his buriall was deferred for certaine daies, till thynges might be provided, and more readie for the pompe and solempnisyng of his funerall ; and wonderfull cost was bestowed by Aramanthus, who had the onely orderyng of the matter, hopyng in the ende to receive the whole commoditie, and also to be rewarded with a large and bountifull intrest. The daie of buriall beyng at hande, Aramanthus desired the Kyng, that for so muche as the Turke had finished his daies in the middest of his armie, emongst his

souldiers, that he might likewise be buried like a noble captaine, and accordyng to the maner of the feeld, he might be brought to his grave with certaine bandes, trailing their weapons, as the custome of souldiers is to burie their dedde. This request seemed to bee verie convenient, and therefore was the readlier graunted. But what should I stand with long circumstaunce to discipher all the ceremonies that were used in this treason? The daie was come that this practise must be put in ure, and an emptie coffin solemnly brought to the citie, under shewe of greate sorowe, when they were al filled with greate joye and gladnesse to see what happy successe was like to followe of that thei had premeditated: and, accordyng as Aramanthus had given order, five thousande of their choise men were appointed to marche, the one halfe before, and the other halfe after the coffin, trailing their ensignes and weapons; and in this maner thei entered the citie, where the Kyng, with his nobles and principalles of the citie, were readie in mournyng weedes to accompanie the corse.

When Aramanthus sawe his tyme the alarum was given, and he hymself was the first that laied handes of the Kyng his father: the rest of his nobles were so enclosed, that there could not one of them escape: defence there was none to be made, for the one side were in armes, killyng and murthering of as many as thei could see stirring in the streates, the other side unprovided, glad to hide themselves for the savegard of their lives. The reste of the fleete were likewise in a readiness, and ronnyng a lande, entered the citie, where there was no manne to repulse theim.

And thus the famous citie of Tolosia was taken by the Turkes, even in a moment, without any maner of resistaunce. The churches and prisons were filled full of Christians, where thei were whipped, racked, and tormented to the death, unlesse thei would forsake their faithe: the Kyng hymself, with his brother and all the lordes, were committed to prison, there to be fedd with bread and water, (and yet to be scantled with

suche short allowance, as it was not able to suffice nature) and so to be dieted, unlesse thei would forsake their faithe.

Now the Turke, who onely by the meanes of Aramanthus had conquered from the Christians so many cities and tounes, for the love he bare unto hym, and in respecte of his service, determined to make Aramanthus his sonne in lawe, and to give hym his daughter Florella for his wife, and for her dowrie, all suche partes as he had taken from the Christians by conquest: and understanding that the father of Aramanthus was but a poore fisherman, he pretended likewise to make hym a duke, and to give hym livyng to maintaine his estate. The Turke, therefore, with all possible speede, hasted messengers with shippynge to bryng his daughter, with the olde fisherman the supposed father of Aramanthus, to this citie of Tolosia, where he minded to performe that he had determined.

Now, it fell out that the miserable Queene Isabel (whom you have heard was left with child, remainyng with certaine out-lawes) was delivered of a daughter, whiche she herself nursed in the cave, where she had remained; and hearyng that the Turke had taken the citie of Tolosia, would needes goe see what was become of the Kyng her housebande. Her daughter, whiche was not yet fully a yere old, she committed to the out-lawes, to bee fostered with suche homely junkettes as thei could provide, who, seyng her determination, promised to drie nurse the child so well as thei could till she should make retourne.

Thus, preparyng herself in a verie simple attire, with a bon-dell of broomes on her hedde, she came to the citie of Tolosia, where, roming up and doun the streates to sell her broomes, she learned all that had happened to the Kyng, and how he was readie to perishe, for want of foode and sustenance: wherefore, myndyng to give such succours as her habilitie would serve, she devised, in the maner of a poore servaunt, to gette into the service of the Turke, who was the jailer and had the custodie of the Kyng, where, every night, as oportunitie would serve, she conveighed to hym, through a grate, suche frag-

mentes as she spared out of her owne beallie, whiche were verie shorte, and there withall muche more homelie, but somethyng the better to amende his cheare, she would lean herself cloase to the grate, and thrustyng in her teate betwene the irons, the Kyng learned againe to sucke ; and thus she dieted him a long season.

Neither wiste the Kyng what she was, that bestowed on hym so greate grace and goodnesse, yet he blessed her more then a thousands tymes a daie ; and although there were many of his companie that died for wante of sustenaunce, yet he againe, with these banquettes, recovered hymself, and began to waxe strong. Whereat the Turke beganne to suspecte some parciallitie in the jailer, and caused a privie watche to bee kepte ; but Isabell, suspectyng nothyng, accordyng to her accustomed maner, at night when it was darke, came to her nurserie, where her order that she so long used was espied ; and beeyng apprehended by the watche, the next daie she was presented to the Turke, and in what maner thei had founde her. Whereat the Turke, wonderfullie agreeed, sware by Mahounde hymself that she should presentlie bee tortured, with the greatest tormentes that might be devised ; and in the middest of his furie, woerde was brought hym that his daughter Florella, with the fisherman that was father to Aramanthus, were arrived, and readie to present themselves before hym : whereat the Turke wonderfullie rejoiced, and callyng Aramanthus, caused them to bee brought in. Florella gave that reverence to the Turke, whiche bothe appertained to the duetie of a childe, and also as belonged to his estate : Aramanthus, likewise, although he were the greateste counsailour apertinent to the Turke, yet used that duetifull reverence to the fisherman his father, as is to bee required in a childe. The Turke, imbracyng his daughter Florella, tolde her the cause that he had sent for her was to espouse her to Aramanthus, who, although the destinies had deniaid to make noble by place of birth, yet through his vertues, valiaunce, and worthie ex-

plotes, he had gained the title of true nobilitie, in despite of Fortune's teeth. Florella, havyng heard of the fame and worthesse of Aramanthus, was the beste pleased woman in the worlde; and the Tourke, tournyng hym towrdes the fisherman, saied, And a thousande tymes happie art thou, old father, that haste lived to see thyself so highly exalted in thy offspring.

The poore fisherman, kneelyng doun, saied: Moste mightie and magnificente prince, not mindyng longer to conceale the thing whiche might redounde so greatly to the contention of suche worthie personages, seyng then that Aramanthus, who onely through his owne valiauncie hath aspired to so greate dignitie and honour, how greatly were I then to be blamed, and how worthely might I be condemned, if I should take upon me to bee the sire of hym, who by all likelihooode is descended of roiall and princelie race: for better testimonie, behold this riche mantell, and these other costly furnitures, wherein I founde Aramanthus wrapped, and, by seemyng, saved by his cradell, whiche brought hym a shoore from some shippe that was wracked, where I founde hym by the sea side, (as I saie) wrapped in these sumptuous furnitures, with this riche and precious jewell about his necke, beyng but an infaunte, by conjecture not above the age of a quarter of a yere; where, takyng hym up in my armes, I brought hym home to my house, called hym by the name of Aramanthus, and thus fostered hym up as my owne child, untill the daie that he came to serve your majestie in the warres.

The Queene Isabell, whiche stoode by and heard this discourse, and seyng the furnitures, and the jewelles wherwith she had decked her childe, assuryng herself that Aramanthus was her sonne, could no longer staie her speeche, but saied: And doe I then beholde my sonne with my unhappy eyes? is he living here in presence whom I deemed to bee dedde? Oh, moste gracious goddes! I yeelde you humble thankes. And would to God, my sonne, thy commynge had been but halfe so happy

as thy presence is joyfull to me, thy wretched mother !—What newes be these (q, the Turke) which I heard ; I think the woman be out of her wittes. But what art thou that wouldest chalenge Aramanthus for thy sonne, whose parentes, now I wel perceive, are no beggars like thyself?—Yes, surely, (q, the Queene) and much more miserable then those that goe from doore to doore, and although his father sometyme swaied the sworde of governement, and satt in place and seate of princely thronē.—Dispatche then at once, (q, the Turke) and tell me who is his father, and what is the miserie wherewith he is perplexed : wherein if thou canst perswade me with a truth, assure thee that, onely for Aramanthus sake, I am the man that will minister release.

Behold then, (q, the Queene) Kyng Rodericke is his father, whom thy self keepest here in pryson, in this miserable maner ; and I, whom thou seest here, am his mother, the wyfe of the Kyng, and sometyme the Queene of this wretched citie of Tolosia : who beyng delivered of a soonne, whiche by the pleasure of God was visited in my wombe, and borne in an extreame leprosie, for helpe whereof he was sent by his father by shippynge to the ile of Candy, and till this presente daie there was never tidynges heard, either of the shippe, or of any one man that was in her. And now, beholde ! I see with myne eyes the furnitures wherein I wrapped my childe, and the jewell whiche I put about his necke with myne owne handes at his departure. The fisherman, verifying this tale to be true, saide indeede that he found him in an extreame maladie, which he cured himself with medicines of his own providing.

Aramanthus, havyng heard how matters were sorted out, beganne to teare hymself, saiying, Ah, moste wicked and unnaturall wretche ! what furies have saved thee, that thou wert not dround with the reste, but that thou must be preserved as an instrument to woork thy parentes wracke ? Come, come, you bellishe haggis, and shewe your force on hym that hath worthely deserved it. But what hath Tantalus offended, that

he should continually bee sterved ? or how hath Sisiphus, that rowles the restlesse stone ? or what trespass hath beene committed by Prometheus, Ixyon, Titias, or Danaus sillie daughters, drawyng water at the welle, that maie bee compared to that whiche I have dooen ? is it possible, then, that I should escape unpunished, or that the sacred goddes will be unrevenged of my facte ? No, no ; I have deserved to bee plagued, and have merited more worthely to bee tormented then any of these afore rehearsed.

Florella, overhearyng these desperate speeches, fell doun in a sowne, for greef to see her Aramanthus so disquieted. The Turke, after his daughter was come againe to herself, sorrowed to see the heaviness of Aramanthus, caused the Kyng his father, with the Duke of Caria, presently to be sent for out of prison ; and taking Isabell on the one of his handes, and Aramanthus on the other, he sayed to the Kyng : Receive here, noble prince, a moste lovyng and faithfull wife, and a moste valiaunt and worthie soonne ; and myself, from an enemie, for ever after this to become thy moste assured and trustie freende.

The Kyng was wonderfully amazed to heare these speeches, did thinke hymself to bee in some dreame, till in the ende he heard the wholle discourse how every thynge had happened, and beyng ravished with gladnesse, he saied : O ! happie evill, whiche bryngeth in the ende so greate a good ; and welcome bee that sorrowe, whereby is sprong a joye muche more surmountyng then ever was any heaviness. And with many like speeches, he still embraced his sonne Aramanthus in his armes ; and although he understoode that it was the Queene, his wife, which so lovyngly had succoured hym, when he was readie to have famished in the prison for want of meate, yet he could not finde in his harte to beare her any countenaunce, consideryng what he had conceived against her, by the information of his brother, (as before you have heard) whiche beyng perceived by the Duke, moste humbly desiring forgesenesse, he

confessed to the Kyng al his mischeef, from the beginnyng to the endyng, whereof the Kyng was bothe sorie and glad : sorie, for that he had so unnaturally dealt with so vertuous and courteous a wife, and glad, for that he was so resolved and confirmed in her chastitie, whiche before he had in suspence.

And now the Turke, for the love that he bare to Aramanthus, and for the likyng that he sawe to bee in his daughter towarde hym, whom he hymself had appoincted to bee her spouse, became indeede to be christened, with all his retinew that was aboute hym ; and then restoryng Rodericke againe to the kyngdome of Tolosia, by al consentes, the mariage betweene Aramanthus and Florella was concluded, with great pompe and magnificence : and thus the Turke, leavyng this new married couple in the citie of Tolosia, departed with his armie into Turkie.

The Queene Isabell, not forgetting the greate goodnesse she had received by these outlawes, whiche before had saved her life, and with whom her daughter yet remained, so dealt with the Kyng her housebande, that thei were altogether sent for, and verie joyfully receivyng his daughter, restored the outlawes againe to their libertie, bestowyng of them, for recompence, roomes, and offices of credite and estimation.

Thus, to conclude, every one beyng well contented, thei lived together in quietnesse, with many long and happie daies.

## OF PHYLOTUS AND EMILIA.

## THE ARGUMENT OF THE VIII HISTORIE.

*Philotus, an old and auncient citizen of Rome, falleth in love with Emilia, a yong and beautifull virgin, the daughter of Alberto, who knowyng the wonderfull wealthe of Phylotus, would have forced his daughter to have maried hym, but in the ende was pretely deceived by Phylerno, the brother of Emilia, who maried with Phylotus in his sister's steade, and other pretie actions that fell out by the waie.*

It hath many tymes bin had in question, and yet could never be decided, from whence this passion of extreame love doeth proceede, whose furie is such, where it once taketh possession, that (as thei saie) love is without lawe, so it maketh the pacientes to bee as utterly voide of reason ; but, in my opinion, the self same thyng, whiche is many tymes shadowed under the title of love, maie more properly be termed and called by the name of luste : but, be it love, or be it luste, the difference is nothyng so muche as the humour that feedes it is wonderfull straunge, and hath no maner of certaintie in it, exceptyng this, it is without parcialitie ; for commonly, when it driveth us to affect, it is doen without any maner of respect, for sometyme it maketh us to linger after our frendes, sometyme to languishe after our foes ; yea, betweene whom there hath been had mortall hostilitie. The sonne hath beene seene to fall in love with the wife of his father ; the father again, in like maner, with the wife of his soonne ; the king hath bin attached with the poore and needie beggar ; yea, and though there have been many which have seen their owne errour, and there with all

have confessed their abuse, yet thei have not bin able to refraine them selves from prosecutyng their follie to the ende. And all be it reason proffereth us sondrie sufficient causes why we ought to refraine the appetite of our owne desires, yet fancie then is he that striketh such a stroke, that reason's rules can naught at all prevaile, and like as those whom love hath once intangled, the more thei strive the farther thei bee tied, so it is unpossible that love should be constrained, where affection breedes not likyng, nor fancie is not fed; but where these two hath once joyned in election, al other affectes be so dimme and blinded, that every vice seemeth to us a vertue, whereof springeth this proverbe, In love there is no lacke. So that, indeede, to saie the truth, if there be any pietie to be imputed to this raging love, it is in that it is not parciall, nor hath it any respecte of persones, but bee thei frendes, be thei foes, be thei riche, be thei poore, be thei young, be thei olde, bee thei wise, bee thei foolishe, love is still indifferent, and respecteth all alike. But if any man will thinke that in respecte of beautie, we esteeme not all the reste, I am able to saie it is not true, consideryng how many have forsaken the better likyng, and have chosen the worse; so that, for my parte, the more I consider of it, the more I am amazed, and therefore will beate my braines no more aboute it, but leave it to the credite of suche as have bin lovers themselves, whose skill in the matter I preferre before mine owne, and will come to my Historie of Phylotus, who, beyng an aged man, fell in love with a yong maiden, farre unfittynge to his yeares, and followeth in this sorte.

In the gallant citie of Naples, there was remainyng a yong man, called by the name of Alberto. This Alberto beyng maried not fully out a yeare, his wife was delivered of a sonne, whom he named Phylerno, and upon divers considerations, mindyng to chaunge his habitation, he prepared hym self to goe dwell at Rome; and first takyng order for his sonne Phylerno, who for the tendernessee of his age he left still in

Naples at nurse, hym self, his wife, with all the reste of his household, came to Rome, where he had not very long remained, but his wife was likewise delivered of a daughter, whom he called by the name Emilia, who, as she grewe in yeares, she likewise proved to bee very beautifull and faire. And amongst a greate nomber of others, there was dwellyng in Rome an auncient citizen, whose name was Phylotus, a man very orderly in yeares, and wonderfully abounding in goods: this Phylotus, havyng many tymes taken the viewe of Emilia, beganne to growe very sore in love with her, or rather I maye saie, in his olde yeares beganne to doate after this young maiden; for it can not bee properly called love in these olde men, whose dotage, if it were not more then outragious, either their greate discretion would represse it, or their many yeares would mortifie it. But Phylotus, in the ende, desired Emilia of her father in the waie of mariage.

Alberto, accordyng to the custome of parentes, that desire to marie their daughters, more for goods then for good will betweene the parties, more for lucre then for love, more for livyng then for learning, more for wealth then for wit, more for honour then for honestie; and so thei maie have great store of money, thei never consider farther of the man. Alberto, in like maner, knowyng the wealth wherewith Phylotus was indued, who had never a childe but one onely daughter, whose name was Brisilla, gave his full consent, without any farther consideration of the inequalitie of the yeares that was betweene Phylotus and his daughter: he never remembred what strifes, what jarres, what debates, what discontentment, what counterfaityng, what disseabling, what louryng, what loathyng, what never likyng is ever had where there is suche differences betwene the maried; for perfecte love can never bee without equalitie, and better were a married couple to continue without livyng then without love. And what are the occasions that make so many women to straie from their housbandes, but when thei bee maried to suche as thei cannot like of; but

surely, if women did throughly consider how daungerous it is for them to deale with these olde youthes, I thinke thei would bee better advised in medling with them ; for, besides that thei be unwildie, lothsome, (and sir reverence of you) very unlovely for you to lye by, so thei bee commonly inspired with the spirite of jelousie, and then thei wille looke to you so narrowly, and mewe you up so closely, that you will wishe a thousandde tymes the prieste had bin hanged that maried you, but then to late.

But to retourne to our historie. Alberto, respecting more the wealth of Phylotus then the likyng of his daughter, gave his consent to take him for his sonne in lawe, and tolde Emelia how he had disposed on her. Emelia, seeyng what an olde babie her father had chosen to be her housebande, moste humbly desired hym to give her leave to chouse for herself; whereat her father, being very angrie, beganne sharply to rate her, saiying: And arte thou, then, so muche wedded to thine owne will, that thou skornest to be directed by me, thy lovyng father, or thinkest thou that thy wisedome doeth so farre surmount my wit, that thou canst better provide for thyself then I, which so carefully have hetherto brought thee up? or doth the tendere love, or the chargeable cost which I have bestowed on thee, deserve no better recompence, then to despise those that I would have thee to like of?

Emelia, fallyng doune of her knees before her father, saied : Moste deare and lovyng father, moste humbly I beseche you, for the affection whiche by nature you beare me, not to think me so gracelesse a childe, that I would goe aboute to contrary you, or stubbornly would refuse what soever you would think convenient for my behoofe : and although you shall finde in me suche duetie as is meete for a daughter, and all obediences that is fit for a childe ; yet, sir, consider the harte, whiche can not bee compelled, neither by feare, neither by force, nor is not otherwise to be lured then onely by fancies free consent. And as you have bestowed on me this fraile and transitori life so

my bodie shall be at your disposition, as it shall please you to appoint it, and I will conclude with this humble petition, desirynge you not to bestowe me of any that is not agreeable to my fancie and good likyng.

Well (q her father) then see you frame your likyng to like well of my likyng. I have promised you to Phylotus in mariage, and Phylotus is he that shall be your housband: and looke you goe not aboute to contende againste that I have determined; if you doe, never accompt me for father nor frende. And thus he departed.

Emelia, hearyng this cruell conclusion of her father, was wonderfully abashed, and beeyng by herself in her chamber, she beganne to consider of her father's wordes; and, for feare to incurre any farther displeasure, she devised how she might frame her self to the likyng of her lover; and, with a yong woman's minde, she first beganne to consider of his wealth, of his callyng, of the reverence wherewith he was used in the citie, and that likewise, in beyng his wife, she should also bee had in estimation, and bee preferred before other women of meaner credite: and to desire superioritie, it is commonly every woman's sicknesse, and therefore this could not chouse but please her very well. Then she remembred hbw commodious it were to marrie one so wealthie as Phylotus, wherby she should not neede to beate her braines aboute the practising of housewiferie, but should have servantes at commaundment to supplie that tourne: this likewise pleased her very well; but because she would well perswade herself, she beganne to conjecture how she should spende the time to her contentment; and therefore she beganne to thinke what a pleasure it was to bee well furnished with sondrie sutes of apparell, that in the mornynge, when she should rise, she might call for what she liste to put on, accordyng as the tyme and the fasshion did require, and her fancie served beste; for thus Phylotus was well able to keepe his wife: and this pleased her likewise very well; and then, when she were up, she might breake her fast

with a cuppe of malmsie or muskadine nexte her harte : it was very good for ill ayres in a mornyng, and this she thought was but an easie matter, and likewise pleased her very well : when she had broken her fast, then she might stirre about the house, and looke to this, and see to that, and where she found anythyng amis, not to touche it with her owne fingers for marryingng the beautie of her hande, but to call for Cicelie, Jone, or Cate, and to chide them like sluttess, that thei could not spie a faught but when thei muste be tolde ; this likewise pleased her verie well : then to have provided for dinner some junckettes, that served beste her appetite. Her housebande had good store of coyne, and how could it be better spent then upon themselves, to make their fare the better ? this likewise pleased her verie well. Now, when she had dined, then she might go seke out her exemplers, and to peruse whiche worke would doe beste in a ruffe, whiche in a gorget, whiche in a sleeve, whiche in a quaife, whiche in a caule, whiche in a handcarcheef ; what lace would doe beste to edge it, what seame, what stitche, what cutte, what garde : and to sitte her doun and take it forthe by little and little, and thus with her nedle to passe the after noone with devising of thinges for her owne wearyng ; this likewise pleased her passyng well : then to prōvide for supper some shift of diete, and sondrie sauces, the better to helpe the stomacke, oranges, lemons, olives, caphers, salades of sondrie sortes : alas ! a croune will goe a greate waie in suche trifles ; this likewise pleased her verie well : when she had supped, to use some exercise, accordyng to the season ; if it were in sommer, to goe walke with her neighbours, to take the aire, or in her garden, to take the verdure of swete and pleasaunt flowers ; this likewise pleased her verie well : when she was come in, and readie to go to her chamber, a cuppe of cold sacke to bedward is verie good for digestion, and no coste to speake of, where suche abundance doeth remaine ; and this likewise pleased her verie well.

But now, although she had devised to passe the daie tyme with suche contentation, when she remembred at night she

must goe to bedde to be lubber leapt, and with what cold courtesie she should be entertained by her graie headed bedfelowe, what frosen embracementes he was able to bestowe of her, all was marde, and quite dashte out of remembraunce, and all the commodities, before spoken of, that she should receive in the tyme of the daie, would not serve to countervaile that one incommoditie, in the season of the night. Like as we saie, one vice spilles a greate noumber of vertues.

Thus Emelya was now to seeke, and could in no wise frame herself to love Philotus; but when she had flattered herself with a thousande delights that she should receive in the daie tyme by his wealth, when she remembred bedd tyme, she was newe to beginne as before. Wherefore she remained in greate perplexitie, thinkyng her happe to bee over hard, and the forte verie bare, where the beste choice had suche assuraunce of doubtful ende. For to marrie after her father's mynde, she knewe would breed her lothed life; and to gainsaie what he had determined would likewise loose her father's likyng, that she wiste not for her life whereon to resolve: and thus from daie to daie, as she continued in this doubte, there happened to hit into her companie a yong Romaine gentleman, whose name was Flavius, who sodainly fell in love with Emelia; and takyng the tyme whilst his opportunitie served, he let Emelia to understande of the greate love he bare her. Emelia, accordyng to the custome of women, made the matter verie coye at the firste, although in her harte she were right gladd, consideryng her case how it stode.

Flavius was so muche the more importunate upon her, and with suche nice termes, as woers be accustomed, he so courted and followed Emilia, that she, perceivyng his fervent affection, tolde hym a verie short circumstaunce, how her father had disposed her to one that she could not like of; and, therefore, if he would first promise to take her as his wife, and that he could finde suche meanes to conveigh her from her father's house in secret sorte (for otherwise she was sure her father

would be a let to hinder their purpose) she was contented to harken to his speeche, and yeelde to his demaunde. Flavius, the gladdest man in the worlde to heare these joyfull newes, sware unto her that all should bee accomplished, and that with as muche speede as herself would desire.

There was no more to conclude of then, but how she might be conveighed from out her father's house. Flavius devised that late in an evenyng, or in the night tyme, when every one were quiet in their beddes, if she could finde the meanes to get forth of doores, then he would bee readie to receive her. But that could not bee, for both her father and mother never failed to bee at home in the evenynges, and at nightes she was lodged in her father's chamber, that it was impossible for her to get forthe. So that there was no remedie, but that the feate must bee wrought in some after noone, when bothe her father and mother used to bee abroade about their businesse: and then she knewe not how to come forthe alone, because she had not been accustomed so to doe; and to followe a stranger, it would breede the greater suspition.

But Flavius, to avoide all these surmises, devised the nexte evenyng to conveigh her in, at some backe windowe of her father's house, a sute of mannes apparell, wherin the next daie in the afternoone, her father and mother being abroad, she should shift herself, and so come her waies, unknowne of any, to such a place, where he himself would be readie awaiting for her, and so conveigh her home to his owne house. This devise Emelia liked passyng well, and accordyng as it was appointed. The nexte evening, Flavius conveighed this sute of apparel in at the windowe, where Emelia was readie to receive it; and laiyng it up in safetie till the nexte daie in the after noone, her father and her mother beyng bothe forth of dores, she quickly shifted herself into this mannes apparell, and thus forthe of dores she goes to her appointed place, where Flavius was staiyng, who, accordyng to promise, conveighed her home to his owne house.

This matter was not so closely handeled by Emelia, but she was espyed by one of her father's servauntes, who, beyng on the backside, through a windowe sawe her how she was strippynge of herself, and marked how she put on the mannes apparell; whereat the yong fellowe had greate marveile, and stood still, beholdingy to see what would fall out in the ende. But when he sawe her goe forthe adores, he hasted after into the streates; but Emelia was so sodainly gone, that for his life he wiste not whiche waies to seeke after her: wherefore, in a wonderfull haste he came to his maister, whom he found in the citie, in the companie of Philotus, sayng, O sir ! I have verie evill newes to tell you.—What is the matter ? (q, his maister) is anythyng amisse at home ? Yea, sir, (q, the servaunte) your daughter Emelia is even now departed into the citie, in the habite of a manne, but whiche waies shē went, I could not for my life devise; for, after she gat once forthe of the place where she shifted her, I could never more set eye of her.

Is Emelia gone ? (q, her lover, Philotus) Oh God ! what evill newes bee these that I heare ? and, without any further staye, bothe the father and the lover gatte theim out at the doores together, and aboute the streates thei runne like a couple of madde menne. Now, it fell out that Phylerno, the sonne of Alberto and brother to Emelia, whom you have heard before, was lefte at Naples, beyng an infant, and had remained there till this time at schoole, and at this verie instant was come from Naples to Rome to visite his father and mother, of whom he had no maner of knowledge, otherwise then by their names. And it fortuned that Alberto and Phylotus happened to meeete with Phylerno in the streates, who was so like his sister Emilia, that bothe Alberto and Phylotus assured themselves that it could bee no other but she. Wherefore Alberto, commyng to hym, saied : Staie, staie, moste shamelesse and ungracious girle ! dooest thou thinke that by thy diguisyng of thyself in this maner, thou canste escape unknowne to me, who am thy father ? Ah, vile strumpet that thou arte ! what punishment

is sufficiente for the filthinesse of thy facte? And with this he seemed as though he would have flaine upon her in the streate to have beate her; but Phylotus thruste in betweene theim, and desired his neighbour to staie hymself: and then, im-bracyng Philerno in his armes, he saied, Ah, Emelia, my sweete and loyng wenche, how canste thou so unkindely forsake thy Philotus? whose tender love towrdes thee is such, that as I will not let to make thee seavanaugh of myself, so thou shalt be dame and mistres of all that ever I have, assuryng thee that thou shalt never want for golde, gemmes, jewells, suche as be fit and convenient for thy degree.

Philerno, seyng a couple of old doating fooles thus clus-teryng aboue hym, not knowyng what thei were, had thought at the firste thei had been out of their wittes; but in the ende, by their woordes perceivyng a farther circumstance in the matter, he devised somethyng for his owne disperte, to feede them a little with their owne follie, saied. Pardon me, I beseeche you, this my greevous offence, wherein I knowe I have too farre strayed from the limites and boundes of modestie, protestyng hereafter so to governe myself, that there shall be no sufficient cause whereby to accuse me of suche unmaidenlike partes, and will ever remaine with suche duetie and obedience, as I trust shall not deserve but to be liked duryng life.

Philotus, havyng heard this pitifull reconciliation made by his Emelia, verie gently entreated her father in her behalfe. Well (q, her father) seeyng you will needes have me to forgive this her leudnesse, at your requeste I am contented to pardon her; and then, speakyng to Philerno, he saied: How saie you, houswife, is your stomacke yet come doune? are you contented to take Philotus for your housebande? Yea, my good father, (q, Philerno) and that with all my harte. Oh, happie newes! (q, Philotus) and here withall he began to sette his cappe on the one side, and to tourne up his mustchatoes, and fell to wipyng of his mouthe, as though he would have falne a kissyng of her by and by in the streates; but remembryng hymself

where he was, hee brought Alberto, with Philerno, into a freendes house, that was of his familiare acquaintance, and there the marriage betweene theim was throughlie concluded, and all parties semyng to give their full consentes.

Philotus desired his father in lawe that he might have the custodie of Emelia, swearyng, by his old honestie, that he would not otherwise use her then his owne daughter Brisilla, untill the daie of his nuptials, and then to use her as his wife ; to whiche request Alberto seemed verie willyngly to give consent. But then, because Philotus would not carrie his beloved through the streates in her mannes apparell, he desired her fathir in law to go home, and sende some suite of her apparell, wherewith to shifte her before he would carrie her to his owne house. Alberto, seyng matters so throughlie concluded, tooke his leave of theim bothe, and goyng his waies home, he caused all his daughter's apparell to be looked together, and to be sent to the place where Philotus was remainyng with Philerno, who, takyng forthe suche as should serve the tourne for that present, Philerno, so well as he could, arraigned hymself in one of his sister's suites of apparell; and thus departed with Philotus to his owne house, where Philotus, callyng his daughter Brisilla, he saied unto her : Behold here the partie whom I have chosen to be your mother, chargyng you, of my blesyng, that you honour, reverence, and obeye her, and with all diligence that you be attendaunt upon her, and readie at an ynche to provide her of anythyng that she shall either want or call for. And you, my deare and lovyng Emelia, I doe here ordaine and appoint you to bee mistres of this house, and of all that is in it, desiryng you to accepte of this, my daughter, to doe you service in the daie tyme, and in the night to vouchsafe her for your bedfellowe, untill our daie of marriage bee prefixed, and then my self will supplie the roome. Philerno, seyng the excellent beautie of Brisilla, was nothyng sorie to have suche a bedfellowe, but thought every hower a daie, till night was come, which beyng approached, to bedde thei went, where Phi-

lerno did not thinke it his readiest waie to give any sodaine attempte, but therefore he brake into this discourse followyng.

My Brisilla, were it not but that we bee founde parciall in the causes of our frendes, but especially where the causes doe touche our parentes, our judgementes be so blinded by affection, that we can neither see, nor well confesse a manifest truthe; but if matters might be considered on, without respect of persones, with indifference, and accordyng to the truthe and equitie of the cause, I durste then put myself in your arbitremente, my Brisilla, and to abide your sentence, whereto I doubt not, but you would confesse the prejudice I sustaine, it is muche intollerable, and almoste impossible, for a yong maide to endure, and the rather, if you would measure my condition by your owne estate, who beeyng, as you see, a yong maiden like yourself, and should be thus constrained by my frendes to the marriyng of your father, whom I doe confesse to bee worthie of a better wife then myself. But consideryng the inequalitie of our yeres, I can not for my life frame myself to love hym, and yet I am forced against my will to marie him, and am appointed to be your mother, that am more meete to be your companion and pliae felowe. But that affiance whiche I have conceived in your good nature, hath made me thus boldly to speak unto you, desiryng but to heare your opinion with indifferencie, whether you thinke I have good cause to complaine, or naye: and then, peradventure, I will saie farther unto you, in a matter that doeth concerne your owne behoofe.

Brisilla hearyng this pitifull complaint, verie sorrowfull in her behalfe, saied: Would to God I were as well able to minister releef unto your distresse, accordyng to your owne contentment, as I am hartely sorie to consider your greef, and do wel perceive the juste occasion you have to complaine.

Ah, my Brisilla! said Philerno, I am as hartely sorie in your behalfe, and peradventure doe understande something whiche yourself dooe not yet knowe of, which will greeve you

verie sore; but first, Brisilla, let me aske you this question, doe you knowe my father, or naie?

No, sure (q, Brisilla), I have no maner of knowledge of him, neither did I knowe whether you had any father alive, or nay, but now by your owne reporte; and as straunge it was to me to heare the woordes whiche my father used to me this daie, when he brought you home, for that I never understande before that he went aboute a wife.

Philerno was verie glad to heare these newes, because it served so muche the better for his purpose, and therefore saied as followeth.

This tale that I minde to tell you (my Brisilla) will seme more straunge then all the reste, and yet assure yourself it is nothyng so strange as true, and therefore give eare to that I mynde to saie. Doe you not thinke it verie straunge in deede, that the one of us should bee made bothe mother and daughter to the other, and that our fathers, whiche bee now so diescrepit and olde, should bee so overhaled with the furie of their fonde and unbridled affections, that to serve their owne appetites thei force not with what clogges of care thei comber us, that be their lovyng daughters, but have concluded betwene them salves [a crosse marriage, and so indeede it maie well be tearmed, that will fall out so overthwarde to our behoofes, who beyng now in our yong and tender yeres, and should bothe of us be made the dearlinges of twoo old menne, that seekes to preferre their owne lust before their children's love, and measure the fierie flames of youth by the dead coales of age, as though thei were able with their cold and rare imbracementes to delaie the forces of the fleshe, whose flames doeth exceed in these our greene and tender yeres, and as muche possible for us to continue in likyng, as flowers are seen to agree with froste. But in plaine tearmes (my Brisilla), and to discipher a very troth, it is contracted betweene our aged parentes that your father (as you see) should first take me to his wife: whiche weddyng beeyng once performed, then my father, in

like maner, should chalenge you, accordyng as it is concluded betweene them.

Alas ! (q, Brisilla) these newes bee straunge in deede, and it should seem by your wordes so fullie resolved on, that there is no hope of redresse to be had in the matter.

None in the worlde (q, Philerino) ; but thus betweene our-selves, the one of us to comfort the other.

A colde conforte (q, Brisilla), we shall finde in that ; but oh, pitilesse parentes ! that will preferre your owne pleasures with your children's paine, your owne likyng with you children's loathyng, your owne gaine with your children's greefe, your owne sporte with your children's spoile, your own delight with your children's despight. O, how muche more happie had it been, that we had never been borne !

Alas, my Brisilla ! (q, Philerino), torment not yourself with suche extreame anguishe, for if that would have served for redresse the matter had been remedied, and that long sithence. But I would to God, my Brisilla, that I were a manne for your onely sake, and havyng so good leisure as thus beeyng together by ourselves, we would so handle the matter, that our fathers should seeke newe wives.

Alas ! (q, Brisilla), suche wishes are but waste, and un-possible it is that any suche thyng should happen.

Impossible ! (q, Philerino.) Naie surely, Brisilla, these is nothyng impossible, but I have knowne as greate matters as these have been wrought : doe we not read that the goddesse Venus transformed an ivorie image to a lively and perfect woman, at the onelie requeste of Pygmalion ? Diana likewise converted Acteon to a harte ; Narcissus for his pride was turned to a flower ; Arachne to a spider ; with a greate number of others have bin trasformed, some into beastes, some into foules, and some into fishes ; but amongst the reste of the miracles that have bin wrought by the goddesse, this storie falleth out moste meete and fittyng to our purpose.

There was sometime remaining in the countrey of Phestos,

a maried couple, the housbande called by the name of Lictus, the wife Telethusa, who beyng with childe, was willed by her housbande, so sone as she should be delivered, if it were not a lad, that the childe should presently be slaine. His wife beyng delivered at her appointed tyme brought forthe a girle, and yet, notwithstandingyng her housbandes commaundement, brought up the childe, makynge her housebande beleewe it was a boye, and called it by the name of Iphis, and thus as it grew in yeares was apparelled like a lad. And beyng after by his father assured to a wife, called by the name of Ianthe, a young maiden, and the daughter of one Telest, dwellyng in Dictis, Telethusa, the mother of Iphis, fearyng her deceipt would bee knowne, deferred of the marriage daie so long as she could, sometymes fainyng tokens of ill successe, sometimes faining sicknesse, sometymes one thyng, sometymes another; but when all her shiftes were driven to an ende, and the marriage daie at hand, Telethusa commyng to the temple of the goddesse Isis, with her heire scattered aboute her eares, where before the auter of Isis she made her humble suppli-cations; and the gentle goddesse, having compassion, transformed Iphis to a man.

Loe here, Brisilla, as greate a matter brought to passe as any wee have spoken of yet, and the goddesse bee of as greate force and might in these daies as ever thei were in times past: we want but the same zeale and faithe to demaunde it; and sure, in my opinion, if either of us made our request to the goddes, who commenly be still assistant to helpe distressed wightes, thei would never refuse to graunt our reasonable requestes, and I will adventure on it myself, and that without any farther circumstaunce.—And here with all he seemed, with many piteous sighes, throwing up his handes to the heavens, to mumble forthe many wordes in secrete, as though he had been in some greate contemplation, and sodainly, without any maner of stirring either of hande or foote, did lye still as it had bin a thing immovable, whereat Brisilla beganne

for to muse, and in the ende spake to hym ; but Phylerno made no maner aunswere, but seemed as though he had bin in some traunce, wherewith Brisilla began to call, and with her arme to shake hym, and Phylerno givynge a piteous sigh, as though he had bin awaked sodainly out of some dream, saied : O, blessed goddesse Venus ! I yeeld thee humble thankes, that hast not despised to graunt my request. And then speakyng to Brisilla, he saied : And now, my Brisilla, be of good conforte, for the same goddesse whiche has not disdained to heare my supplication, will likewise be assistaunt to further our farther pretences, as hereafter at our better leisure we shall consider of. In the meane tyme receive thy lovyng freende, that to daie was appointed to be thy father's wife, but now consecrated by the goddesse to be thy lovyng housebande. And here withall imbrasing Brisilla in his armes, she perceived in deede that Emelia was perfectly metamorphosed, whiche contented her very well, thinkyng herself a thrise happy woman to light of suche a bedfellowe. Thus both of them, the one pleased very well with the other, they passed the tyme, till Phylotus had prepared and made all thynges readie for his marriage daie, and then, callyng his freendes and neighbours about hym, to the churche thei goe together, where Alberto gave Phylerno his sonne, in the steede of his daughter Emelia, to Phylotus for his wife. When all the reste of the marriage rites that are to be doen in the churche were performed, thei passed forthe the daie with feastyng and greate mirthe untill it was night. When the companie beganne to breake up, and every one to take his leave, and Phylotus, with his bride, were brought into their chamber, where Phylerno, desiryng the companie to avoide, and makynge fast the doore, he saied to Phylotus : There resteth yet a matter to be decided betweene you and me, and seyng we be here together by ourselves, and that tyme and place doeth fall out so fit, I hold it for the best, that it be presently determined.

What is the matter then ? (q Phylotus) : speake boldly, my

Emelia, and if there be anything that hanges in dispence betwene us, I trust it shall easely bee brought to a good agreement.

I prai God it maie (q, Phylerno), and to reveale the matter in breefe and shorte circumstaunce, it is this. You are now my housebande, and I your lawfull wife, and for that I doce knowe the difference in our yeares, yourself being so olde, and I very yong, it must needes fall out there will be as greate deversitie in our conditions, for age is commonly given to be frowarde, testie, and overthwart ; youth, againe, to be frolique, pleasaunt, and merrie : and so, likewise, in all our other condicions wee shall be founde so contrarie and disagreeyng, that it will be impossible for us to like the one of the others doynges ; for when I shall seeme to followe my owne humour, then it will fall out to your discontentment ; and you againe, to follow that diet which your age doeth constraine, will be mooste lothsome unto me. Then you, beeyng my housebande, will thinke to commaunde me, and I must be obedient to your will, but I, beeyng your wife, will thinke scorne to be controlde, and will dispose of my self accordyng to my owne likyng, and then what braules and brabbles will fall out, it were to muche to bee rehearsed ; and thus we shall live neither of us bothe in quiet, nor neither of us bothe contented, and therefore for the avoidyng of these inconveniences I have devised this wae : that beeyng thus together by our selves we will trie by the eares whiche of us shall bee maister, and have authoritie to commaunde. If the victorie happen on your side, I am contented for ever after to frame myself to your ordinaunce and will as it shall please you to appointe ; if otherwise the conquest happen on my side, I will triumph like a victor, and will looke to beare such a swaie, that I will not be contraried in any thing, what so ever it shall please me to commaunde.

Phylotus knowyng not what to make of these speeches, and thinkyng the tyme verie long till he had taked his firste

friutes, said : Come, come, my Emelia, lette us goe to bedde, where I doubt not but we shall so well agree, that these matters will easely bee taken up, without any controversie suche as you have spoken of.

Never while I live (q, Phylerno), before I knowe where on to resolve, and whether you shall reste at my commaundement, or I at yours.

Why (q, Phylotus) dooe you speake in earnest? or would you looke to commaunde me that am your housebande, to whom you ought to use all duetie and obedience?

Then were I in good case (q, Phylerno), that should bee tied to use duetie or obedience to a manne of your yeares, that would not let to prescribe us rules of your owne dotage, to be observed in steede of domesticall discipline.

Then I perceive (q, Phylotus) wee shall have somethyng adooe with you hereafter, that will use me with these tearmes the verie firste night. But see you make no more to dooe, but come on your waies to bedde.

And I perceive (q, Phylerno) the longer that I beare with you the more foole I shall finde you: and with this up with his fiste, and gave Phylotus a sure wheritte on the eare. Phylotus in a greate rage flies againe to Phylerno: there was betweene them souse for souse, and boxe for boxe, that it was harde to judge who should have the victorie. In the ende Phylerno gettes Phylotus faste by the graie bearde, and by plaine force pulles hym doun on the flower, and so he pomels hym aboute the face, that he was like to have been strangled with his owne bloud, which gushed out of his nose and mouth. Wherfore holdyng up his handes, he cried, Oh, Emilia! I yeelde myself vanquished and overcome. For God's sake holde thy handes, and I will never more contende with thee duryng life.

Phylerno staiying hymself, saied : Art thou contented, then, to yeeld me the conquest, and hereafter this, according as thou hast said, nevermore to strive with me, never

to gainsay anything, what so ever it shall please me to commaunde.

Never, while I live (q, Phylotus) ; and therefore, for God's sake, let me arise, and chalenge to yourself what superioritie you please, whiche for me shall never be denaied so long as I shall live.

Well (q, Phylerno) but before I will let you arise, I will have you promise me to confirme these conditions, which folowe in this maner : firste, that at my pleasure I maie goe abroade with my freendes, to make merie so often as I liste, whither I liste, and with whom I list ; and neither at my goyng forthe to be demaunded whither I will, ne at my retourne to bee asked where I have been : I will farther have you condescende to this ; that for as muche as I have learned that it is not onely verie untothsome, but likewise verie unwhole-some, for youth and age to lye sokynge together in one bedde, I will therefore make no bedfellowe of you but at my owne pleasure, and in maner as followeth, that is to saie : this first yere I shall be contented to bestowe one night in a moneth to doe you pleasure, if I maie see you worthie of it, or that you be able to deserve it ; but the first yere beyng once expired, fower tymes a yere maie very well suffice, that is one night a quarter, as it shall please myself to appoint. There be many other matters whiche I will not now stande to repeate, but these before rehearsed be the principall thynges wherein I wil not bee controlde, but meane to followe myne owne likyng. How saie you, Phylotus ? can you bee contented to frame yourself herein, to followe my direction ?

Alas ! (q, Phylotus) I see no other shifte : I must perforce endeavour myself patiently to abide what soever it shall please you to commaunde ; and doe yeeld myself as recreant and overcome, and wholy doe put myself to your favour and mercie, readie to receive whatsoever it shall please you to awarde unto me.

Phylerno, letting hym now arise, saied : Prepare yourself

then to goe to your bedde, and anon, at myne own leisure, I will come unto you, and departe againe at myne owne pleasure, when I shall see tyme.

Phylotus, comfortyng hymself with these swete speeches, did thinke it yet to be some parte of amendes that she had promised to come and visite hym, went quietly to his bedde, there to abide the good hower till Emelia did come.

Phylerno havyng prepared one of these marcenarie women (whereof there are greate store in Rome to bee had) conveighed her to the bedd of Phylotus, givynge her enstrunctions how to use herself, and went himself to his beste beloved Brissilla, whom he had made privie to his whole devise, and in this maner it was agreed betwene them: thei had thought to have dieted Phylotus once a moneth with some cast stiffe, suche as thei could hire best cheape in the toune.

But it fell out that Flavius, whom you have heard before had stolne awaie Emelia, beyng at the churche the same daie that Phylotus was maried, and saw Alberto give his daughter Emelia to Phylotus for his wife, had thought assuredly that hymself had been deceived by some devill or spirite, that had taken upon hym the likenesse of Emelia: and therefore, hastynge hymself home with all possible speede, came to Emelia, and blesсыng hymself, he saied. I charge thee, in the name of the livityng God, that thou tell me what thou art, and that thou presently departe to the place from whence thou camest: and I conjure thee, in the name of the holie Trinitie, by our blessed ladie Virgine Marie, by aungels and archaungles, patriarches and prophetes, by the Apostles and fower Evangelistes, Matthew, Marke, Luke and Jhon, by all the holie martyres and confessours, and the reste of the rable and blessed route of heaven, that thou quietly departe without any maner of prejudice either to manne, woman, or childe, either to any maner of beaste that is uppon the face of the earth, the foules of the ayre, or the fishes in the sea, and without any maner of tempest, storme, whirlewinde, thunder or

lightnyng, and that thou take no maner of shape that maie seeme either terrible or fearfull unto me.

Emelia haryng these woordes, merveilyng muche what thei ment, with a smilyng countenaunce came towardes Flavius, saiyng: Why how now, Seignior Flavius! what, doe you thinke me to bee some devill, or any hagge of hell, that you fall to conjuryng, and blesyng of yourself?

I charge thee come no nere (q. Flavius): stande backe, for these intieementes can no longer abuse me. When I have seen with myne eyes my beloved Emelia maried in the churche, and given by Alberto, her father, to Phylotus for his wife, what should I thinke of thee but to be some feende, or sent unto me by some inchauntement or witchcrafte? and therefore I will no longer neither of thy compainie, neither of thy conference. And herewithall takyng Emelia by the shoulders he thrust her forthe of doores, and shutting the doore after her, he gat hym to his chamber, where he fell to his praiers, thinking assuredly that Emelia had been some sprite. But Emelia, after she had a three or fewer daies made what meanes she could to Flavius, and sawe it was in vaine, was driven to goe to her father, before whom fallyng upon her knees, she desired hym moste humbly to forgive her. Alberto takyng her up in his armes, saied, that he knewe nothyng wherein she had offended hym, but her suite might easily be graunted.

Deare father (q. Emelia) I knowe I have offended, and so farre as my facte deserveth, rather to be punished then pitied; the remembraunce wherof is so lothsome unto me, that I feare to call you by the name of father, having shewed myself so unworthie a daughter. These wordes she pronounced with such sorrowe that the teares streamed doun her cheekes, wherewith Alberto, moved with naturall affection, saied: Deare child, I knowe no such offence that ought to be, so greevously taken; but speake boldly—whatsoever it be, I freely forgive it.

Emelia, verie well comforted with these speeches, began to discourse how she firste disguised herself in page's apparel, and what greef it was to her conscience that she should so farr straie from the duetie and obedience of a childe, and to become a fugitive in a mannes apparell. But her father not sufferyng her further to proceede in her tale, saied : Alas ! deare daughter, if this bee the matter, it is long agoe sithe I have bothe forgiven and forgotten these causes, and therefore let these thynges never trouble you. But tell me now, how doe you like of your bedfellowe, how agree you with him, or he with you, I would be glad to knowe ?

Alas ! deare father (q, Emelia) that is the matter that I come to you : he hath turned me awaie, and wil no longer take me for his wife ; and what is the cause that hath moved hym unto it, I protest before God I knowe not for my life.

Hath he turned thee awaie ? (q, Alberto) myself wil quickly finde a remedie for that matter : and without any more to do would not tarry so much as while his gounе was a brushyng, but out of doores he goes towards Phylotus, whom by chaunce he met withall in the streates, and in greate chafe begins to chalenge hym for abusyng of his daughter, swearingg that he would make all Rome to speake of his abuse, if he ment to proceede in that he had begunne.

Phylotus, wonderyng to see the man in suche an agonie, beganne to wishe that he had never seene hym nor his daughter neither, and that, if any bodie have cause to complaine, it is I (q, Phylotus) that have married suche a wife, that is more like to a devill then a woman ; and I perceive now is maintained in her mischiefe by you, that are her father, who ought rather to rebuke her then so to take her part, and to incourage her in her leudenesse.

What incouragment is this you speake of ? (q, Alberto) I knowe not what you meane by these wordes ; but assure yourself of this, that as I will not maintaine my child in anything that is evill, so I will not see her take a manifest wrong.

Doe you thinke this to be good, then (q, Phylotus), that your daughter should bestowe suche hancell on her housebande as she hath all readie bestowed upon me? and then, pointyng to his face, he said, See here your daughter's handie woorke: how thinke you, is this requisite to be borne with all, that you stande so muche in your daughter's defence?

Alberto, seeyng his face all swolne, and the skinne scratched of, perceived that Phylotus was at a fraie, and had good cause to complaine, and, wonderyng that his daughter was so sodainly become a shrewe, said: If this bee my daughter's handie woorke, I can neither beare withall, neither will I allowe it in her so to use her housebande; and therefore, I pracie you, lette me heare the matter debated betweene you, and I doubt not but to take such order, as there shall no more any suche rule happen betweene you.

I am contented you shall debate what you will (q, Phylotus) so it maie be doen with quietnesse; but I will never more contende with her for the masterie while I live: she hath alreadie wonne it—I am contented she shall weare it.

I pracie you then (q, Alberto) that you will goe home to your owne house, and I will goe fetche my daughter, and will come unto you straightwaie; and I doubt not but to take suche order betweene you as shall fall out to bothe your likynges.

I pracie God you maie (q, Philotus) and I will goe home, and there will staie your commyng.

Alberto likewise went to his owne house, and callyng Emelia, said never a woerde unto her, but willed her to followe hym; and commyng to the house of Philotus, whom he founde within, tarryng his commyng; and by fortune, at the same instant, Philerno and Brisilla bothe were gone into the toune to buye certaine thynges that thei had neede of. And Alberto beginning first to rebuke his daughter, that would seme in suche maner to abuse her houseband, and with a long discourse he preached unto her, with what duetie and obedience women ought to use their housebandes withall, and not to

take upon them, like maisters, to correct and chastice them. Emelia deniaid not only the fact, but also she deniaid Philotus to be her housebande.

What have wee here to doe? (q, her father) how canst thou (shamelesse queane) denaye that whiche within these fower daies was performed in the face of the whole worlde?

Emelia, standing stiffe to her tackelyng, would in nowise confesse that ever she was married.

Then her father began to charge her with her owne words which she had used to hym before; how she had disguised herself in man's apparell, and so stole awaie forthe of dores, the whiche Emelia never deniaid. Why then (q, her father) did not I meete thee in the streates, and at the request of thy housebande, here present, did forgive thee thy fault, to whom I then delivered thee, and with whom thou hast ever sithence remained?

Emelia made flatte deniall of any of all these saiynges to bee true. Alberto, in a greate furie, would have taken witnessesse of Philotus in the matter; but Philotus, fearyng an other banquet at night when he should goe to bedde, durste not in any wise seeme to contrary Emelia. In the ende, after greate fendyng and provyng had in the matter, Emelia, from poincte to poincte, discoursed to her father, how she firste fell into the likyng of Flavius, and by his practise so conveighed herself awaie in his page's apparell, and had with hym remained all this while, till now he had tourned her awaie.

Her father would in no wise allowe this tale to be true; but Flavius beeyng well knowne to bee a courteous gentleman, Alberto devised to sende for hym, who presently, at his gentle intreatie, came to the house of Philotus, where he spared not to confesse a truthe, that onely for the love that he bare to Emelia he devised to steale her awaie; and there came one unto him in the likenesse of Emelia, and in the same apparell that he had provided for her, whom he verie charely kepte, untill suche tyme as he sawe with his owne eyes that Emelia

was married in the churche to Philotus, and then assuryng hym self that he had been deceived by some spirite that had taken upon hym the similitude and likenesse of Emelia, he presentlie came home and tourned her awaie, and what was become of her he could never learne.

Alberto, muche amazed to heare this tale, said : Senior Flavius, dooe you knowe your Emelia againe if you see her ? And then poinctyng to his daughter, he said : Is not this the same Emelia that you speake of, whiche you have tourned awaie ?

I knowe not (q, Flavius) the one from the other, but sure I sawe with myne eyes twoo Emelias so like, that the one of them of force must needes bee the devill.

There is no question (q, Philotus) but that is my wife : if there bee ever a devill of theim bothe, I knowe it is she. Out, alas ! that ever I was borne. What shall I now dooe ? I knowe I have married a devill.

And by fortune, as Alberto chaunced to look forthe of the windowe, he espied Philerno and Brisilla in the streate commyng homewardes. Peace ! (q, Alberto) here commeth the other Emelia : wee shall now trie whiche of theim is the devill (I thinke) before we departe.

By this Philerno was come in, and hearing how matters had been debated, and were falne out, againe knowing Alberto to be his father, and what prejudice his sister Emelia was like to sustaine if she should be forsaken by her freende and lover, Flavius, confessed the whole matter, humbly desiryng his father to forgive hym.

When he had a while wondered at the circumstaunce, and the truthe of every thing laid open and come to light, all parties were well pleased and contented, savyng Philotus : for when he remembered, first, the losse of his love, Emelia, then how Philerno had beaten him, what a bedfellowe he had provided hym, while he hymself went and laie with his daughter, these thynges putte all together made hym in

suche a chafe, that he was like to run out of his wittes. But when he had raged a good while, and sawe how little helpe it did prevaile hym, he was contented, in the ende, that his daughter Brisilla should marrie with Philerno, and Flavius verie joyfully received againe his Emelia (when he knewe she was no devill) and bothe the marriages consummat in one day. And so I prae God give them joye, and every old dotarde so good successe as had Philotus.

FINIS.

## THE CONCLUSION.

Gentle reader, now thou hast perused these histories to the ende, I doubt not but thou wilte deeme of them as thei worthely deserve, and thinke suche vanities more fitter to bee presented on a stage (as some of theim have been) then to bee published in printe, (as till now they have never been) but to excuse myself of the follie that here might bee imputed unto me, that my self beyng the first that have put them to the print, should likewise be the first that should condemne them as vaine. For mine owne excuse herein I aunswere, that in the writyng of them I have used the same maner that many of our yong gentlemen useth now adaias in the wearing of their apparell, which is rather to followe a fashion that is newe, bee it never so foolish, then to bee tied to a more decent custome, that is cleane out of use ; sometyme wearyng their haire free-seled so long, that makes theim looke like a water spaniell ; sometymes so shorte, like a newe shorne sheepe ; their beardes sometymes cutte rounde, like a Philippes doler, sometymes square, like the kynges hedde in Fishstreate ; sometymes so neare the skinne, that a manne might judge by his face the gentleman had had verie pilde lucke : their cappes and hattes sometymes so bigge, as will hold more witte then three of them have in their heddes ; sometymes so little, that it will hold no witte at all : their ruffes sometimes so huge, as shall hang aboute their neckes like a carte wheele ; sometymes a little fallyng bande, that makes theim looke like one of the queen's silkewomen : their clokes sometymes so long, as it shall trippe on their heeles, sometymes so shorte, as will not hang over their elbowes : their jerkynnes sometymes with hye collors, buttoned close under their chinne ; sometymes with no collars at all aboute their neckes, like a wenche in a redde wastcoate

that were washyng of a bucke ; sometymes with long, sausie sleeves, that will be in every dishe before his maister ; sometymes without sleeves, like Scogins manne, that used to run of sleevelesse errandes : their dublettes sometyme faggotte wasted above the navill ; sometymes cowbeallied belowe the flanckes, that the gentleman must undee a button when he goes to pissee.

In their hooose so many fashions as I can not describe ; sometymes garragascoynes, breached like a beare ; sometymes close to the docke, like the devill in a plaie (wantyng but a taile) ; sometymes rounde, like to Saincte Thomas onions : sometymes petite ruffes, of twoo ynches long, with a close stockyng cleane aboue the nocke of his taile ; sometymes disguisynge theim-selves after the use of Spaine, sometymes after the Italian maner ; and many tymes thei imitate the Frenche fashion so neare, that all their haire is readie to fall of thei' hedes.

Now I am sure, if any of theim were asked why he used suchе varietie in his apparell, he would aunswere, because he would followe the fashion. Lette this, then, suffice likewise for myne excuse ; that myself, seeyng trifles of no account to be now best in season, and suchе vanities more desired then matters of better purpose, and the greatest parte of our writers still busied with the like, so I have put forthe this booke, because I would followe the fashion.

And nowe, freendlie reader, because I have entred thus farre to speake of fashions, I will conclude with a tale that maketh somethyng for my purpose. I have read it so long agoe, that I cannot tell you where, nor the matter is not greate, though I doe not tell you when. But in Englande (as I think) and, as it should seme, nere abonte London, there was sometymes dwellyng a gentleman, though not of verie greate wealth, yet of a verie honest life, and of good reporte emongest his neighbours, whose name was Maister Persinus. This gentilman had a daughter, whose name was Mildred, aboue the age of eighteene yeres, of a singulare beautie, verie well trained up by her owne mother, who was likewise living, and with whom she

now remained. It fortuned that a devil of hell, called Balthaser ; no inferiour devill, but a maister devill, a principall officer and commaunder in helle ; and truste me, if there were ever a devill that was an honeste manne, Balthaser was he, savyng that, beyng now an auncient devill, and well spente in yeres, he beganne to waxe wanton, and to deate in the love of Mistres Mildred ; but yet not like our greatest parte of lovers now a daies, that still practise their loves unlawfully, more for luste then for loyaltie. But Balthaser, contrariwise, bare his love honestlie, lawfullie, yea, and in the waie of marriage, the whiche to bryng to passe, he toke suche continuall care and travaile in his mynde, that he now confessed the fire of helle to bee but a trifle, in respecte of the scorchyng flames of love ; sometymes conjecturyng in his minde what bashfulnessse is founde to bee in yong damselles in these daies, but especially when a manne comes to proffer them love, they are so shamefast, that with a good wil thei would never heare of marriage till thei were thirtie yeres old at the leaste ; and many of theim, if it were not for menne, I think, could bee well contented to leade apes in hell : other whiles he remembered the greedie desire that is generallie in parentes, who never consente to the marriyng of their faire daughters without some greate joynter. Now, the devill had no landes, and, therefore, to finde the beste remedie he could, thei saie the devill is able to put uppon hym all maner of shapes ; so he tooke upon hym the presence and personage of so gallant a yong gentleman, as fitted so well the fancie of Mistres Mildred, that, without any long circumstance, she was contented to accept hym for her housebande : the whiche beeyng perceived by her father and mother, not mindyng to contrarie their daughter's likyng, gave their free consentes. There was no more to dooe, but to appoinete for their marriyng daie, the whiche beeyng once expired, the devil, sittynge by his beste beloved, uttered these wordes, or suche like as followeth.

My good Mildred, my deare and loyng wife, I muste confesse myself not a little beholdyng unto you, that, neither

examinyng my petigree, from whence I came, neither yet how I am able to kepe you, would, notwithstandingyng, vouchsafe to take me for your housebande, I muste thinke your courtesie proceade of love, and doe accoumpte myself so muche the more beholdyng unto you. And now to give you some triall that you have not made your choice of a rascall, or a knave of no reputation, I am contented to give you one demaunde, whatsoever you thinke beste to require of me; and therefore, my deare, aske what you liste, your desire shalbee satisfied, alwaies provided that hereafter you never trouble me with any farther requestes.

The yong wife, wonderfully well contented with these lovyng speeches of her courteous housebande, desired of hym a little pause and respite: and now, commyng to her mother, to whom she unfolded the whole contentes of the premises, sittynge theim doune together to consider of the matter, after a greate nomber of consultations, and as many imaginations had betwene them, in the ende thei concluded that her request should bee for a sute of apparell of a gallaunt fashion, but even then newlie come up: and, commyng to her housebande with this demaunde, thei had their wishe presently accomplished, and this sute of apparell laied by them, so well made and fitted as possibly could bee desired.

Thus all parties were well pleased: thei continued in good likyng for the space of one moneth, at whiche tyme an other newe fashion was then come up, as well in the attiryng of their heddes, as also in the makyng of their gounes, kirtells, and stomachachers. Mistres Mildred, beyng now quite out of conceit, for that she had never a goun to putte on her backe but of a stale cutte, and the fashion at the leaste of a monethe olde, who would blame the gentlewoman, though she tooke it very grievously. Alas! her minde was so far out of quiet, that her meate almoste did her no maner of good: whiche sodaine alteration beyng perceived by her houseband, he beganne to intrete her to shewe hym the cause of her conceived greef; the whiche when she had reveiled, the good honest

devill her houseband saied: Well, my deare wife, although when I satisfied your last demaunde, my conditions were that you should never trouble me with any further requestes, yet, once againe to recomforte you, aske of me what you will, I will graunte your desire; but, to cutte you of all hope that hereafter this I wil never be troubled again with newe fashions, assure yourself that this is the last request that ever I minde to graunt you.

Mistres Mildred, givynge hym twentie kisses for his kindnesse, went again to her mother with these joyfull newes, and, concluding as before, thei brought the devill an inventorie of newe fashions, beginning with cappes, caules, quayves, ruffes, partlettes, sleeves, gounes, kirtelles, peticotes; and there was no stitche, no cutte, no lace, no garde, nor no fashion that was then in use, but in this inventorie it was to bee founde: and as before, this bill was no sooner presented, but all thinges were in readinesse, so well fitted and fashioned, as if the moste cunnyngest workemen in Englande had been at the makyng. But what should I saie? Before another moneth was expired, there was a newe invention; for then came up newe fashions in their caps, in their hattes, in their caules, newe fashioned shadowes; then came up periwigges, frizelyng, and curlyng; then came up dublettes, bombastyng, and bolstertyng; newe fashions in their gounes, kirtelles, and peticotes; then thei began to weare crimsin, carnation, greene and yellowe stockynges: to bee shorte, there was suche alteration in women's apparell, from the top to the toe, in a moneth, that Mistres Mildred thought herself now againe to bee cleane out of fashion, the remembraunce whereof brought her likewise to be quite out of countenaunce. But when she remembered how she was prohibited from makyng any further demaundes, it did so gaule her at the harte, that now she beganne to froune, lumpe, and lowre at her housebande, whiche when he perceived, he saied unto her: Why, how now, my good Mildred? I feare me thy hedde is troubled againe with newe fashions. From whence commeth these sodaine fittes? What is the matter that

breedeth such alteration in thy maners? Tell me, I pracie thee, what is it that doeth offend thee?

The poore gentlewoman, not able to speake one woordes for weepyng, at the laste, burstyng out into these tearmes, if (q, she) I had made my choise of a housbande worthie of myself, I should never have given hym cause thus to wonder at me, nor myselfe have had occasion to complaine for such a trifle, for that I might have doen as other women doe, and have followed every fashion and every newe devise, without either grudging, or restraint of my desire: I should not then have been enjoyned to such a kind of silence, but I might have made my housebande privie to my wantes: I should not then have bin kept, like Jone of the countrey, in a tyre of the olde fassion, devised a moneth agoe.

While Mistres Mildred was proceeding in these speeches, or such other like, the devill her housebande was stroke in such a dumpe, that, not able any longer to indure her talke, he not onely avoided hymself from her presence, but also devised with speede to flie the countrey; and commyng to Dover, thinkyng to crosse the seas, findyng no shippynge readie, he altered his course, and gat hym into Scotlande, never staiyng till he came to Edenbrough, where the kyng kept his court. And now, forgetting all humanitie, whiche he had learned before in Englande, he began againe a freshe to plaie the devill, and so possessed the King of Scots himself with such straunge and unacquainted passions, that, by the conjecture of phisitions and other learned men, that were then assembled together to judge the kynges diseases, thei al concluded that it must needes bee some feende of hell that so disturbde their prince. Whereupon, proclamations were presently sent forthe, that who-soever could give releef should have a thousand crounes by the yere, so long as he did live. The desire of these crounes caused many to attempt the matter, but the furie of the devill was such, that no man could prevale.

Now, it fortuned that Persinus, the father of Mistres Mildred, at this present to be at Edenbrough, who, by constrainte

of some extremitie, was now compelled to practise phisicke, wherein he had some pretie sight; but therewithall so good successse, that who but Persinus, the English phisition, had al the name through the whole realme of Scotlande. The fame of this phisition came to the hearyng of the kyng, who, sendyng for Persinus, began to debate with hym of the straungnesse of his fittes, profferyng large sommes of money if he coulde finde a remedie: to whom Persinus answered, that it passed farre his skill. The kyng, notwithstandingyng, would not give over, but intreated Persinus to take in hande the cure; whiche when he still denaied, did thinke it rather proceeded of stubbornesse then for want of experiance, wherefore he began to threaten hym, swearyng, that if he would not accomplishe his request, it should cost hym his life.

Persinus, seyng hymself so hardly besteade, was contented to trie some part of his cunnyng; and the next daie, when the kyng was in his fitte, he was brought in to see the maner how it helde hym. Whom the devill perceivyng to come in at the doore, speaking to Persinus, he saied in this maner.

My father Persinus, I am glad I see you here. But what winde hath driven you hether to this place?

Why, what arte thou, (q. Persinus) that callest me thy father?

Marie, (q. the devill) I am Balthaser, that was once maried to your daughter; in deede, a devill of hell, though you never knewe it before, whom your daughter weried so muche with her newe fashions, as I had rather be in hell then married to such a wife.

And arte thou, then, Balthaser? (q. Persinus) why, then, I pracie thee, good sonne, departe the Kyng of Scots; for he hath threatned me, for thy cause, to take awaie my life.

Marie, (q. Balthaser) even so I would have it: it were some parte of aquitaunce for your daughter's kindnesse towardes me.

Persinus, seyng the disposition of the devill, thought it not good to deale any farther with hym at that present; but afterwarde, when the kyng was come to hymself, he requested of

hym but respite for one moneth ; and against the daie that he should then take him in hande againe, he devised with the king that all the ordnaunce in the toun might be shot of, an the belles in the towne might be rong, and that all the trumpets, drummes, and all maner of other instruments, might altogether sounde about the court and lodging of the King.

These thynges beyng accordyngly prepared, and the daie come that was assigned, Persinus being with the King at the beginning of his fit, accordyng as it was appointed, the ordnaunce was shot of, the belles began to ring, musitions played on every side : at whiche sodaine noyse, the devill beganne to wonder, and callyng to Persinus, he saied : Why, how now, father, what meaneth all this noyse ?

Why, (q, Persinus) doest thou not knowe the meanyng ? then, I perceive, devilles dooe not knowe all : but, because thou must be acquainted with it, I will tell thee afore hande. The laste tyme I talked with thee, thou toldest me thou hadst married my daughter ; and thy tokens were so true, that I am sure thou didst not lye ; for which cause, knowing where thy bidyng is, I have sent for her to the towne, and this noyse that thou hearest is her welcome to the courte.

And is my wife, then, come hether to seeke me out ? (q, the devill) then I shall sure to be troubled with new fashions. Naie, then, farewell, Scotland ; for I had rather goe to hell. And thus leavyng the kyng, he departed his wae.

Now to conclude. If a sillie woman were able to wearie the devill, that troubled hym with newe fashions but once in a moneth, I thinke God himself will be wearied with the outrages of men, that are busied with new fangles at the least once a daie. I can no more ; but wishe that gentlemen, leavyng suche superficiall follies, would rather indeavour themselves in other exercises, that might be much more beneficiall to their countrey, and a greate deale better to their owne reputation : and thus an ende.

FINIS.

# PIERCE PENNILESS'S SUPPLICATION TO THE DEVIL.

BY

THOMAS NASH.

FROM THE FIRST EDITION OF 1592,

COMPARED WITH LATER IMPRESSIONS.

WITH

AN INTRODUCTION AND NOTES,

BY J. PAYNE COLLIER, ESQ., F.S.A.



LONDON:  
REPRINTED FOR THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY.

---

1842.

LONDON:

P. SHOBERL, JUN., 51, RUPERT STREET, HAYMARKET,  
PRINTER TO H. R. H. PRINCE ALBERT.

COUNCIL  
OF  
THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY.

---

**President.**

THE MOST NOBLE THE MARQUESS OF NORMANBY.

**Vice-Presidents.**

RT. HON. LORD BRAYBROOKE, F.S.A.  
RT. HON. LORD F. EGERTON, M.P.  
RT. HON. THE EARL OF GLENGALL.  
RT. HON. EARL HOWE.  
RT. HON. LORD LEIGH.  
RT. HON. THE EARL OF POWIS.  
  
AMYOT, THOMAS, ESQ., F.R.S., TREAS. S. A.  
AYRTON, WILLIAM, ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A.  
BOTFIELD, BERIAH, ESQ., M.P.  
BRUCE, JOHN, ESQ., F.S.A.  
COLLIER, J. PAYNE, ESQ., F.S.A., DIRECTOR.  
CRAIK, GEORGE L., ESQ.  
CUNNINGHAM, PETER, ESQ., TREASURER.  
DYCE, REV. ALEXANDER.  
FIELD, BARRON, ESQ.  
HALLAM, HENRY, ESQ., F.R.S., V.P.S.A.  
HALLIWELL, J. O., ESQ., F.R.S. F.S.A.  
HARNESS, REV. WILLIAM.  
MACREADY, WILLIAM C., ESQ.  
MILMAN, REV. HENRY HART.  
OXENFORD, JOHN, ESQ.  
PETTIGREW, T. J., ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A.  
PLANCHÉ, J. R., ESQ., F.S.A.  
THOMS, WILLIAM J., ESQ., F.S.A.  
TOMLINS, F. GUEST, ESQ., SECRETARY.  
WATSON, SIR FREDERICK BEILBY, K.C.H., F.R.S.  
WRIGHT, THOMAS, ESQ., M.A., F.S.A.

The Council of the Shakespeare Society desire it to be understood that they are not answerable for any opinions or observations that may appear in the Society's publications ; the Editors of the several works being alone responsible for the same.

## INTRODUCTION.

---

The ensuing tract is reprinted from the earliest impression, an edition of extreme rarity, and we have compared it with subsequent copies in 1592, 1593, and 1595, the two last of which are of more frequent occurrence, though all difficult to be procured. The author, in one of his subsequent works, ("Have with you to Saffron Walden,") informs us that his "Pierce Penniless" had been six times printed between 1592 and 1596, but we have not been able to meet with more than five impressions of those years. Its popularity was extraordinary.

Many years ago, Mr. Octavius Gilchrist, whose knowledge of such matters was great, and whose taste and judgment were good, issued a prospectus for a reprint of "Pierce Penniless his Supplication to the Devil;" but his proposal (never carried into effect) was to adopt the text of the second, and not of the first edition, which, probably, he could not obtain. The differences are trifling, in no case (the preliminary matter excepted) more than verbal, but, having the earliest impression in our hands, we have thought it expedient to

take that as our original, comparing it as we proceeded with later copies : to any subsequent to 1595, it was not necessary to resort.

This reprint, on several accounts, comes peculiarly within the province of the Shakespeare Society. It contains the earliest defence of theatres and theatrical performances and actors, (with the exception of Lodge's tract, in answer to Gosson's "School of Abuse") and in its pages are found those two very curious notices of historical plays, which Shakespeare is supposed to have seen, if not to have employed. "How would it have joyed brave Talbot," (exclaims Nash, p. 60 of our reprint) "the terror of the French, to think that after he had lain two hundred year in his tomb, he should triumph again on the stage, and have his bones new embalmed with the teares of ten thousand spectators at least, (at several times) who, in the tragedian that represents his person, imagine they behold him fresh bleeding." This passage is believed to refer to a lost play, of which Shakespeare made use in his "Henry VI." Part I.; and it establishes the great popularity of the subject, because, at the date referred to, it is probable that none of our public theatres would contain more than about four or five hundred persons: thus, the drama must have been represented at least twenty times before crowded audiences, in order to make up the number of "ten thousand spectators." Another passage, which will be read with interest, in relation to the works of our great dramatist, is the following:—"What a glorious thing it is to have Henry the Fifth represented on the stage, leading the French

king prisoner, and forcing both him and the dauphin to swear fealty!" We know of no existing play in which precisely such scenes are contained, and we may, therefore, conclude that our old stage was in possession of three dramas founded upon the events of the reign of Henry V., viz. that described by Nash; "The Famous Victories of Henry the Fifth," first printed in 1598, and Shakespeare's historical play.

Another circumstance connected with the name of Shakespeare renders Nash's "Pierce Penniless" especially interesting. We find, in a poem near the commencement of it, two lines, which are also contained verbatim in a drama, printed in 1608, with "written by W. Shakspeare" on the title-page, and reprinted in 1619, subsequently included in the third folio impression of his works in 1664. The internal evidence that he had some concern in the production of it seems at least as strong as the external, for "The Yorkshire Tragedy" comprises lines which could scarcely have proceeded from any other pen. How the couplet

"Divines and dying men may talk of hell,  
But in my heart her several torments dwell,"

came to be borrowed from Nash, and inserted in "The Yorkshire Tragedy," it is, perhaps, vain to speculate. It was a short drama, got up in a hurry on a melancholy incident, of then recent occurrence, and possibly the lines we have quoted were in the mind of the writer of "The Yorkshire Tragedy," and were transferred to the play, because they could be so conveniently and appropriately introduced.

But, besides these peculiar and especial claims to the

attention of all who are interested in whatever relates to Shakespeare and his productions, "Pierce Penniless" is a very singular, highly finished, and, in many respects, amusing picture of the manners of the times when it was written. Some of the descriptions of persons and habits of different grades of society have remarkable force, and obvious fidelity, and carry with them the conviction, that little is to be allowed even for the exaggerations of a poet. Nash was a young man who had mixed in most of the scenes he paints; and his style is unusually pure and free from those inflations and bombastic expressions, which, as we read, induce a doubt as to the truth and accuracy of the representations of which they form a part. His eloquence is natural and flowing; and although now and then we meet with what may be looked upon as a trifling affectation of scholastic learning, yet compared with many, if not most, of his scribbling contemporaries, he is very free from this defect: his writings are generally to be regarded as models of choice, nervous, and idiomatic English. If not the best, he was certainly one of the best prose authors of the period in which he flourished. As a vigorous, pungent, and bitterly satirical writer, it may be doubted whether he ever had his equal in our language.

At the time when he produced "Pierce Penniless," he must have been a young man, and in one place he speaks of his "beardless years." He was of St. John's College, Cambridge, and took his degree of B.A. in 1585.<sup>a</sup> This is almost the only date connected with his

<sup>a</sup> He tells us himself in his "Lenten Stuff," 1599, a tract in praise of red herrings, reprinted in both editions of the Harleian Miscellany,

private history that can be fixed with certainty ; but he is supposed to have quitted the university in some disgrace about 1586, and he certainly never proceeded Master of Arts. The cause of his disgrace has nowhere been explained, and we find the consequences of it thus alluded to by the anonymous author of a tract called “*Polymanteia*,” printed in 1595 : “ Cambridge, make thy two children friends : thou hast been unkind to one to wean him before his time, and too fond upon the other to keep him so long without preferment : the one is ancient, and of much reading ; the other is young, but full of wit.” The one who was “ancient, and of much reading,” was Nash’s antagonist, Gabriel Harvey, of whom we shall have more to say hereafter ; the other, to whom Cambridge had been “unkind” in “weaning him before his time,” and who was “full of wit,” was Nash ; and the expression is too unequivocal (coupling it with the fact that Nash never became M. A.) to allow us to doubt that he left his college under some imputation of misconduct. It has been stated that he was concerned in writing a satirical production, called *Terminus et non*

that he was born at Leostoff, in Suffolk, but he does not give any date. He farther informs us that his family belonged to the Nash’s of Herefordshire. He addressed a private letter to Sir Robert Cotton, (preserved in the British Museum, and printed in “The Hist. of Engl. Dram. Poetry and the Stage,” i., 303) and called him his “right worshipfull and loving cousin.” Like nearly all Nash’s compositions, it is full of curious allusions to circumstances of the time, among others to the publication of Sir J. Harington’s “Metamorphosis of Ajax,” which serves to fix the date of the letter shortly after 1596. Nash was then poor, and pleaded poverty to Sir Robert Cotton, observing, “I am merry now, though I have ne’er a penny in my purse.”

*Terminus*, which gave great offence, and that his partner in the composition, whoever he might be, was expelled. No record of the expulsion of Nash, if, indeed, such memorials were preserved at that date, has been discovered.

It appears from more than one of Nash's productions, that he had visited Italy,<sup>b</sup> and that he had also been in Ireland before 1589 : possibly he travelled for a short time after he had been ejected from Cambridge ; but we find him in London in 1587, in which year he wrote a very amusing and clever introductory epistle to a tract by the celebrated Robert Greene, called “ *Menaphon*,” afterwards better known by the name of “ *Greene's Arcadia*,” the title it bore in the later impressions.<sup>c</sup> This

<sup>b</sup> The passage upon this point in Nash's “ *Almond for a Parrot*,” (printed without date, but anterior to 1590) is too curious, with reference both to him and Kemp, the actor of Dogberry, Peter, &c., in Shakespeare's plays, to require any excuse for quoting it. “ Coming (says Nash) from Venice this last summer, and taking Bergamo in my way homeward to England, it was my hap, sojourning there some four or five days, to light in fellowship with that famous Francattip harlequin, who, perceiving me to be an Englishman by my habit and speech, asked me many particulars of the order and manner of our plays, which he termed by the name of representations. Amongst other talk, he inquired of me if I knew any such *Parabolano*, here in London, as *Signior Charlatano Kempino*? Very well, (quoth I) and have been often in his company. He hearing me say so, began to embrace me anew, and offered me all the courtesy he could for his sake, saying, although he knew him not, yet for the report he had heard of his pleasance, he could not but be in love with his perfections being absent.” Mr. Halliwell, in his notes to the *Ludus Coventriæ*, printed for this Society, has shewn (p. 410) that Kemp afterwards visited Italy.

<sup>c</sup> We take the date of Greene's “ *Menaphon*,” 1587, from the edition of that author's “ *Dramatic Works*,” by the Rev. A. Dyce. He does not seem to have met with any copy of it of so early a date

seems to have been Nash's earliest appearance in the character of an author, but his style, even at that period, is remarkable for its vivacity, grace, and facility.

He promised his "Anatomy of Absurditie" in that epistle, and accordingly it came out in 1589, but several other productions in the same year are attributed to him. It is certain that about this date he embarked in his contest with the Puritans, and directed against them a powerful battery of satire and ridicule in various publications. This was the opening of what was termed the "Martin-Marprelate controversy," in which Nash belaboured his adversaries without measure or mercy. At this period he wrote his "Plaine Percevall, the Peace-maker of England," 1589; "Martin's Month's Mind," 1589; "The Return of the renowned Cavaliero, Pasquil of England," 1589; his "Almond for a Parrot," which is without date, but certainly published before 1590; and his "Pasquil's Apology," which bears date in that year. Some of these pieces are anonymous, but there is little doubt that they came from his pen, and they are all in the same free and unrestrained style of witty sarcasm, convincing argument, and ludicrous invective. Even deprived of the temporary interest which belonged to the subject, all these productions are extremely pleasant reading, and while going through them, we are astonished at the exhaustless stores of the writer's terms of humorous objurgation.

The adversaries of Nash in this literary conflict were

as 1587, and quotes the title-page of the impression of 1589. It was also printed in 1599, 1605, 1610, 1616, and 1634. It was reprinted in vol. i. of "Archaica," edited by the late Sir Egerton Brydges.

"legion;" but they were no match for him at any point but in tedious quotations from Scripture. Having silenced them, at least for a time, his next antagonist was a single individual, of great learning and considerable talents, whose name has before been introduced—Gabriel Harvey. There were three Harveys, Gabriel, Richard, and John, and Nash and his friend, Robert Greene, unluckily discovered that they were the sons of a rope-maker. John and Richard Harvey were astronomers, or, perhaps more properly, astrologers, and published some predictions (referred to in the body of the tract now reprinted), which never came to pass, although the writers were imprudent enough to stake their professional reputation upon their punctual fulfilment. Nash laughed at their disappointment; and, as we may conclude from what is said in "Pierce Penniless," thereby incurred the wrath of Gabriel Harvey, who came forward in defence of his brothers, and incidentally of himself against the imputation of the lowness of their origin. Nash retorted in his "Wonderful Strange Astrological Prognostication," which made its appearance in 1591, and to which Gabriel Harvey replied, as we learn from Nash, promulgating the name of the author, which, we apprehend, (for we have never seen the tract) was concealed. Hence the revenge taken by Nash in some of the following pages, though he conceals the name of the individual who had made the attack upon him.

There seems little reason to doubt that Nash wrote "Pierce Penniless his Supplication to the Devil," to relieve himself from pressing temporary necessity. He avows his extreme poverty in the outset, and laments the little

encouragement given by the rich to writers, whether of poetry or prose. The first edition was published (as will be seen by our exact reprint of the title-page) by Richard Jones, who was the “book-midwife” to many authors of the day, especially to those whose productions were of a lighter and more popular character. Whether Nash sold the MS. to him does not appear; but he was absent when it was printed, and the probability is that he did procure money for it from Jones: in his epistle before the second edition, (which we shall insert presently) he does not pretend that the bookseller had come unfairly by the copy. The principal ground of Nash’s complaint was that the publisher had put a “long-tailed title” to it, and had thus let the author, “in the forefront of his book, make a tedious mountebank’s oration to the reader.” This of itself is somewhat curious, if not important, as a piece of literary history, since it shews that in many cases the lengthy laudatory title-pages to tracts of the time were not the composition of the writer of the body of the work, but of the bookseller who wished to make it sell. It strongly confirms, too, the opinion of some of the commentators on Shakespeare, that, when we find his “Merchant of Venice” called “a most excellent history,” or “Love’s Labours Lost” a “fine conceited comedy,” the author of those plays had nothing to do with such descriptive designations. Nash was decidedly opposed to such “tricks of trade,” and, accordingly, the “forefront” of the second edition of his “Pierce Penniless” was, as he directed, simply in these terms :

“Pierce Penilesse his Supplication to the Diuell. *Barbaria grandis*

*habere nihil.* Written by Thomas Nash, Gent. London, printed by Abell Jeffes, for I. B. 1592."

Nash's letter to Jeffes, preceding this impression, is well worth preserving, and we subjoin it, by permission, from a copy in the library of Lord Francis Egerton.

" *A private Epistle of the Author to the Printer. Wherein his full meaning and purpose (in publishing this booke) is set foorth.*

" Faith, I am verie sorrie (sir) I am thus unawares betrayed to infamie. You write to me, my book is hasting to the second impression: he that hath once broke the ice of impudence need not care how deepe he wade in discredit. I confesse it to be a meer toy, not deseruing any judicial mans view: if it haue found any friends, so it is; you knowe very wel that it was abroad a fortnight ere I knewe of it, & vncorrected and vnfisnished, it hath offred it selfe to the open scorne of the world. Had you not beene so forward in the republishing of it, you shold haue had certayne epistles to orators and poets, to insert to the later end: as, namely, to the ghost of *Macchivill*, of *Tully*, of *Ovid*, of *Roscius*, of *Pace*, the Duke of Norfolk's jester; and, lastly, to the ghost of *Robert Greene*, telling him what a coyle there is with pampheting on him after his death. These were prepared for *Pierce Penilesse* first setting foorth, had not the feare of infection detained mee with my lord in the countrey.

" Now, this is that I woulde haue you to do in this second edition. First, cut off that long-tayled title, and let mee not, in the forefront of my booke, make a tedious mountebank's oration to the reader, when in the whole there is nothing praise-worthie.

" I heare say, there bee obscure imitators, that goe about to frame a second part to it, and offer it to sell in Paules Church-yard and elsewhere, as from mee. Let mee request you (as ever you will expect any favour at my hands) to get some body to write an epistle before it, ere you set it to sale againe, importing thus much:—that if any such lewde devise intrude it selfe to their hands, it is a cosenage, and plaine knauery of him that sels it, to get mony, and that I haue no manner of interest or acquaintance with it. Indeed, if my leysure were such as I could wish, I might haps (halfe a yeare hence) write the returne of the *Knight of the Post from Hel*, with the

*Devils* answer to the *Supplication*; but, as for a second part of *Pierce Penilesse*, it is a most ridiculous rogery.

"Other news I am aduertised of, that a scald trivial lying pamphlet, cald *Greens Groats-worth of Wit*, is given out to be of my doing. God neuer haue care of my soule, but utterly renounce me, if the least word or sillable in it proceeded from my pen, or if I were any way privie to the writing or printing of it. I am growne at length to see into the vanity of the world more than euer I did, and now I condemne my selfe for nothing so much as playing the dolt in print. Out vpon it! it is odious, specially in this moralizing age, wherein euery one seeks to shew himselfe a polititian by mis-interpreting. In one place of my booke *Pierce Penilesse* saith, but to the knight of the post, *I pray how might I call you*; & they say I meant one *Howe*, a knaue of that trade, that I neuer heard of before. The antiquaries are offended without cause, thinking I goe about to detract from that excellent profession, when (God is my witnesse) I reverence it as much as any of them all, and had no manner of allusion to them that stumble at it. I hope they wil give me leave to think there be fooles of that art, as well as of al other; but to say I utterly condemne it as an unfruitfull studie, or seeme to despise the excellent qualified partes of it, is a most false and injurious surmise. There is nothing that, if a man list, he may not wrest or pervert: I cannot forbid anie to thinke villainously. *Sed caveat emptor*. Let the interpreter beware, for none euer hard me make allegories of an idle text. Write who wil against me, but let him look his life be without scandale; for if he touch me neuer so little, Ile be as good as the Blacke Booke to him & his kindred. Beggerly lyes no beggerly wit but can invent: who spurneth not at a dead dogge? but I am of another mettal: they shall know that I live as their evil angel, to haunt them world without end, if they disquiet me without cause. Farewell, and let me heare from you as soone as it is come forth. I am the plagues prisoner in the country as yet: if the sicknesse cease before the thirde impression, I wil come and alter what-soever may be offensive to any man, and bring you the latter ende.

"Your friend,

"THO. NASH."

There are several passages in the preceding epistle which require brief notice. In the first place, it appears that Nash had by this time found a patron, for he says that “the fear of infection had detained him with his lord in the country.” This nobleman may have been the personage whom Nash celebrates under the name of Amyntas, at the conclusion of “Pierce Penniless,” and to whom he there contends Spenser ought to have inserted a sonnet with the others at the end of his “Faerie Queene,” 1590. While Nash was thus resident with his lord in the country, his “Summer’s Last Will and Testament” was performed as a private show, and a clue may be afforded to the name of the peer who had taken Nash under his protection, by the fact that it was represented at Croydon, as appears from the piece itself.<sup>d</sup> Internal evidence proves that it was acted in the autumn of 1592. The terms in which Nash speaks of his dead friend Greene’s “Groatsworth of Wit” (which originally came out in 1592) are deserving remark. It appears that the authorship of it had been imputed to Nash; and this we learn, not merely on the evidence of Nash himself in the preceding “epistle,” but on that of Henry Chettle, who published his “Kind Heart’s Dream” (without date) early in 1593. Nash somewhat angrily repudiates Greene’s tract as “a scald, trivial, lying pamphlet;” and,

<sup>d</sup> See a reprint of it, from the only impression in 1600, in the last edition of “Dodsley’s Old Plays,” which also contains Peele’s “Edward the First,” 1593, Lodge’s “Wounds of Civil War,” 1594, and Greene’s “Friar Bacon and Friar Bungay,” 1594, as well as “Appius and Virginia,” by R. B., 1575, and the interlude of “The World and the Child,” 1522, all for the first time included in that Collection.

possibly, one of the “lying” portions of it, in the opinion of Nash, was that in which an attack was made upon Shakespeare as “the only Shake-scene of a country,” and as “an upstart crow, beautified with the feathers” of other poets. We have the more reason to believe that this injurious character of our great dramatist was rejected by his contemporaries, because, in the preliminary matter to his “Kind Heart’s Dream,” Chettle himself apologises for it in terms that do him great credit.<sup>e</sup> As he had committed a wrong, he was anxious to make the earliest and best amends in his power.

“The Black Book,” spoken of by Nash, may have been the work which the Rev. Mr. Dyce places among Greene’s tracts, called “The Black Bookes Messenger,” printed in 1592. In 1604 was published a pamphlet, called “The Black Book,” which has been assigned to Middleton, and which must have been a considerably later production.

Nash, in his letter to Jeffes, with some indignation

<sup>e</sup> See the excellent reprint of this very rare and interesting tract (of which only two copies seem to be known), made under the able superintendence of Mr. Rimbault for the Percy Society. Chettle (speaking, no doubt, of Shakespeare, although he does not name him) there says that “he had himself seen his demeanour no less civil than he excellent in the quality he professed: besides [he adds] divers of worship have reported his uprightness of dealing, which argues his honesty, and his facetious grace in writing, that approves his art,” (p. iv.) This was intended by Chettle, and no doubt received by Shakespeare, as sufficient amends for the offensive expressions in the “Groatsworth of Wit.” Nash, we may be certain, wrote to Jeffes before “Kind Heart’s Dream” was published.

disavows any “second part” to his “Pierce Penniless,” and denies that he had had any hand in such a production, should it be offered for sale in the trade; at the same time he admits that, if leisure permitted, he might be disposed to write “The Return of the Knight of the Post from Hell with the Devil’s Answer to the Supplication;” and an anonymous piece, with a corresponding title, came out in 1606, considerably after Nash’s death, and which in name alone resembled the original. Dekker, too, in the same year, put forth a tract, which he called “News from Hell, brought by the Devil’s Carrier,” in which he endeavoured, though only with moderate success, to imitate the humorous and satirical vein of his predecessor.

The literary “flyting,” (as it would have been called in Scotland) between Nash and Gabriel Harvey, was maintained for several years,<sup>f</sup> with one considerable interval, when hostilities ceased, as if a truce had been agreed to by each party. As this subject has been as accurately as entertainingly treated by Mr. D’Israeli, in his “Ca-

<sup>f</sup> It is thus alluded to by the celebrated old poet, Thomas Churchyard, who began writing under Lord Surrey, and did not lay down his pen, till he laid down his life in 1604: the following stanza is from his “Pleasant Conceit penned in Verse,” 1593.

“ No writer now dare say the crowe is blacke,  
For cruell kyties will crave the cause and why:  
A faire white goose bears feathers on her backe,  
That gaggles still, much like a chattering pye.  
The angel bright, that Gabrill is, in sky  
Shall know that Nash I love and will doe still,  
When Gabrill’s words scarce win our world’s good will.”

Nash had secured the permanent kindness of Churchyard by praising his ballad of “Shore’s Wife,” which some enemies of the veteran versifier had insisted was too good to have been written by him.

lamities of Authors," it is not necessary to enter farther into the subject here, than to make the following quotation from Nash's "Have with you to Saffron Walden," 1596, with reference to the origin of the quarrel. It is to be observed that this admirable tract terminated the hostility between the parties, for the heavy-harnessed Harvey never again ventured to enter the lists with his light-armed, active, and most annoying antagonist.<sup>g</sup> In the pamphlet last mentioned, Nash asserts that the quarrel was entirely of Harvey's "seeking and beginning, in *The Lamb of God* [a work mentioned in the ensuing pages], where he and his brother \* \* \* scummered out betwixt them an epistle to the readers against all poets and writers; and M. Lily [the dramatic poet, and author of *Pap with a Hatchet*] and me by name he beruffianised and berascalled, compared to Martin, and termed us piperly make-plays and make-bates, yet bade us hold our peace, and not be so hardy as to answer him; for, if we did, he would make a bloody day in Paul's Church-yard, and splinter our pens till they straddled again as wide as a pair of compasses." — (Sign. V 2.) Nash's rancour against Harvey was increased by the fact that the latter wrote a most severe and gross attack upon Greene after his death, and when he seems to have supposed that nobody would be ready to take up the cudgels for that prolific pamphleteer.

We have already noticed Nash's "Summer's Last

<sup>g</sup> If Harvey ever replied, it was in the character of Richard Lichfield, the Cambridge barber, in a small tract, entitled "The Trimming of Thomas Nash," printed in 1597. The contest was then put a stop to by the public authorities.

Will and Testament," acted in 1592, but not printed until 1600. He also assisted Marlowe in the composition of their fine tragedy, "Dido, Queen of Carthage," printed in 1594, the year after the death of the great poet, who, we may conjecture, had the principal share in the composition. These are the only dramatic works in which Nash was concerned that have come down to our day, but he wrote and suffered in 1597 for a play called "The Isle of Dogs," which no doubt was of a satirical description, and gave so much offence that Henslowe's company, by which it was acted, was silenced for a time, and the author, after having been brought before the Privy Council, was imprisoned. How long he was confined no authority that we have met with mentions; but when he wrote his "Lenten Stuff," in 1599, he alluded to it himself with evident satisfaction, as a trouble from which he had escaped without injury to his character.

It will be seen that, near the commencement of the ensuing tract, Nash introduces the name of Sir Philip Sidney, as that of a man who knew how to value and reward learning and talents. Nash, in the preceding year, had contributed to the popularity of Sidney by editing an impression of his poems, prefacing it by a long and interesting letter, of which no notice has ever been taken, on account of the extraordinary rarity of the volume to which it belongs. Only a single copy of it is known; and as it is in a private collection, and may never be accessible to those who are curious in such matters, a literal copy of the title-page will not be unacceptable:

"Syr P. S. His Astrophel and Stella. Wherein the excellence of sweete Poesie is concluded. To the end of which are added sundry other rare Sonnets of divers Noblemen and Gentlemen. At London, Printed for Thomas Newman. Anno Domini, 1591."

The miscellaneous poems at the end of this "Astrophel and Stella" are chiefly by Samuel Daniel, twenty-eight of whose sonnets are inserted: all of these, with the exception of four, were included in the "Delia" of 1592, and in subsequent editions of that beautiful work: in the first impression of 1592, Daniel complains that "a greedy printer had published some of his sonnets with those of Sir Philip Sidney," referring to Nash's edition of "Astrophel and Stella." Some poems by E. O., meaning, no doubt, the Earl of Oxford, and by anonymous versifiers, who subscribe "Content," and *Megliora Spero*, accompany Daniel's sonnets; and the *unique* volume is concluded by the two subsequent stanzas, to which no name, initial, nor motto is subscribed, and which we may conclude, both from that circumstance and from their tenor, were by Nash. The lines are not much in themselves, but the existence of them has never been hinted at by any of the biographers of Nash, nor by a single bibliographical antiquary.

" If flouds of teares could clelse my follies past,  
And smokes of sighes might sacrifice for sin;  
If groning cries might salve my fault at last,  
Or endles mone for error pardon win;  
Then would I crie, weepe, sigh, and ever mone  
Mine error, fault, sins, follies, past and gone.

" I see my hopes must wither in their bud;  
I see my favours are no lasting flowers;

I see that words will breath no better good  
Than losse of time, and lightning but at howers :  
Then, when I see, then this I say, therefore,  
That favours, hopes, and words can blind no more."

It is to be remarked that another edition of Sidney's "Astrophel and Stella" was published in 1591. It was a corrected and authentic impression, as far as a judgment can be formed from its appearance; while that edited by Nash (who, we may presume, was selected for the purpose on account of his popularity as an author) was most probably surreptitious. Newman, the bookseller, in his dedication of the small volume, admits that the MS. from which it was printed had been "much corrupted by ill writers."

In an Introduction, like the present, to one of Nash's most celebrated pieces, we shall not think any apology necessary for quoting at length, from the earliest impression of "Astrophel and Stella," the prefatory letter of its avowed editor. Until now it has not seen the light from the period of its first publication, and although bibliographers may have been aware of its existence, not a single extract, quotation from it, or even reference to it, has ever been made, that has come under our observation. Every thing Nash wrote must have its recommendations, of thought, language, or allusion; but the commencement of what follows is written in a somewhat grandiloquent and turgid strain, unlike his usual style; but after he has dismissed his compliment to the Countess of Pembroke, he alights from his stilts, and talks in his usual easy, sprightly, and pointed manner.

**“ SOMEWHAT TO READE FOR THEM THAT LIST.**

“ *Tempus adeat plausus aurea pompa venit*—so endes the Sceane of Idiots, and enter Astrophel in pompe. Gentlemen, that have seene a thousand lines of folly drawn forth *ex uno puncto impudentiae*, and two famous mountains to goe to the conception of one mouse; that haue had your eares deafned with the echo of Fames brazen towres, when only they have been toucht with a leaden pen; that have seene *Pan* sitting in his bower of delights, & a number of *Midasses* to admire his miserable hornepipes, let not your surfeted sight, new come from such puppet play, thinke scorne to turn aside into this theater of pleasure; for here you shall find a paper stage strewd with pearle, an artificial heaven to ouershadow the faire frame, and christal wals to encounter your curious eyes, whiles the tragicomedy of love is performed by starlight. The chiefe actor here is *Melpomene*, whose dusky robes, dipt in the ynke of teares, as yet seeme to drop when I view them neare. The argument cruel chastity, the prologue hope, the epilogue dispaire, *videte queso, et linguis animisque favete*. And here, peradventure, my wites youth may be taxt with a margent note of presumption for offering to put up any motion of applause in the behalfe of so excellent a poet, (the least sillable of whose name, sounded in the eares of judgement, is able to giue the meanest line he writes a dowry of immortality) yet those who observe how jewels oftentimes com to their hands that know not their value, & that the cockscombes of our daies, like *Esops* cock, had rather have a barley kernell wrapt up in a ballet, then they wil dig for the welth of wit in any ground that they know not, I hope wil also hold me excused, though I open the gate to his glory, and invite idle eares to the admiration of his melancholy.

“ *Quid petitur sacris nisi tantum fama poetis,*

which, although it be oftentimes imprisoned in ladyes cask[et]s, and the president booke of such as cannot see without another man's spectacles, yet at length it breakes foorth in spight of his keepers, and useth some private penne (in steed of a picklock) to procure his violent enlargement.

“ The sunne for a time may maske his golden head in a cloud, yet in the end the thicke vaile doth vanish, and his embellished blandishment appeares. Long hath *Astrophel* (England's sunne)

withheld the beames of his spirite from the common view of our darke sence, and night hath hovered ouer the gardens of the Nine Sisters, while *ignis fatuus*, and grosse fatty flames, (such as commonly arise out of dunghilles) have tooke occasion, in the middest eclipse of his shining perfections, to wander abroade with a wispe of paper at their tailes, like hobgoblins, and leade men vp and downe in a circle of absurditie a whole weeke, and never know where they are. But nowe that cloude of sorrow is dissolved, which fierie Loue exhaled from his dewie haire, and affection hath vnburthened the labouring stremes of her wombe in the low cesterne of his grave : the night hath resigned her jettie throne vnto *Lucifer*, and cleere daylight possesseth the skie that was dimmed : wherfore breake off your daunce, you fairies & elves, and come from the fieldes, with the torne carcases of your tunbrills, for your kingdome is expired. Put out your rush candles, you poets & rimers, and bequeath your crazed quarterzayns to the chandlers ; for, loe ! here he commeth that hath broken your legs. *Apollo* hath resigned his ivory harp vnto *Astrophel*, and he, like *Mercury*, must lull you a sleep with his musicke. Sleep *Argus*, sleepe Ignorance, sleep Impudence, for *Mercury* hath *Io*, & only *Io Pæan* belongeth to *Astrophel*. Deare *Astrophel* ! that in the ashes of thy loue, liuest againe like the *Phœnix* ; ô might thy bodie (as thy name) liue againe here amongst us ; but the earth, the mother of mortalitie, hath snatched thee too soone into her chilled colde armes, and will not let thee by any meanes be drawne from her deadly imbrace ; & thy diuine soule, carried on angels wings to heauen, is installed in *Hermes* place, sole prolocutor to the gods. Therefore mayest thou neuer returne from the Elisian Fieldes like *Orpheus*, therefore must we ever mourne for our *Orpheus*.

“ Fayne would a second spring of passion heere spende it selfe on his sweet remembrance ; but religion, that rebuketh prophane lamentation, drinkeſ in the riuers of those dispaireful teares, which languorous ruth bath outwelled, & bids me looke backe to the house of honor, where, from one & the selfe same roote of renowne, I shal find many goodly branches deriued, & such as, with the spreading increase of their vertues, may somewhat ouershadow the grieve of his los. Amongſt the which, fayre ſister of *Phæbus*, & eloquent ſecretary to the Muses, moſt rare Counteſſe of *Pembroke*, thou art

not to be omitted ; whom artes doe adore as a second *Minerva*, and our poets extoll as the patronesse of their invention ; for in thee the *Lesbian Sappho*, with her lirick harpe, is disgraced, & the laurel garlante, which thy brother so brauely advanst on his launce, is still kept greene in the temple of *Pallas*. Thou only sacrificest thy soule to contemplation ; thou only entertainest emptie-handed *Homer*, & keepest the springs of *Castalia* from being dried vp. Learning, wisedom, beantie, & all other ornaments of nobilitie whatsoeuer, seeke to approve themselves in thy sight, and get a further seale of felicity from the smiles of thy fauour.

“ *O Jove digna viro ni Jove nata fores.*

“ I feare I shall be counted a mercernary flatterer, for mixing my thoughts with such figurative admiration ; but generall report, that surpasseth my praise, condemneth my rethoricke of dulnesse for so colde a commendation. Indeede, to say the truth, my stile is somewhat heavie gated, and cannot daunce trip and goe it so liuely, with oh my love, ah my love, all my loues gone, as other shepheards that have been fooles in the morris time out of minde ; nor hath my prose any skill to imitate the almond leafe verse, or sit tabring five yeres together nothing but to bee, to bee, on a paper drum. Onely I can keepe pace with a Grauesend barge, and care not if I have water enough to land my ship of fooles with the tearme (the tyde I should say). Now, euery man is not of that minde ; for some to go the lighter away will take in their fraught of spangled feathers, golden peebles, straw, reedes, bulrushes, or any thing, and then they beare out their sayles as proudly, as if they were balisted with bullbeefe. Others are so hardly bested for loading, that they are faine to retaile the cinders of *Troy*, and the shiuers of broken trunchions to fill vp their boate, that else should goe empty ; and if they haue but a pound weight of good merchandise, it shall be placed at the poope, or plukt in a thousand pieces to credit their carriage. For my part, euery man as he likes, *Meus cujusque is est quisque*. Tis as good to goe in cut fingerd pumps as corke shoes, if one weare Cornish diamonds on his toes. To explain it by a more familiar example ; an asse is no great statesman in the beastes common-wealth, though he weare his eares *upseuant maffe*, after the Muscovy fashion, & hange the lip like a capcase halfe open, or looke as demurely as a sixpenny browne loafe,

for he hath some imperfections that do keepe him from the common councel: yet of many he is deemed a very vertuous member, and one of the honestest sort of men that are; so that our opinion (as Sextus Empedocles) gives the name of good or ill to every thing. Out of whose works (latelie translated into English for the benefit of unlearned writers) a man might collect a whole booke of this argument, which no doubt would prove a worthy common-wealth matter, and far better than wits waxe karvell: much good worship haue the author.

“ Such is this golden age wherein we live, & so replenisht with golden asses of all sortes, that if learning had lost it selfe in a groue of genealogies, wee neede doe no more but sette an old olde goose ouer halfe a dozen pottle pots (which are, as it were, the egges of invention) and wee shall haue such a breed of bookes within a little while after, as will fill all the world with the wilde fowle of good wits. I can tell you this is a harder thing then making gold of quicksilver, and will trouble you more then the morrall of *Esops* glow-worme hath troubled our English apes; who, striving to warme themselues with the flame of the philosophers stone, have spent all their wealth in buying bellowes to blowe this false fyre. Gentlemen, I feare I have too much presumed on your idle leysure, and beene too bold to stand talking all this while in an other mans doore; but now I will leave you to survey the pleasures of *Paphos*, and offer your smiles on the auter of *Venus*.

“ Yours in all desire to please,

“ THO. NASHE.”

It seems evident that Nash felt, in the opening of the preceding epistle, (which we give literatim) that he was performing a task; but, towards the conclusion, he freed himself from this impression, and shook off the restraint upon his pen. It is impossible at this time of day to explain some of the temporary, and designedly ambiguous, touches at authors of his day near the close, but the hit at Peele and his “Tale of Troy,” 1589, seems pretty obvious, and Nash sets out with an obscure reference to

Greene, and to the manner in which he was accustomed to vaunt his university degrees at Oxford and Cambridge in the title-pages of his tracts.<sup>h</sup> Nash must have taken his degree of Bachelor of Arts at a very early age, if in 1591 he could talk of his “witless youth” with any regard to accuracy.

We have already spoken of Nash’s imprisonment in 1597, for writing his play called “The Isle of Dogs,” and we have no trace that he subsequently contributed any thing to the stage. His genius does not, in fact, seem to have been dramatic; nor was it narrative, as may be judged from his “Life of Jack Wilton,” printed in 1594, which he confesses (in the dedication to the Earl of Southampton) to be in “a clean different vein from his other former courses of writing.” It was acknowledged to be a failure, and he never attempted any thing more of the kind.<sup>i</sup> His pious strains were at

<sup>h</sup> Nash probably had some quarrel with Greene not very long after he had written for him the preliminary epistle to “Menaphon,” in 1587. In his “Anatomie of Absurditie,” 1589, he casts ridicule upon his productions, calls him the “Homer of women,” and ends one of his paragraphs thus: “Therefore, see how far they swerve from their purpose, who with *Greene* colours seeke to garnish such Gorgon-like shapes.” That they afterwards were upon good terms again is very certain, but it is possible that Nash at no time had his satirical pen under very good control, and that he now and then wielded it even against those with whom he was most intimate. His good sense and his good taste were offended by the affected style of some of his contemporaries, and in the tract above quoted, he abuses those writers who attributed to minerals and herbs properties not belonging to them, for the sake of founding affected similes upon imaginary qualities.

<sup>i</sup> It is remarkable that Nash has left nothing behind him in prose

least more acceptable, and his “Christ’s Tears over Jerusalem” went through three editions, in 1593, 1594, and 1613. Here it was that he endeavoured to make amends to, and peace with, Gabriel Harvey; but the offer was most ungraciously and ungenerously rejected by the latter in his “New Letter of Notable Contents,” 1593. The consequence was, that Nash renewed the attack with redoubled vigour in a prefatory epistle to the copies of his “Christ’s Tears,” bearing date in 1594.<sup>j</sup> As bibliographers have passed over this remarkable production without notice, in consequence, perhaps, of the belief that the impression of 1594 was only a reprint of that of 1593, we shall present a few interesting extracts from it; and, first, what Nash says of Harvey, after lamenting that he had ever made overtures of peace to his adversary.

“ I thought to make my foe a bridge of golde, or faire words, to flie by ; he hath vsed it as a high way to inuade me. *Hoc pia lingua dedit* : this it is to deale plainly. An extreme gull he is in this age, and no better, that beleives a man for his swearing. Im-

---

or poetry that is devoted to the subject most common to all versifiers — love. It appears, by his “Anatomie of Absurditie,” 1589, (dedicated to Sir Charles Blunt) that he had been enamoured of some lady two summers before, and that, meeting with a disappointment, it had produced a “pensiveness,” which long continued to weigh upon his spirits. It is very clear that the lady had been false; for in the same tract he declares, “Constancy will sooner inhabit the body of a cameleon, a tiger, or a wolfe, than the heart of a woman.”

<sup>j</sup> Sir Egerton Brydges reprinted Nash’s “Christ’s Tears over Jerusalem,” in “Archaica,” vol. i. but from the impression of 1613, and without the highly interesting epistle to which we refer.

pious Gabriell Harvey, the vowed enemie to all vowes and protestations, plucking on with a slavish priuat submission a generall publike reconciliation, hath, with a cunning ambuscado of confiscated idle others, welneare betrayed me to infamie eternall (his owne proper chaire of torment in hell). I can say no more, but the deuill and he be no men of their words. Many courses there be, as Machiavell inspirdly sets downe, which in them selues seem singular and vertuous ; but, if a man follow them, they wilbe his vtter subuersion : others that seeme absurd, odious, and vicious, that, well looked into, will breede him most ease. This course of shaking hands with Harvey seemd at first most plausible and commendable, and the rather because I desired to conforme my selfe to the holy subiect of my booke ; but afterwards (being by his malice peruerited) it seemd most degenerate and abject. Henceforth, with the forenamd Machiavel, for an vnrefutable principle I will hold it, that he is vtterly vndone which seekes by new good turnes to roote out old grudges. A prouerbe it is as stale as sea-beefe : sauе a thief from the gallows, and hee'l be the first to shew the way to Saint Gilesesse. Harvey I manifestly saued from the knot vnder the eare : verily, he hath hanged him selfe had I gone forwards in my vengeance."

This last observation forms, in fact, the point of an epigram upon Nash by Freeman, quoted in "Dodsley's Old Plays," last edit., vol. ix., p. 8. Nash afterwards vindicates John Lily, "poor deceased Kit Marlowe," and Dr. Perne ; and from thence proceeds thus to notice complaints made against his "Life of Jack Wilton."

"Leave we him [Harvey] till his fatall houre call for him, and let vs cast about to some more necessarie matter. I am informed there be certaine busie wits abrode, that seeke, in my *Jacke Wilton*, to anagrammatize the name of Wittenberge to one of the Vniversities of England ; that scorne to be counted honest, plaine meaning men, like their neighbours, for not so much as out of mutton and potage but they will construe a meaning of kings and princes. Let one but name bread, but they will interpret it to be the towne of Bredau in the low countreyes ; if of beere he talkes, then straight he mockes

the countie Beroune in France. If of foule weather, or a shower of raine, he hath relation to some that shall raigne next. Infinite number of these phanatical strange hieroglyphicks haue these new decipherers framed to them selues, & stretcht words on the tenter hooks so miserably, that a man were as good, considering every circumstance, write on cheveril as on paper."

Some parties had objected to the style in which Nash's "Christ's Tears over Jerusalem" was written, and especially of the compound words he had employed in it, thereby likening our language, as one of our old dramatists beautifully expresses it, to

" the learned Greek,  
Blest in the lovely marriage of sweet words."

To these critics Nash answers happily as follows :

" To the second rancke of reprehenders, that complain of my boystrous compound wordes, and ending my Italionate coyned verbes all in *ize*, thus I replie: That no winde that blowes strong but is boystrous ; no speech or wordes of any power or force to confute or perswade, but must be swelling and boystrous. For the compounding of my wordes, therein I imitate rich men, who, having store of white single money together, convert a number of those small little sentes into great peeces of gold, such as double pistoles and portugues. Our English tongue, of all languages, most swarmeth with the single money of monosyllables, which are the onely scandal of it. Bookes written in them, and no other, seeme like shop-keepers' boxes, that containe nothing else sauе halfe-pence, three-farthings, and two pences. Therefore what did me I, but, having a huge heape of those worthlesse shreds of small English in my *pia maters* purse, to make the royaller shew with them to men's eyes, had them to the compounders immediately, and exchanged them fourre into one, and others into more, according to the Greek, French, Spanish, and Italian."

Farther on in the same epistle Nash introduces Spenser by name, and makes various allusions to his contem-

poraries, some of which are now hardly intelligible, but most of them interesting to literary antiquaries. We regret that we have not room for the whole of this curious production.

His last publication was his “Lenten Stuff,” in 1599, unless we are to consider his “Summer’s Last Will and Testament,” in 1600, an authorized impression. Dispute has arisen respecting the period of his death, some maintaining that it took place in 1604 (see “The Bridgewater Catalogue,” p. 200), and others, that it happened earlier. The Rev. Mr. Dyce, in his edition of Middleton’s Works, (vol. i., p. xviii.) is in favour of the latter opinion, founding himself on a passage in a play called “The Return from Parnassus,” printed in 1606, but originally acted before the death of Queen Elizabeth.<sup>k</sup> No doubt can be entertained upon the point by those who refer to Charles Fitzgeoffrey’s “Affaniæ, sive Epigrammatum Libri Tres,” printed in 1601; for among the *Cenotaphia* we meet with the following, which is, of course, quite decisive. We reprint it precisely as it stands in the original.

“ THOMÆ NASHO.

“ Quum Mors edictum Jovis imperiale secuta  
Vitalis Nashi extingueret atra faces ;

---

<sup>k</sup> The editor of the last edition of “Dodsley’s Old Plays” (who, in fact, excepting in some scattered notes, was only the editor of six additional plays, then inserted for the first time) had stated the same opinion about fifteen years before, in the notice of Nash which precedes the reprint of “Summer’s Last Will and Testament,” in these words: “It is certain that Nash was not living at the time when ‘The Return from Parnassus’ was produced, which, though not printed until 1606, was written before the end of the reign of Elizabeth.”

the countie Beroune in France. If of  
raine, he hath relation to some mem-  
ber of these phanatical struc-  
turers framed to them  
so miserably, that a  
stance, write on c'

Some p  
Nash's " " *but it is not the first time the same point has been em-  
phatised for a similar occasion.* At all events, it is now  
dr *clear that Nash was dead in 1601, and this is probably  
the nearest point at which we shall be able to arrive.* It  
*is somewhat singular, therefore, that Dekker, writing in  
1607, when his "Knight's Conjuring" (which is a re-  
print, with additions, of his "News from Hell") was  
published, should speak of Nash as "newly come" to the  
Elysian fields. At that date he had been dead at least  
eight years; and this fact may give some countenance to  
the belief that "The Knight's Conjuring," either by that  
or some other name, was an earlier publication than Mr.  
Rimbault has supposed in his excellently-edited reprint  
of it for the Percy Society. The conclusion of that tract  
is perhaps more interesting than any other of the time,  
since it contains notices of the following contemporaries  
of Dekker, then dead—Spenser, Watson, Kyd, Achelley,  
Bentley (the actor), Marlowe, Greene, Peele, and, lastly,  
Nash. To revive such productions is rendering an im-  
portant service to our early literature.*

# PIERCE PENILESSE

## HIS SUPPLICATION TO THE DEUILL.

Describing the ouer-spreading of Vice, and  
the suppression of Vertue.

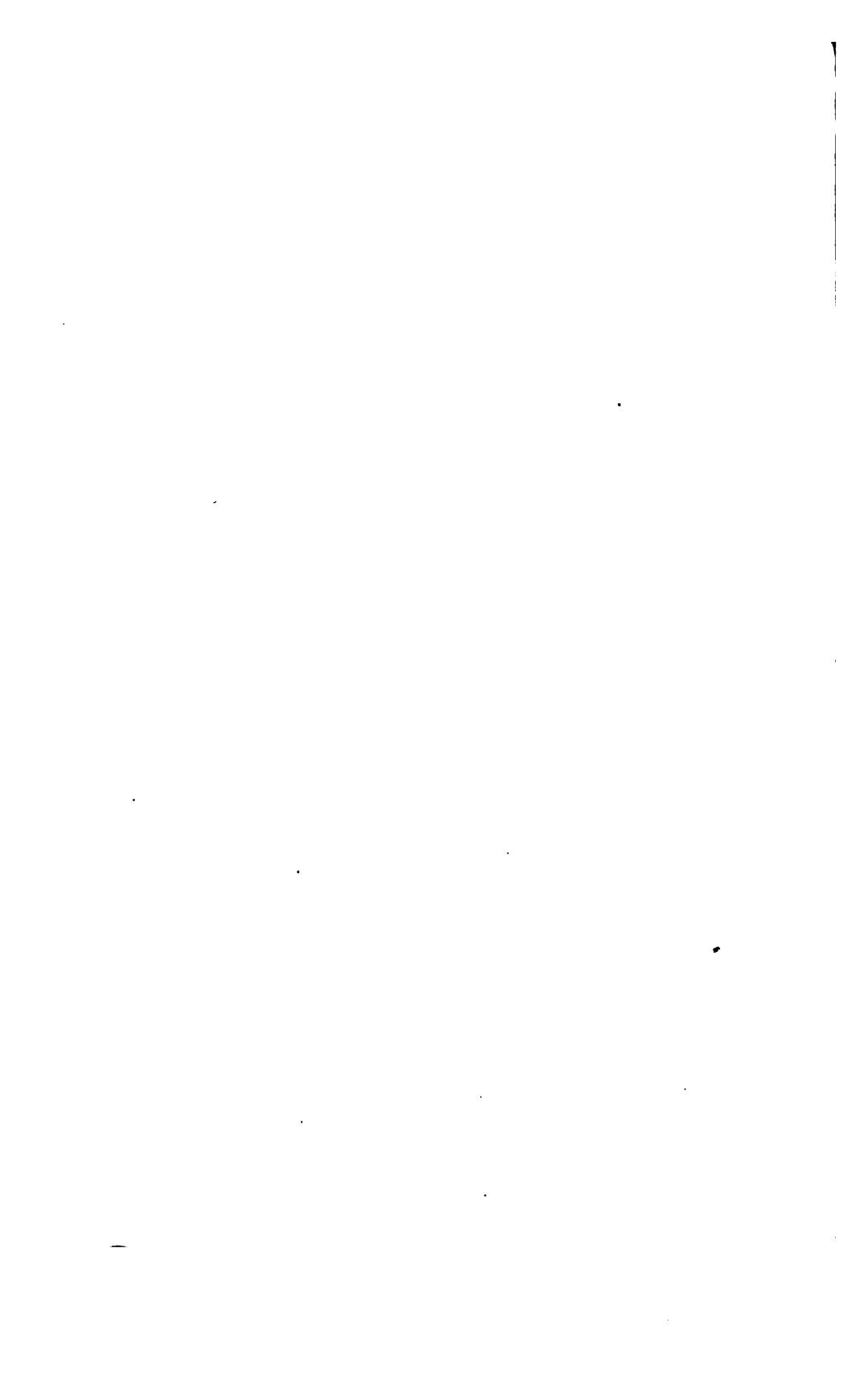
Pleasantly interlac'd with variable delights: and  
pathetically intermixt with conceipted  
reproofes.

Written by THOMAS NASH, Gentleman.

**LONDON,**

Imprinted by RICHARD IHONES, dwelling at the  
Signe of the *Rose and Crowne*, nere  
*Holburne Bridge.*

1592.



## THE PRINTER TO THE GENTLEMEN READERS.

---

GENTLEMEN,

In the Authour's absence, I haue been bold to publish this pleasaunt and wittie discourse of *Pierce Penilesse, his Supplication to the Diuell*: which title, though it may seeme strange, and in it selfe somewhat preposterous, yet if you vouchsafe the reading, you shall finde reason, as well for the Authour's vncouth nomination, as for his vnwonted beginning without epistle, proeme, or dedication: al which he hath inserted conceitedly in the matter; but Ile be no blab to tell you in what place. Bestow the looking, and I doubt not but you shall finde dedication, epistle, and proeme to your liking.

Yours bounden in affection,

R. I.



## PIERCE PENILESS, HIS SUPPLICA- TION TO THE DIUELL.

Hauing spent manie yeres in studying how to liue,  
and liude a long time without money ; hauing tyred my  
youth with follie, and surfeited my minde with vanitie, I  
began at length to looke backe to repentaunce, & ad-  
dresse my endeouors to prosperitie. But all in vaine : I  
sate vp late, & rose early, contended with the colde, and  
conuersed with scarcitie ; for all my labours turned to  
losse, my vulgar muse was despised & neglected, my  
paines not regarded, or slightly rewarded, and I my selfe  
(in prime of my best wit) layde open to pouertie. Where-  
upon (in a malecontent humor) I accused my fortune,  
raild on my patrones, bit my pen, rent my papers, and  
ragde in all points like a mad man. In which agonie  
tormenting my selfe a long time, I grew by degrees to a  
milde dis-content ; and pausing a while ouer my stan-  
dish, I resolued in verse to paynt forth my passion :  
which, best agreeing with the vaine of my vnrest, I began  
to complaine in this sort : —

Why is't damnation to despaire and dye,  
When life is my true happinesse disease ?  
My soule, my soule, thy safetie makes me flye  
The faultie meanes, that might my paine appease.  
Diuines and dying men may talke of hell,  
But in my hart her seuerall torments dwell.

Discite qui  
sapitis, cum  
haec quæ sci-  
mus inerter :  
Sed trepidas  
acies, et fera  
bella sequi.

Est aliquid fa-  
tale malum  
per verba le-  
vare.

Ingenio perii  
qui miser ipse  
meo.

Ah worthlesse wit, to traine me to this woe,  
Deceitfull artes, that nourish discontent !  
Ill thriue the follie that bewitcht me so ;  
Vaine thoughts adieu, for now I will repent :  
And yet my wants perswade me to proceede,  
Since none takes pitie of a scholler's neede.

Paupertas  
impulit audax  
ut versus fa-  
cerem.

Forgiue me, God, although I curse my birth,  
And ban the aire, wherein I breathe a wretch ;  
Since miserie hath daunted all my mirth,  
And I am quite vndone through promise-breach.

Pol me occi-  
distis, amici.

Oh frends ! no frends, that then vngently frowne,  
When changing fortune casts vs headlong downe.

Hei mihi,  
quam paucos  
haec mea dicta  
movent.

Without redresse complaynes my carelesse verse,  
And Mydas eares relent not at my moane :  
In some farre land will I my grieues reherse,  
'Mongst them that will be moou'd when I shall groane.  
England adieu, the soyle that brought me foorth ;  
Adieu vnkinde, where skill is nothing woorth.

Miser est qui-  
cunque serum-  
nam suam ne-  
quit occul-  
tare.

Fortuna fa-  
vet fatuos.

These rymes thuss abruptly set downe, I tost my im-  
agination a thousand wayes, to see if I coulde finde anie  
meanes to relieue my estate ; but all my thoughts con-  
sorted to this conclusion, that the world was vncharitable,  
and I ordained to be miserable. Thereby I grew to con-  
sider how manie base men, that wanted those parts which  
I had, enjoyed content at will, and had wealth at com-  
maund : I cald to mind a cobler, that was worth fие hun-  
dred pound ; an hostler that had built a goodly Inne,  
and might dispende fortie pounds yerely by his land ; a  
carre-man in a lether pilche, that had whipt a thousand  
pound out of his horse tayle : and haue I more wit than  
all these ? (thought I to my selfe) am I better borne ?  
am I better brought vp ? yea, and better fauored ? and

yet am I a begger? What is the cause? how am I crost, or whence is this curse?

Meritis ex-  
pendite cau-  
sam.

Euen from hence, that men that should employ such as I am, are enamoured of their owne wits, and thinke whateuer they doo is excellent, though it be neuer so scurvie; that learning (of the ignorant) is rated after the value of the inke and paper; and a scriuener better paid for an obligation, than a scholler for the best poeme he can make; that euerie grosse brainde idiot is suffered to come into print, who, if hee set foorth a pamphlet of the praise of pudding pricks, or write a treatise of Tom Thumme, or the exploits of Vntrusse, it is bought vp thicke and three-folde, when better things lye dead. How then can wee chuse but be needie, when there are so manie droanes amongst us? or euer proue rich, that toyle a whole yeare for faire looks?

Scribimus in-  
docti doctique  
poemata pas-  
sim.

Gentle Sir Philip Sydney, thou knewst what belonged to a scholler; thou knewest what paines, what toyle, what trauell conduct to perfection: well couldst thou giue euerie vertue his encouragement, euerie arte his due, euerie writer his desert, cause none more vertuous, wittie, or learned than thy selfe.

Cultor et Au-  
tistes docto-  
rum sancte  
virorum.

But thou art dead in thy graue, and hast left too few successors of thy glorie, too fewe to cherish the sonnes of the muses, or water those budding hopes with their plentie, which thy bountie erst planted.

Heu rapiunt  
mala fata bo-  
nos.

Beleeue me, gentlemen, (for some crosse mishappes haue taught me experiance) there is not that strict obseruation of honour, which hath been heretofore. Men of great calling take it of merit to haue their names eter-nisht by poets; and whatsouer pamphlet or dedication encounters them, they put it vp their sleevees, and scarce giue him thankes that presents it. Much better is it for those golden pennes to raise such vngratefull peasants from the dung-hill of obscuritie, and make them equal

Fluctibus in  
mediis navim  
Palinure re-  
linquis.

in fame to the worthies of olde, when their doating selfe-loue shall challenge it of dutie, and not onely giue them nothing themselves, but impouerish liberalitie in others.

This is the lamentable condition of our times, that men of arte must seek almes of cormorants, and those that deserue best be kept vnder by dunces, who count it a policie to keep them bare, because they shuld follow their books the better ; thinking belike, that, as preferment hath made themselves idle, that were earst painfull in meaner places, so it would likewise slacken the endeauours of those students, that as yet strive to excell in hope of aduaancement. A good pollicie to suppresse superfluous liberalitie ; but, had it been practised when they were promoted, the yeomandry of the realme had been better to passe than it is, and one droane should not haue driuen so manie bees from theyr honie-combes.

I, I, wele giue loosers leaue to talke : it is no matter what *sic probo* and his pennilesse companions prate, whilst we haue the gold in our coffers : this is it that will make a knaue an honest man, and my neighbour Crompton's stripling a better gentleman than his grand sier. O ! it is a trim thing when Pride, the sonne, goes before, and Shame, the father, followes after. Such presidents there are in our common-wealthe a great manie ; not so much of them whome learning and industrie hath exalted, (whome I prefer before *genus et proavos*) as of carterly vpstarts, that out-face towne and countrey in their veluets, when Sir Rowland Russet-coat, their dad, goes sagging euerie day in his round gascoynes of white cotton, and hath much adoo (poore pennie-father) to keepe his vnthrift elbowes in reparations.

Marry, happie are they, say I, that haue such fathers to worke for them whilst they play ; for where other men turn ouer manie leaues to get bread and cheese in their olde age, and studie twentie yeares to distill golde out of

incke, our yong masters doo nothing but deuise how to spend, and aske counsaile of the wine and capons, how they may quickliest consume their patrimonies. As for me, I liue secure from all such perturbations ; for (thankes bee to God) I am *vacuus viator*, and care not, though I meeete the commissioners of New-market-heath at high midnight, for anie crosses, images, or pictures that I carrie about mee, more than needes.

Than needes, quoth I ; nay, I would be ashame of it, if *opus* and *usus* were not knocking at my doore twenty times a weeke when I am not within : the more is the pittie, that such a franke gentleman as I should want ; but, since the dice doo runne so vntowardly on my side, I am partly prouided of a remedie. For whereas, those that stand most on their honour haue shut vp their purses, and shift vs off with court holly-bread ; and on the other side, a number of hypocriticall hot-spurres, that haue G O D alwayes in theyr mouthes, will give nothing for God's sake ; I haue clapt vp a handsome Supplication to the Diuell, and sent it by a good fellow, that I know will deliuier it.

And because you may beleue me the better, I care not if I acquaint you with the circumstance. I was informd of late dayes, that a certaine blinde retayler, called the Diuell, vsed to lend money vpon pawnes or anie thing, and would let one for a need haue a thousand poundes vpon a statute merchant of his soule : or if a man plyde him throughly, would trust him vpon a bill of his hand, without anie more circumstaunce. Besides, hee was noted for a priuie benefactor to traytors and parasites, and to aduaunce fooles and asses farre sooner than anie ; to be a greedie pursuer of newes, and so famous a politician in purchasing, that Hel, which at the beginning was but an obscure village, is now become a huge citie, whervnto all countreys are tributarie.

*These manifest conjectures of pleantie, assembled in one common-place of abilitie, I determined to clawe Auarice by the elboe, till his full belly gaue me a full hand ; and let him bloud with my pen (if it might be) in the veyne of Liberalitie : and so (in short time) was this paper-monster, Pierce Penilesse, begotten.*

*But written and all, here lies the question ; where shall I finde this old asse, that I may deliuer it ? Mas, that's true : they say the lawyers haue the Diuel and all, and it is like enough he is playing ambodexter amongst them. Fie ! fie ! the Diuell a driver in Westminster Hall ? it can neuer be.*

Now, I pray, what doo you imagine him to be ? Perhaps you thinke it is not possible he should be so graue. Oh ! then, you are in an errour, for hee is as formale as the best scriuener of them all. Marry, hee doth not vse to weare a night-cap, for his hornes will not let him ; and yet I know a hundred, as well headed as he, that will make a jolly shift with a court-cup on their crownes, if the weather bee colde.

To proceed with my tale. To Westminster Hall I went, and made a search of enquirie, from the blacke gowne to the buckram bag, if there were anie such serjeant, bencher, counsailer, atturney, or pettifogger, as *Signior Cornuto Diabolo*, with the good face ? But they all (*vnde voce*) affirmed that he was not there : marry, whether hee were at the Exchange or no, amongst the ritch merchants, that they could not tell ; but it was the likelier of the two, that I should meete with him, or heare of him, (at the least) in those quarters. I faith, and say you so ? quoth I ; and Ile bestow a little labour more, but Ile hunt him out.

Without more circumstance, thether came I ; and, thrusting my selfe (as the manner is) amongst the confusione of languages, I askt (as before) whether he were

there extant or no? But from one to another, *Non novi Demonem*, was all the awnere I could get. At length (as Fortune serude) I lighted vpon an old, straddling usurer, clad in a damaske cassocke, edgde with fox-furre; a paire of trunke slops, sagging down like a shoomaker's wallet, and a short thrid-bare gown on his backe, fac't with moath-eaten budge: vpon his head he wore a filthy, coarse biggin, and next it a garnish of night-caps, with a sage button cap of the forme of a cow sheard, ouerspred verie orderly: a fat chuffe it was (I remember), with a grey beard cut short to the stumps, as though it were grymde, and a huge, worm-eaten nose, like a cluster of grapes hanging downwards. Of him I demaunded, if hee could tell me anie tidings of the partie I sought for.

By my troth, quoth he, stripling, (and then he cought) I saw him not lately, nor know I certainly where he keepes; but thus much I heard by a broker, a friend of mine, that hath had some dealings with him in his time, that hee is at home sick of the goute, and will not be spoken withall vnder more than thou art able to giue, some two or three hundred angels, if thou hast anie sute to him; and then, perhaps, hele straine curtesie, with his legges in child bed, and come forth and talke with thee; but, otherwise, *non est domi*—he is busie with Mammon and the Prince of the North, howe to build vp his kingdome, or sending his sprites abroad to undermine the maligners of his gouernment.

I, hearing of this colde comfort, tooke my leaue of him very faintly, and, like a carelesse malcontent, that knewe not which way to turne, retyred me to Paules, to seeke my dinner with Duke Humfrey; but, when I came there, the olde souldiour was not vp. He is long a rising, thought I; but that's all one, for he that hath no money in his purse, must go dine with Sir John Best-be-trust, at the signe of the Chalke and Post.

Two hongry turnes had I scarce fetcht in this wast gallery, where I was encountered by a neat pedanticall fellow, in forme of a cittizen ; who thrusting himselfe abruptly into my companie, like an intelligencer, began very earnestly to question with mee about the cause of my discontent, or what made me so sad, that seemed too young to bee acquainted with sorrow. I, nothing nice to vnfold my estate to any what soeuer, discourst to him the whole circumstance of my care, and what toyll and paynes I had tooke in searching for him that woulde not bee heard of. Why, sir (quoth hee), had I been priuie to your purpose before, I could haue easd you of thys trauell ; for, if it be the deuill you seeke for, know I am his man. I pray, sir, how might I call you ? A knight of the post, quoth he, for so I am tearmed ; a fellow that will sweare you any thing for twelve pence ; but, indeede, I am a spirite in nature and essence, that take vpon mee this humaine shape, onely to set men together by the eares, and send soules by millions to hell.

Non bene  
conducti ven-  
dunt perjuria  
testes.

Now, trust mee, a substantial trade ; but when doe you send next to your master ? Why, euery day ; for there is not a cormorant that dyes, or cut-purse that is hang'd, but I dispatch letters by his soule to him, and to all my friends in the low countreys : wherefore, if you haue anie thing that you would haue transported, giue it me, and I will see it deliuered.

Yes, marry haue I (quoth I) a certayne Supplication here to your master, which you may peruse if it please you. With that he opened it, and read as followeth :

To the High and Mightie Prince of Darknesse,  
Donsell dell Lucifer, King of Acheron, Styx,  
and Phlegeton, Duke of Tartary, Mar-  
quesse of Conytus, and Lord High  
Regent of Lymbo, his distressed  
Orator, Pierce Penilesse, wisheth  
encrease of damnation and  
malediction eternal, per  
Jesum Christum Do-  
minum Nostrum.

Most humbly sueth unto your sinfulnes, your single  
soald orator, Pierce Penilesse : that whereas your impious  
excellence hath had the poore tennement of his purse any  
time this halfe yeere for your dauncing schoole, and he  
(notwithstanding) hath received no peny nor crosse for  
farme, according to the usuall manner, it may please your  
gracelesse Majestie to consider of him, and give order to  
your servant Avarice he may be dispatched; insomuch as  
no man heere in London can haue a dauncing schoole with-  
out rent, and his wit and knavery cannot be maintained  
with nothing. Or, if this be not so plausible to your  
honourable infernalship, it might seem good to your hel-  
hood to make extent upon the soules of a number of un-  
charitable cormorants, who, having incurd the daunger  
of a *præmunire* with medling with matters that properly  
concerne your owne person, deserve no longer to live (as  
men) amongst men, but to bee incorporated in the society  
of divels. By which meanes the mighty controuler of

No : Ile be  
sworne upon  
a book haue I  
not.

fortune and imperious subverter of destiny, delicious gold, the poore man's god, and idoll of princes (that looke pale and wanne through imprisonment) might at length be restored to his powerfull monarchie, and eftsoon bee set at liberty, to helpe his friends that have neede of him.

Id est, for the  
freedom of  
gold.

I knowe a great sort of good fellowes that would venture farre for his freedom, and a number of needy lawyers (who now mourne in threed bare gownes for his thraldome) that would go neere to poison his keepers with false Latine, if that might procure his enlargement; but inexorable yron detaines him in the dungeon of the night, so that now (poore creature) hee can neither trafique with the mercers and tailers as he was wont, nor dominere in tavernes as he ought.

The descrip-  
tion of Gre-  
dines.

Famine, Lent, and Dessolation, set in onion skind jackets before the doore of his indurance, as a chorus in tragedie of Hospitality, to tell Hunger and Poverty thers no relieve for them there; and in the inner part of this ugly habitation stands Greedinesse, prepared to devoure all that enter, attired in a capouch of written parchment, buttoned downe before with labels of wax, and lined with sheepes fels for warmenes: his cappe furd with catskins, after the Muscovie fashion, and all to be tasseld with angle hookes, instead of aglets, ready to catch hold of all those to whom he shewes any humblenes: for his breeches, they were made of the lists of broad cloaths, which he had by letters pattents assured him and his heyres, to the utter overthrowe of bow-cases and cushin-makers; and bumbasted they were, like beer barrels, with statute marchants and forfeitures: but of all his shooes were the strangest, which, being nothing els but a couple of crab shels, were tooth'd at the toes with two sharp sixpeny nailes, that dig'd up every dunghill they came by for gold, and snarl'd at the stones as he went in the street, because they were so common for men, women, and chil-

dren, to tread upon, and he could not devise how to wrest an odde fine out of any of them.

Thus walkes he up and downe all his life time, with an yron crow in his hand instead of a staffe, and a sarjants mace in his mouth, (which night and day he gnawd upon) and either busies himselfe in setting silver lime twigs, to entangle young gentlemen, and casting foorth silken shraps, to catch woodcocks, or in syving of Muck-hills and shop-dust, whereof he will boult a whole cart load to gain a bow'd pinne.

On the other side, Dame Niggardize, his wife, in a sedge rugge kirtle, that had beene a matte time out of mind, a course hempen rayle about her shoulders, borrowed of the one ende of a hop bag, an apron made of almanackes out of date, (such as stand vpon screenes, or on the backside of a dore in a chandlers shop) and an olde wiues pudding pan on her head, thrumd with the parings of her nayles, sate barrelling vp the droppings of her nose, in steed of oyle, to sayme wool withall, and would not aduenture to spit without halfe a dozen of porrengers at her elbow.

The description of Dame Niggardize.

The house, (or rather the hell) where these two earth-wormes encaptiued this beautifull substaunce, was vast, large, strong built, and well furnished, all save the kitchin ; for that was no bigger than the cooks roome in a ship, with a little court chimney, about the compasse of a *parenthesis* in proclamation-print: then judge you what diminutive dishes came out of this doues-neast. So, likewise, of the buttrie; for whereas in houses of such stately foundation, that are built to outward shewe so magnificent, euerie office is answerable to the hall, which is principall, there the buttrie was no more but a blind cole-house, vnder a paire of stayres, wherein (vprising and downe lying) was but one single kilderkin of small beere, that would make a man, with a carrouse of a

spooneful, runne through an alphabet of faces. Nor usd they any glasses or cups (as other men), but onely little farthing ounce boxes, whereof one of them fild vp with froath (in manner and forme of an alehouse) was a meales allowance for the whole houshold. It were lamentable to tell what miserie the rattes and myce endured in this hard world; how, when all supply of victualls fayled them, they went a boot-haling one night to Sinior Greedinesse bed-chamber, where, finding nothing but emptiness and vastitie, they encountered (after long inquisition) with a cod-peece, well dunged and manured with greace (which my pinch-fart penie-father had retaind from his Bachelorship, vntill the eatting of these presents). Vppon that they set, and with a couragious assault rent it cleane away from the breeches, and then carried it in triumph, like a coffin, on their shoulders betwixt them. The verie spiders and dust-weauers, that wont to set vp their loomes in euerie windowe, decayed and vndone through the extreame dearth of the place, (that affoorded them no matter to worke on) were constrained to breake, against their wills, and goe dwell in the countrey, out of the reach of the broome and the wing: and generally, not a flea nor a cricket that caried anie braue minde, that would stay there after he had once tasted the order of their fare. Onely unfortunate golde (a predestinate slaye to drudges and fooles) liues in endlesse bondage there amongst them, and may no way be releast, except you send the rot halfe a yeare amongst his keepers, and so make them away with a murrion, one after another.

The com-  
playnt of  
Pryde.

O ! but a farre greater enormitie raigneth in the heart of the court: Pride, the peruerter of all vertue, sitteth apparailed in the merchants spoyles, and ruine of yong citizens, and scorneth learning, that gaue their vp-start fathers titles of gentrie.

All malcontent sits the greasie sonne of a cloathier, The nature of  
 and complaines (like a decayed carle) of the ruine of <sup>an upstart</sup>  
 ancient houses ; whereas, the weauers loomes first framed  
 the web of his honour, and the locks of wool, that bushes  
 and brambles haue tooke for toule of insolent sheepe  
 that would needs striue for the wall of a fir-bush, haue  
 made him of the tenths of their tarre, a squier of low de-  
 gree ; and of the collections of the scatterings, a justice,  
*Tam Marti quam Mercurio*, of peace and of coram. Hee  
 will bee humorous, forsooth, and haue a broode of fashions  
 by himselfe. Somtimes (because Love commonly wears the  
 liuerie of Wit) hee will be an *Inamorato Poeta*, and son-  
 net a whole quire of paper in praise of Ladie Manibetter,  
 his yeolowfac'd mistres, and wear a feather of her rain-  
 beaten fanne for a fauor, like a fore-horse. All *Italio-*  
*nato* is his talke, and his spade peake is as sharpe as if  
 he had been a pioner before the walls of Roan. Hee will  
 despise the barbarisme of his owne countrey, and tell a  
 whole legend of lyes of his trauayles vnto *Constantinople*.  
 If he be challenged to fight from his delaterie dye-case,  
 hee obiects that it is not the custome of the Spaniard, or  
 the Germaine, to looke backe to euerie dog that barkes.  
 You shall see a dapper Jacke, that hath beene but once  
 at Deepe, wring his face round about, as a man would  
 stirre vp a mustard pot, and talke English through the  
 teeth, like Jaques Scabd-hams, or Monsieur Mingo de  
 Moustrapo ; when (poore slaye) he hath but dipt his bread  
 in wylde boares greace, and come home againe, or been  
 bitten by the shinnes by a wolfe ; and saith, he hath ad-  
 ventured vpon the barricadoes of Gurney, or Guingan,  
 and fought with the yong Guise hand to hand.

Some thinke to be counted rare politicians and statesmen,  
 by beeing solitarie : as who should say, I am a wise man,  
 a braue man, *Secreta mea mihi : frustra sapit, qui sibi*  
*non sapit* ; and there is no man worthie of my companie or

The counter-  
feit politician.

friendship, when, although he goes vngartred like a male-content cutpurse, and weares his hat ouer his eyes lyke one of the cursed crue, yet cannot his stabbing dagger, or his nittie loue-locke, keepe him out of the legend of fantasticall cockscombes. I pray ye, good Mounsier Diuell, take some order, that the streetes be not pestered with them so as they are. Is it not a pitiful thing that a fellow that eates not a good meales meat in a weeke, but beggereth his belly quite and cleane, to make his backe a certain kind of brokerly gentleman, and nowe and then (once or twice in a tearme) comes to the eighteene pence ordenarie, because hee would be seene amongst caualiers and braue courtyers, lyuing otherwise all the yeere long with salt butter and Holland cheese in his chamber, shoulde take vppe a scornfull, melancholike course in his gāte and countenance, and talke as though our common-wealth were but a mockery of gouernment, and our majestrates fooles, who, wronging him in not looking into his deserts, not imploying him in state matters, and that, if more regard were not had of him very shortly, the whole realme should have a misse of him, and he would go (I mary would he) where he should be more accounted off.

Is it not wonderfull ill-prouided, I say, that this disdainfull companion is not made one of the fraternitie of fooles, to talke before great states, with some olde mothe-eaten polititian, of mending high waies, and leading armies into Fraunce.

The prodigall  
young mas-  
ter.

A young heyre, or cockney, that is his mothers darling, if hee haue playde the waste-good at the Innes of the Court, or about London, and that neither his students pension, nor his outhrifts credite, will serue to maintaine his collidge of whores any longer, falles in a quarrelling humor with his fortune, because she made him not king of the Indies, and sweares and stares, after ten in the

hundreth, that nere a such pesant, as his father or brother, shall keep him vnder: he will go to the sea, and teare the gold out of the Spanyards throats, but he will haue it, byrlady: and when he comes there, poore soule, hee lyes in brine, in balist, and is lamentable sicke of the scurvyes; his dayntie fare is turned to a hungry feast of dogs and cats, or haberdine and poore John, at the most; and, which is lamentablest of all, that without mustard.

As a mad ruffion, on a time, being in daunger of shipwrack by a tempest, and seeing all other at their vowes and praiers, that if it would please God, of his infinite goodnesse, to deliuer them out of that imminent daunger, one woulde abiure this sinne, whereunto he was adicted; an other, make satisfaction for that vyolence he had committed; he, in a desperate jest, began thus to reconcile his soule to heauen. "O Lord! if it may seeme good to thee to deliuer me from this feare of vntimely death, I vowe before thy throne, and all thy starry host, neuer to eate haberdine more whilst I liue."

Well, so it fell out, that the sky cleared and the tempest ceased, and this carelesse wretch, that made such a mockery of praier, ready to set foote a land, cried out: Not without mustard, good lord! not without mustard; as though it had been the greatest torment in the world to haue eaten haberdine without mustard. But this by the way, what pennance can be greater for pride, than to let it swinge in hys owne halter? *Dulce bellum inexpertis*: theres no man loues the smoake of his owne countrey that hath not been syngde in the flame of an other soyle. It is a pleasant thing, ouer a fulle pot, to read the fable of thirsty Tantalus, but a hard matter to digest salt meates at sea, with stinking water.

Another misery of pride it is, when men that haue good parts, and beare the name of deepe scholers, cannot

The pride of  
the learned.

be content to participate one faith with all Christendome, but, because they will get a name to their vaineglory, they will set their self loue to study to inuent new sects of singularitie, thinking to liue when they are dead, by hauing theyr sect called after their names ; as Donatists of Donatus, Arrianus of Arrius, and a number more new faith-founders, that haue made *England* the exchange of innouations, and almost as much confusion of religion in euerie quarter, as there was of tongues at the building of the Tower of Babell. Whence, a number that fetch the articles of their beleefe out of Aristotle, and thinke of heauen and hell as the heathen philosophers, take occasion to deride our eclesiasticall state, and all ceremonies of diuine worship, as bug-beares and scar-crowes, because (like Herodes souldiers) we diuide Christs garment amongst vs in so manie peeces, and of the vesture of saluation make some of us babies and apes coates, others straight trusses and diuell breeches, some gally gascoynes, or a shipmans hose ; like the Anabaptists and adulterous Familists, others with the Martinists, a hood with two faces, to hide their hypocrisie, and, to conclude, some, like the Barrowists and Greenwoodians, a garment ful of the plague, which is not to be worn before it be new washt.

Hence atheists triumph and reioyce, and talke as prophanely of the Bible, as of Beuis of Hampton. I heare say there be mathematitians abroad that will prooue men before Adam ; and they are harbourred in high places, who will maintayne it, to the death, that there are no diuells.

The devill hath children (as other men), but fewe of them know their owne father. It is a shame (Senior Belzibub) that you shoulde suffer yourselfe thus to be tearmed a bastard, or not approue to your predestinate children, not only that they haue a father, but that you are hee that must owne them. These are but the suburbs of the sinne we haue in hand :

I must describe to you a large cittie, wholy inhabited with this damnable enormitie.

In one place let me shewe you a base artificer, that hath no reuenues to bost on but a needle in his bosome, as braue as any pensioner or nobleman.

In an other corner, Mistris Minx, a marchants wife, that will eate no cherries, forsooth, but when they are at twentie shillings a pound, that lookest as simperingly as if she were besmeard, and iets it as gingerly as if she were dancing the canaries, she is so finicall in her speach, as though she spake nothing but what she had first sewd ouer before in her samplers, and the puling accent of her voyce is like a fained treble, or ones voyce that interprets to the puppets. What should I tell how squeamish she is in her dyet, what toyle she puts her poore seruants vnto, to make her looking glasses in the pauement? how she wil not goe into the fieldes, to cowre on the greene grasse, but shee must haue a coatch for hir convoy, and spends halfe a day in pranking her self, if shee bee inuited to anie strange place? Is not this the excesse of pride, Signior Sathan? Goe too; you are vnwise, if you make her not a chiefe saint in your calender.

The next obiect that encounters my eyes, is some such obscure vpstart gallants as, without desert or seruice, are raised from the plough to be checkmate with princes: and these I can no better compare than to creatures that are bred *sine coitu*, as crickets in chimnyes; to which I resemble poore scullians, that, from turning spit in the chimney corner, are on the sodayne hoysed vp from the kitchen into the wayting chamber, or made barons of the beanes, and marquesses of the mary-boanes: some by corrupt water, as gnats, to which we may liken brewers, that, by retayling filthie Thames water, come in few yeres to be worth fortie or fiftie thousand pound: others by dead wine, as little flying wormes; and so the vintners

The pride of  
artificers.  
The pride of  
marchants  
wives.

The pride of  
pesants  
sprung up of  
nothing.

in like ease : others by slime, as frogs, which may be al-luded to Mother Bunches slymie ale, that hath made her, and some other of her fil pot familie so wealthie: others by dirt, as wormes, and so I know manie gold-finders and hostlers come vp : some by hearbs, as cankers, and after the same sort our apothecaries : others by ashes, as scarabes, and how else get our colliers the pence ? others from the putrified flesh of dead beasts, as bees of bulls, and butchers by fly-blowne beefe, waspes of horses, and hackney-men by selling their lame iades to huntsmen, for carrion.

Sparagus a  
flowre that  
never grow-  
eth but  
through  
man's dung.

Yet am I not against it, that these men by their mechanicall trades should come to be sparage gentlemen and chuff-headed Burghomasters ; but that better places should bee possessed by coystrells, and the coblers crowe, for crying but *ave Caesar*, be more esteemed than rarer birds, that haue warbled sweeter notes vnrewarded. But it is no mervaile ; for, as hemlocke fatteth quayles, and henbane swyne, which to all other is poyson, so some mens vices haue power to aduance them, which would subuert anie else that should seeke to clymbe by them ; and it is inough in them, that they can pare their nayles well, to get them a liuing, when as the seauen liberall sciences and a good legge, will scarse get a scholler bread and cheese.

These whelpes of the first lytter of gentilitie, these exhalations, drawnen vp to the heauen of honour from the dunghill of abiect fortune, haue long been on horsebacke to come riding to your diuellship ; but, I know not how, lyke Saint George, they are alwaies mounted but neuer moue. Here they out-face towne and countrey, and doo nothing but bandie factions with their betters. Their bigge limbes yeeld the common-wealth no other seruice but idle sweate, and their heads, like rough hewen gloabes, are fit for nothing but to be the blockhouses for

sleep. Raynold, the fox, may well beare vp his tayle in the lyons denne, but when he comes abroad, he is afraide of euerie dogge that barkes. What curre will not bawle, and be readie to flye in a mans face, when he is set on by his master, who, if hee bee not by to encourage him, he casts his tayle betwixt his legges, and steales away like a sheepe-byter. Ulisses was a tall man vnder Ajax shield, but by himselfe hee would neuer aduenture but in the night. Pride is neuer built but vpon some pillers; and let his supporters faile him neuer so little, you shall finde him verie humble in the dust. Wit often-times stands in steade of a chiefe arche to vnderprop it, in souldiers strength, in women beautie.

Drudges, that haue no extraordinarie giftes of bodie nor of minde, filche themselues into some noble-mans seruice, either by bribes or by flatterie, and, when they are there, they so labour it with cap and knee, and ply it with priuie whisperinges, that they wring themselues into his good opinion ere he be aware. Then, doo they vaunt themselues ouer the common multitude, and are readie to braue anie man that stands by himselfe. Their lords authoritie is as a rebater to beare vp the peacockes tayle of their boasting, and anie thing that is said or done to the vnhandsominge of their ambition is straight wrested to the name of treason. Thus doo weedes grow vp whiles no man regards them, and the ship of fooles is arriuied in the hauen of felicitie, whilst the scoutes of envie contemne the attempts of anye such small barkes.

But beware you that be great mens fauorites: let not a seruile, insinuating slauie, creep betwixt your legs into credit with your lords; for pesants that come out of the colde of pouertie, once cherisht in the bosome of prosperitie, will straight forget that euer there was a winter of want, or who gaue them roome to warme them. The son of a churle cannot choose but prooue vngrateful, like

The base insinuating of drudges, and their practise to aspyre.

his father. Trust not a villaine that hath been miserable, and is sodainely growen happie. Vertue ascendeth by degrees of desert vnto dignitie: golde and lust may lead a man a nearer way to promotion, but he that hath neither comelinesse nor coyne to commend him, vndoubtedly strydes ouer time by stratagems, if of a moale-hill hee growes to a mountaine in a moment. This is that which I vrge: there is no frendship to be had with him that is resolute to doo or suffer any thing rather than to endure the destenie whereto he was borne; for he will not spare his owne father or brother to make himselfe a gentleman.

As by carrying tales, or playing the douty pandor.

The pride of the Spaniard.

Fraunce, Italy, and Spaine, are all full of these false-hearted Machiuillians; but properly pride is the disease of the Spaniard, who is born a braggart in his mother's womb; for, if he be but 17 yeares olde, and hath come to the place where a field was fought, (though halfe a yeare before) hee then talkes like one of the giants that made warre against heaven, and stands vpon his honor, as much as if he were one of Augustus souldiers, of whom he first instituted the Order of Heralds: and let a man sooth him in this vayne of kilcwe vanitie, you maye commaund his heart out of his belly to make you a rasher on the coales, if you will next your heart.

The pride of the Italian.

The Italian is a more cunning proud fellow, and hides his humor farre cleanlier, and, indeed, seemes to take a pride in humilitie, and will profer a straunger more curtesie than he meanes to performe. Hee hateth him deadly that takes him at his word: as, for example, if vpon an occasion of meeting he request you to dinner or supper at his house, and that at the first or second intreatie you promise to be his guest, he will be the mortalst enemie you haue: but if you deny him, he will think you have manners and good bringing vp, and will loue you as his brother: marry, at the thirde or fourth

time you must not refuse him. Of all things he counteth it a mightie disgrace to haue a man passe justling by him in hast on a narrow causey, and aske him no leaue, which hee neuer reuengeth with lesse than the stab.

The Frenchman (not altered from his owne nature) is wholly compact of deceiuable courtship, and (for the most part) loues none but himselfe and his pleasure : yet though he be the most Grand Signeur of them all, he will say, *A vostre service et commandemente monsieur*, to the meanest vassaile he meetes. He thinkes he doth a great fauour to that gentleman, or follower of his, to whom hee talkes sitting on his close stoole : and with that fauour (I have heard) the princes wonted to grace the noble men of Fraunce ; and a great man of their nation comming (in time past) ouer into England, and being here verie honorably receiued, hee, in requital of his admirable entertainment, on an euening going to the privie, (as it were to honour extraordinarie our English lords appointed to attend vpon him) gaue one the candle, another his girdle, and another the paper : but they (not acquainted with this newe kinde of gracing) accompanying him to the privie dore, set downe the trash, and so left him ; which hee (considering what inestimable kindnesse he extended to them therein more than vsuall) took very hainouslie.

The most grosse and senselesse proud dolts (in a difference from all these kindes) are the Danes, who stande so much vpon their vnweldie burlibound souldiery, that they account of no man that hath not a battle axe at his girdle to hough dogs with, or weares not a cock's fether in a thrumb hat like a caualier : briefly, he is the best foole bragart vnder heauen. For, besides, nature hath lent him a flabberkin face, like one of the foure windes, and cheekes that sagge like a woman's dugges ouer his chin-bone, his apparaile is so puft vp with bladders of

The pride of  
the French-  
man.

The pride of  
the Dane.

If you know him not by any of these marks, look on his fingers, and you shall bee sure to find halfe a dozen siluer rings, worth three pence a peece.

The Danes enemies to al learning.

taffatie, and his backe (like biefe stufft with parlsey) so drawne out with ribands and deuises, and blisterd with light sарcenet bastings, that you would thinke him nothing but a swarme of butterfleyes, if you saw him a farre off. Thus walkes hee vp and downe in his maiestie, taking a yard of ground at euery step, and stampes on the earth so terrible, as if he ment to knock vp a spirite, when (foule drunken bezzele) if an Englishman set his little finger to him, he falls like a hog's-trough that is set on one end. Therefore, I am the more vehement against them, because they are an arrogant asse-headed people, that naturally hate learning, and all them that loue it : yea, and for they would vtterly roote it out from amongst them, they haue with-drawen all rewards from the professors thereof. Not *Barbary* it selfe is halfe so barbarous as they are.

First, whereas the hope of honour maketh a souldier in England : byshopricks, deanries, prebendaries, and other priuate dignities animate our diuines to such excellency : the ciuill lawyers haue their degrees and consistories of honour by themselves, equall in place with knights and esquiers : the common lawyers (suppose in the beginning they are but husbandmen's sonnes) come in time to be the chiefe fathers of the land, and many of them not the meanest of the Privie Counsell.

No rewards among them for desert.

There, the souldiour may fight himselfe out of his skinne, and doe more employts than hee hath doyts in his purse, before from a common mercenary hee come to bee corporall of the mould cheese, or the lieftenant gette a captainship. None but the sonne of a corporall must bee a corporall, nor any be captaine but the lawfull begosten of a captaine's body. Byshops, deanes, prebendaries, why they know no such functions : a sort of ragged ministers they haue, of whom they account as basely as waterbearers. If any of the noblemen refrayn three

howers in his life time from drinking, to study the lawes, he may, perhaps, haue a little more gouernment put in his hands than an other ; but, otherwise, burgomasters and gentlemen beare the sway of both swords, spiritual and temporall. It is death there for any but a husbandman to marrie a husbandman's daughter, or a gentleman's childe to ioyne with any but the sonne of a gentleman. Mary thys, the king may well banish, but he cannot put a gentleman to death in any cause whatsoeuer, which makes them stand vpon it so proudly as they doe. For fashion sake some will put their children to schoole, but they set them not to it till they are fourteene yeare old ; so that you shall see a great boy with a beard learne his A B C, and sit weeping vnder the rod when he is thirty yeeres olde.

I will not stand to inferre what a preiudice it is to the thrift of a florishing state, to poyson the groth of glory, by giuing it nought but the puddle water of penury to drinke ; to clippe the wings of a high towring faulcon, who, whereas she wont in her feathered youthfulness, to looke with amiable eye on her gray breast, and her speckled side sayles, all sinnowed with siluer quilles, and to drieue whole armies of fearfull foules before her to her master's table ; now shee sits sadly on the ground, picking of wormes, mourning the cruelty of those vngentleman-like idle hands, that dismembreth the beauty of her trayne.

What it is to make labour without hope.

You all know that man (in so much as hee is the image of God) delighteth in honour and worship ; and al holy writ warrants that delight, so it bee not derogatory to any part of God's owne worship. Now, take away that delight, a discontented idleness ouertakes him. For his hyre, any handicraft man, be he carpenter joyner or paynter, will plodingly do his day-labor ; but to adde credit and fame to his workmanship, or to winne a mas-

ter to himselfe aboue all other, hee will make a further assay in his trade than euer hitherto hee did : hee will haue a thousand florishes, which before hee neuer thought vpon, and in one day rid more out of hand than erst he did in ten. So in armes, so in arts : if tytles of fame and glory bee proposed to forward mindes, or that any souereigntie (whose sweetnes they haue not yet felt) bee set in likely view for them to sore to, they will make a ladder of cord of the links of their braines, but they wil fasten their hands, as wel as their eies, on the imaginatiue blisse, which they already enjoy by admiration. Experience reproves me for a fool, for delating on so manifest a case.

The Danes are bursten-bellied sots, that are to be confuted with nothing but tankerds or quart pots, and Ovid might as wel haue read his verses to the Getes that vnderstood him not, as a man talke reason to them that haue no eares but their mouthes, nor sense but of that which they swallow downe their throates. God so loue mee, as I loue the quickwitted Italians, and therefore loue them the more, because they mortally detest this surley swinish generation.

I neede not fetch colours from other countreyes to paint the vgly visage of Pride, since her picture is set foorth in so manie painted faces here at home. What drugs, what sorceries, what oyles, what waters, what oyntments, doo our curious dames vse to enlarge their wythered beauties. Their lips are as lauishly red, as if they vsed to kisse an okerman euery morning, and their cheekes suger-candyed and cherry blusht so sweetly after the colour of a newe Lord Mayor's posts, as if the pageant of their wedlocke holiday were hard at the doore ; so that if a painter were to drawe anie of their counterfets on a table, he needes no more but wet his pencil, and dab it on their cheekes, and he shall haue vermillion and white enough to furnish out his work, though he leauue his tar-

And that  
sense often  
times maks  
them sence-  
lesse.

Withered  
flowers need  
much water-  
ing.  
And will indure all wea-  
thers as wel  
as they.  
They may  
well be called  
counterfeits,  
since the  
beauty they  
imitate is  
counter-  
feyted.

boxe at home behinde him. Wise was that sin-washing poet that made the ballet of Blue Starch and Poaking Stickes, for, indeed, the lawne of licentiousnesse hath consumed all the wheate of hospitalitie. It is saide, Lawrence Lucifer, that you went vp and downe London crying then like a lanterne and candle man. I meruaile no laundresse would glue you the washing and starching of your face for your labour, for God knowes it is as blacke as the Blacke Prince.

It is suspected you haue been a great tobacco-taker in your youth, which causeth it to come so to passe ; but Dame Nature, your nurse, was partly in fault, else she might haue remedied it. She should haue noynted your face ouer night with *lac virginis*, which, bakeing vpon it in bed till the morning, she might haue pild off the scale like the skin of a custard ; and making a posset of vergis mixt with the oyle of Tartary and camphire, and bathde it in it a quarter of an houre, and you had been as faire as the floure of the frying-pan. I warrant, we haue old hacksters in this great grandmother of corporations, Madam Troynonant, that haue not backbited anie of their neighbours with the tooth of envie this twentie yeare, in the wrinckles of whose face yee may hide false dice, and play at cherry pit in the dint of their cheekes ; yet these aged mothers of iniquitie will haue their deformities newe plastered ouer, and weare nosegayes of yeolow haire on their furies forheads, when age hath written, Hoe ! God, be here ! on their bald, burnt, parchment pates. Pish, pish ! what talke you of olde age or balde pates ? Men and women that haue gone vnder the south pole, must lay of theyr furre night-caps in spyght of their teeth, and become yeomen of the vineger bottle : a close periwig hides al the sinnes of an old whore-master ; but *cucullus non facit monachum* — 'tis not their newe bonnets will keepe them from the old boan-ach. Ware when a man's

Marke these two letter-leaping metaphors, good people.

So saieth the learned Polihistor Rimerus, in his first booke, first page and first line of hys ballad of blew starch.

The devill a great tobacco taker.

A medicine to make the devill faire.

He that wipes his nose, and hath it not, shall forfeit his whole face.

Alias, Mother Cornelius Meridian.

Translated word for word, juxta originalem.

sinnen are written on his ey-browes, and that there is not a hayre bredth betwixt them and the falling sicknesse. The times are dangerous, and this is an yron age ; or rather no yron age, for swords and bucklers goe to pawne apace in Long Lane, but a tinne age, for tinne and pewter are more esteemed than Latine. You that be wise, despise it, abhorre it, neglect it, for what should a man care for golde that cannot get it.

An antiquarie is an honest man, for he had rather scrape a peece of copper out of the durt, than a crowne out of Ploidon's standish. I know manie wise gentlemen of this mustie vocation, who, out of loue with the times wherein they liue, fall a retayling of Alexander's stirrops, because (in veritie) there is not such a strong peece of stretching leather made now adaies, nor yron so well tempered for anie mony. They will blow their nose in a box, and say it is the spettle that Diogenes spet in ones face, who, being inuited to dinner to his house, that was neate and braue in all poynts as might be devised, and the grunting dog, somewhat troubled with the rheume (by meanes of his long fasting, and staying for dinner more than wont), spet full in his host's face ; and, being askt the reason of it, said it was the foulest place he could spie out in all his house. Let their mistres (or some other woman) give them a fether of her fanne for a fauour, and if one aske them what it is, they make answere a plume of the Phenix, wheroft there is but one in the whole world. A thousand jymiams and toyes haue they in theyr chambers, which they heape vp together, with infinite expence, and are made beleue of them that sel them, that they are rare and precious things, when they haue gathered them vp on some dunghill, or rakte them out of the kennell by chaunce. I knowe one sold an olde rope with foure knots on it for foure pound, in that he gaue it out, it was the length and bredth of

The commendation of Antiquaries.  
Laudamus veteres, sed nostris utimur annis.

Christ's tomb. Let a tinker take a peece of brasse worth a halfpenie, and set strange stampes on it, and I warrant he may make it mōre worth to him of some fantasticall foole, than all the kettels that euer he mended in his life. This is the disease of our new-fangled humorists, that know not what to doo with their wealth. It argueth a verie rustie wit, so to doate on worm-eaten elde.

Out vpon it ! how long is Pride a dressing herselfe ? Enuie, awake ! for thou must appeare before *Nicholao Malevolo*, great muster-master of hel. Mark you this sly mate, how smoothly he lookes ? The poets were ill aduised that fained him to be a leane, gag-toothed bel-dame, with hollow eyes, pale cheekes, and snakie haire ; for hee is not onely a man, but a iolly, lustie, olde gentleman, that will wink, and laugh, and iest drily, as if he were the honestest of a thousand ; and, I warrant, you shall not heare a foule word come from him in a yeaire. I will not contradict it, but the dog may worrie a sheepe in the darke, and thrust his neck into the collar of clemencie and pitie when he hath done ; as who should say, God forgive him ! he was a sleep in the shambles, when the innocent was done to death. But openly, Enuie sets a ciuill, fatherly countenaunce vpon it, and hath not so much as a drop of bloud in his face to attaint him of murther. I thought it expedient, in this my Supplication, to place it next vnto Pride, for it is his adopted sonne : and hence comes it that proud men repine at others prosperitie, and grieue that anie should be great but themselues. *Meus cujusque, is est quisque* ; it is a prouerbe that is as hoarie as Dutch-butter. If a man will goe to the diuell, he may goe to the diuell : there are a thousand iugling trickes to be vsed at Hey, passe, come aloft ! and the world hath cords enough to trusse vp a calfe that stands in ones way. Enuie is a crocodyle that weepes when he kills, and fights with none but he

The complaint of  
Envy.

feedes on. This is the nature of this quicke-sighted monster: — he will endure anie paines to endamage another; wast his bodie with vndertaking exploytes that would require ten men's strengths, rather than any should get a penie but himselfe; bleare his eyes to stand in his neighbor's light, and, to conclude, like Atlas vnderprop heauen, rather than anie should be in heauen that he likde not of, or come to heauen by anie other meanes but by him.

You, goodman wandrer about the world, how do ye spend your time, that you doo not rid vs of these pestilente members? You are ynworthie to haue an office, if you can execute it no better. Behold another enemie of mankind, besides thy selfe, exalted in the south,—Philip of Spaine; who, not contented to be the god of gold and chiefest commaunder of content that Europe affords, but now he doth nothing but thirst after humane blood, when his foote is on the threshold of the graue: and as a wolfe, beeing about to devoure a horse, doth balist his belly with earth, that he may hang the heavier vpon him, and then forcibly flyes in his face, neuer leauing his hold till he hath eaten him vp; so this woluish vnnatural usurper, being about to deuoure all Christendome by inuasion, doth cramme his treasures with Indian earth to make his malice more forcible, and then flyes in the bosome of France and Belgia, neuer withdrawing his forces (as the wolfe his fastning) till hee hath deououred their welfare, and made the war-wasted carcasses of both kingdomes a pray for his tyrannie. Onely poore *England* giues him bread for his cake, and holds him out at the armes end. His Armados (that, like a high wood, ouer-shadowed the shrubs of our lowe ships) fled from the breath of our cannons, as vapors before the sunne, or as the elephant flyes from the ramme, or the sea-whale from the noyse of parched bones. The winds, enuying that the aire

Phillip of  
Spayne as  
great an ene-  
my to man-  
kinde as the  
devil.

should be dimmed with such a *chaos* of wooden clowdes, raised vp high bulwarkes of bellowing waues, where Death shot at their disorderd nauie ; and the rockes with their ouer-hanging jawes, eate vp all the fragments of oake that they left. So perisht our foes, so the heauens did fight for vs—*Præterit Hippomenes, resonant spectacula plausu.*

I doo not doubt (Doctor Diuell) but you were present in this action, or passion, rather, and helpt to bore holes in ships to make them sink faster ; and rence out galley-foysts with salt water, that stanke like fustie barrells with their masters' feare. It will bee a good while ere you doo as much for the king, as you did for his subjects. I would haue ye perswade an armie of goutie usurers to goe to sea vpon a boon voyage : trye if you can tempt Enuie to embark himselfe in the maladuenture, and leaue troubling the stremme, that poets and good fellowes may drinke, and souldiers sing *placebo*, that haue murmured so long at the waters of strife.

But that will neuer be ; for as long as Pride, Ryot, and Whoredome are the companions of yong courtiers, they will alwayes be hungrie, and readie to bite at anie dogge that hath a boane giuen him beside themselues. Jesu ! what secret grudge and rancour raignes amongst them, one beeing readie to despaire of himselfe, if hee see the prince but giue his fellow a faire look, or to dye for greefe if hee bee put downe in brauerye neuer so little. Yet this custome haue our false harts fetcht from other countries, that they wil sweare and protest loue where they hate deadly, and smile on him most kindly, whose subuersion in soule they haue vowed. *Fraus sublimi regnat in aula*—'Tis rare to find a true friend in kings' pallaces : eyther thou must be so miserable that thou fall into the hands of scornfull pittie, or thou canst not escape the stinge of enuy. In one thought, assem-

ble the famous men of all ages, and tell mee which of them all sat in the sunnesigne of his soueraigne's grace, or wext great of lowe beginnings, but hee was spite-blasted, heau'd at, and ill spoken of, and that of those that bare them most countenance. But were Enuy nougnt but words, it might seeme to be onely women's sinne ; but it hath a lewde mate hanging on his sleeue, called Murther, a sterne fellow, that (like a Spanyard in fight) aymeth all at the heart : hee hath more shapes than Proteus, and will shift himselfe, vpon any occasion of reuengement, into a man's dish, his drinke, his apparell, his rings, his stirhops, his nosgay.

Murder, the companion of Envy.

Italie the store-house of all murderous inventions.

O Italie, the academie of man-slaughter, the sporting place of murther, the apothecary-shop of poyson for all nations ! how many kind of weapons hast thou inuented for malice ! Suppose I loue a man's wife, whose husband yet liues, and cannot enjoy her for his iealous ouer-looking, phisicke, or, rather, the art of murther, (as it may be vsed) will lend one a medicine, which shall make him away in nature of that disease hee is most subiect too, whether in the space of a yeere, a moneth, halfe a yeere, or what tract of time you will, more or lesse.

In Rome the papall chayre is washt, euery fife yeere at the furthest, with this cyle of aconitum. I pray God, the Kinge of Spayne feasted not our holy father Sextus, that was last, with such conserve of henbane ; for it was credibly reported hee loued him not, and thys, that is nowe, is a god made with his owne hands ; as it may appere by the pasquill that was set vp of him, in a manner of a note, presently after his election—*Sol. Re. Me. Fa.* that is to say, *Solus Rex Me Facit*, onely the King of Spayne made me pope. I am no chronicler from our owne countrey, but if probable suspition might be heard vpon his oath, I thinke some men's soules would be

The pasquill that was made upon this last Pope.

canonized for martyrs, that on earth did sway it as monarchies.

As Cardinal Wolsey, for example.

Is it your wil and pleasure (noble Lants-graue of *Lymbo*) to let us haue lesse carousing to your health in poyson, fewer vnder-hand conspyrings, or open quarrells executed onely in wordes, as they are in the worlde nowe a dayes ; as if men will needes carouse, conspire, and quarrell, that they may make Ruffians' Hall of hell, and there bandy balls of brimstone at one an others head, and not trouble our peacable Paradize with their priuate hurliburlies about strumpets, where no weapon (as in Adam's Paradize) shold be named, but onely the angell of Prouidence stand with a fiery sword at the gate to keepe out our enemies.

A perturbation of minde (like vnto Enuy) is Wrath, which looketh farre lower than the former ; for, whereas Enuy cannot be said to be but in respect of our superiours, Wrath respecteth no degrees nor persons, but is equally armed agaynst all that offend him. A hare-brained little dwarfe it is, with a swarth visage, that hath his hart at his tongue's end, if he be contrarie, and will be sure to doe no right, nor take no wrong. If hee bee a judge or a justice (as sometimes the lyon comes to giue sentence against the lamb), then he sweares by nothing but by Saint Tyborne, and makes Newgate a noune substantiue, whereto all his other words are but adiectives. Lightly, hee is an olde man, (for those yeares are most wayward and teatish) yet be he neuer so olde or so froward, since Auarice likewise is a fellow vice of those fraile yeares, we must set one extreame to striue with another, and alay the anger of oppression by the sweet incense of a newe purse of angels ; or the doting planet may haue such predominance in these wicked elders of Israel, that, if you send your wife, or some other female, to plead for you, she may get your

The complaint of Wrath a branch of Envy.

Little men for the most part are most angry.

Newgate, a common name for al prisons, as homo is a common name for a man or a woman.

pardon vpon promise of better acquaintance. But whist! these are the workes of darknesse, and may not be talkt of in the day time. Furie is a heate, or fire, and must bee quencht with maides water.

A tale of a  
wise justice.

Amongst other cholericke wise justices he was one that, hauing a play presented before him and his toune-ship by Tarlton and the rest of his fellowes, her Maiesties seruants, and they were now entring into their first merriment (as they call it), the people began exceedingly to laugh, when Tarlton first peopt out his head. Whereat the justice, not a little moued, and seeing with his beckes and nods, hee could not make them cease, he went with his staffe, and beat them round about vnmercifully on the bare pates, in that they, being but farmers and poore countrey hyndes, would presume to laugh at the Queenes men, and make no more account of her cloath in his presence.

The causes conducting vnto Wrath are as diuers as the actions of a man's life. Some will take on like a mad man if they see a pigge come to the table. Sotericus, the surgeon, was cholericke at sight of sturgeon. The Irishman will draw his dagger, and bee readie to kill and slay, if one break wind in his companie—and so some of our English men, that be souldiers, if one giue them the lye. But these are light matters, whereof Pierce complaineth not.

The nature of  
the Irishman.

Be aduertised, Master *Os fætidum*, bedle of the blacke-smithes, that lawyers cannot devise which way in the world to begge, they are so troubled with brabblements and suites euerie tearme, of yeomen and gentlemen that fall out for nothing. If John a Nokes his henne doo but leap into Elizabeth de Gappes close, shee will neuer leaue hunting her husband till he bring it to a *nisi prius*. One while, the parson sueth the parishioner for bringing home his tythes; another while, the parishioner

suethe parson for not taking away his tythes in time.

I heard a tale of a butcher, who, driving two calues over a common that were coupled together by the neckes with an oken wyth, in the way where they should passe, there lay a poore, leane mare, with a galde backe ; to whome they comming (as chance fell out), one of one side, and the other of the other, smelling on her, (as their manner is) the midst of the wyth that was betwixt their neckes rubd her, and grated her on the sore backe, that shee started and rose vp, and hung them both on her backe as a beame ; which, being but a rough plaister to her raw vicer, she ran away with them (as she were frantick) into the fens, where the butcher could not follow them, and drownde both her self and them in a quagmyre. Now, the owner of the mare is in law with the butcher for the losse of his mare, and the butcher enterchangeably endites him for his calues. I pray ye, Timothie Tempter, be an arbitrator betwixt them, and couple them both by the neckes, (as the calues were) and carrie them to hel on your backe, and then, I hope, they will be quiet.

A merry tale  
of a butcher  
and his calves.

The chiefe spur vnto Wrath is drunckenes, which, as the touch of an ashen bough causeth a gidinesse in the viper's head, and the batte, lighty strooke with the leafe of a tree, loseth his remembrance, so they, being but lightly sprinckled with the iuyce of the hop, become sencelesse, and haue their reason strooken blind, as soon as euer the cup scaleth the fortresse of their nose. Then run their words at random, like a dog that runnes after his master, and are vppe with this man and that man, and generally invey against all men, but those that keepe a wette corner for a friend, and will not thinke scorne to drinke with a good fellowe and a souldiour ; and so long doe they practise this traine on the ale-bench, that, when they are sober, they cannot leauue it. There be them that

gette their lyuing all the yeere long by nothing but rayling.

A tale of one  
Fryer Charles  
a foule  
mouthde  
knaue.

Not farre from Chester, I knewe an odde, foule-mouthde knaue, called Charles the Fryer, that had a face so parboyled with mens spitting on it, and a backe so often knighted in Bridewell, that it was impossible for any shame or punishment to terrifie him from ill speaking. Noblemen hee would likен to more vgly things than himselfe ; some to after my most hearty commendations, with a dash ouer the head ; others to guilded chines of beefe, or a shooemaker sweating when hee pulles on a shooe ; another to an olde verse in Cato, *Ad consilium ne accesseris, antequam voceris* ; an other to a Spanish codpisso ; an other that his face was not yet finisht, with such like innumerable absurd allusions : yea, what was he in the court but he had a comparison instead of a capcase to put him in. Upon a time, being challengde at his owne weapon in a priuate chamber, by a great personage, (rayling, I meane) he so farre outstript him in villainous words, and ouer-bandied him in bitter terms, that the name of sport could not persuade him patience, or containe his furie in anie degrees of iest, but needes hee must wreake himselfe vpon him : neither would a common reuenge suffice him, his displeasure was so infinite, (and, it maybe, common reuenges he tooke before, as farre as the whipcord would stretch vpon like prouokements) wherefore he caused his men to take him, and bricke him vp in a narrow chimney, that was *neque major neque minor corpore locato* ; where he fed him for fifteene dayes with bread and water through a hole, letting him sleepe standing if he would, for lye or sit he could not, and then he let him out to see if he could learne to rule his tongue anie better.

It is a disparagement to those that haue anie true

spark of gentilitie, to be noted of the whole world so to delight in detracting, that they should keepe a venomous toothde curre, and feede him with the crums that fall from his table, to doe nothing but bite euery one by the shins that passe by. If they will needes be merrie, let them haue a foole, and not a knaue, to disport them, and seeke some other to bestow their almes on, than such an impudent begger.

As there be them that rayle at all men, so there be them that rayle at all artes, as Cornelius Agrippa, *De Vanitate Scientiarum*, and a treatise that I haue seene in dispraise of learning ; where he saith, it is the corrupter of the simple, the schoolemaster of sinne, the storehouse of treacherie, the reuiuer of vices, and mother of cowardize ; alleadging manie examples how there was neuer man eggregiouslie euill but hee was a scholler ; that, when the vse of letters was first inuented, the Golden World ceased, *facinusque invasit mortales* ; how studie doth effeminate a man, dimme his sight, weaken his braine, and engender a thousand diseases. Small learning would serue to confute so manifest a scandale ; and I imagine all men, like my selfe, so vnmoueable resolute of the excellency thereof, that I will not, by the vnderpropping of confutation, seeme to giue the idle-witted aduersarie so much encouragement, as he should surmize his superficiall arguments had shaken the foundation of it, 'gainst which he could neuer haue lifted his penne if herself had not helpt him to hurt herselfe.

With the enemies of poetry, I care not if I haue a bout ; and those are they that tearme our best writers but babbling ballat-makers, holding them fantasticall fooles that haue wit, but cannot tell how to vse it. I, my selfe, haue beeene so censured among some dull-headed diuines, who deeme it no more cunning to write an exquisit poem, than to preach pure Calvin, or distill the

An invective  
against the  
enemies of  
Poetry.

Absit arrogantia, that this speech should concerne all di-vines but such dunces as abridge men of their lawfull lyberty, and care not how unprepared they speake to their auditory.

Such sermons I meane as sectaries preach in ditches, and other conven-ticles, when they leape from the cob-ler's stall to their pulpits.

The use of Poetry.  
Encomium H. Smithi.

iuice of a commentary into a quarter sermon. Proue it when you will, you slow spirited Saturnists, that haue nothing but the pilfries of your penne to polish an exhortation withall; no eloquence but tautologies to tye the eares of your auditory vnto you; no inuention but heere is to be noted, "I stole this note out of Beza or Marlorat;" no wit to moue, no passion to vrge, but onely an ordinary forme of preaching, blowen vp by vse of often hearing and speaking; and you shall finde there goes more exquisite paynes and purity of wit to the writing of one such rare poem as Rosamond, than to a hundred of your dunsticall sermons.

Should we (as you) borrow all out of others, and gather nothing of our selues, our names would be baffuld on euerie booke-sellers stall, and not a chandler's mustard-pot but would wipe his mouth with our wast paper. New herrings, new! we must cry, euery time we make our selues publique, or else we shall be christend with a hundred newe tytles of idiotisme. Nor is poetry an art whereof there is no vse in a man's whole life, but to de-scribe discontented thoughts and youthfull desires, for there is no study but it dooth illustrate and beautifie. How admirably shine those diuines aboue the common mediocritie, that haue tasted the sweet springs of Pernassus!

Siluer-tongu'd Smith, whose well tun'd stile hath made thy death the generall teares of the Muses, queintlye couldst thou devise heauenly ditties to Apolloes lute, and teach stately verse to trip it as smoothly as if Ouid and thou had but one soule. Hence along did it proceede, that that thou wert such a plausible pulpit man, before thou entredst into the wonderfull wayes of theologie, thou refinedst, preparedst, and purifiedst thy wings with sweete poerie. If a simple man's censure may be admitted to speake in such an open theater of opinions, I neuer saw abundant reading better mixt with delight, or sentences

which no man can challenge of prophane affectation, sounding more melodious to the eare, or piercing more deepe to the heart.

To them that demaund, what fruites the poets of our time bring forth, or wherein they are able to approue themselues necessarie to the state? thus I answere: first and formost, they haue cleansed our language from barbarisme, and made the vulgar sort, here in *London*, (which is the fountaine whose riuers flowe round about *England*) to aspire to a richer puritie of speach than is communicated with the comminaltie of anie nation vnder heauen. The vertuous by their praises they encourage to be more vertuous; to vicious men they are as infernall hags, to haunt their ghosts with eternall infamie after death. The soldiour, in hope to haue his high deedes celebrated by their pens, despiseth a whole armie of perills, and acteth wonders exceeding all humane conjecture. Those that care neither for God nor the diuell, by their quills are kept in awe. *Multi famam, (saith one)*

*pauci conscientiam verentur.*

*Plin. lib. 3.*

Let God see what he wil, they would be loath to haue the shame of the world. What age wil not prayse immortal Sir Philip Sidney, whom noble Salustius (that thrice singular French poet) hath famoused, together with Sir Nicholas Bacon, lord keeper, and merry Sir Thomas Moore, for the chiefe pillers of our English speech. Not so much but Chaucer's host, Baly in Southwarke, and his wife of Bath, he keepes such a stirre with in his *Canterbury tales*, shalbe talkt of whilst the Bath is vsde, or there be euer a badde house in Southwark.

Gentles, it is not your lay chronigraphers that write of nothing but of Mayors and Sheriefs, and the deare yeere, and the great frost, that can endowe your names wyth neuer dated glory; for they want the wings of

*The dispraise  
of laie chroni-  
graphers.*

choyse words to fyle to heauen, which wee haue. They cannot sweeten a discourse, or wrest admiration from men reading, as we can, reporting the meanest accident. Poetry is the hunny of all flowers, the quintessence of all scyences, the marrowe of witte, and the very phrase of angels. How much better is it, then, to haue an eligant lawyer to plead ones cause, than a stutting townsman, that loseth himselfe in his tale, and dooth nothing but make legs; so much is it better for a nobleman, or gentleman, to haue his honour's story related, and his deedes emblazoned, by a poet than a citizen.

Alas, poor latynlesse authors! they are so simple, they knowe not what they doe: they no sooner spy a new ballad, and his name to it that compilde it, but they put him in for one of the learned men of our time. I maruell how the masterlesse men, that sette vp their bills in Paules for seruices, and such as paste vp their papers on euery post, for arithmetique and wrting-schooles, scape eternitie amongst them: I beleue both they and the knight marshal's men, that nayle vp mandates at the court gate, for annoying the pallace with filth or making water, if they set their names to the writing, will shortly make vp the number of the learned men of our time, and be as famous as the rest. For my part, I do challenge no praise of learning to my selfe, yet haue I worne a gowne in the university, and so hath *caret tempus non habet moribus*; but this I dare presume, that, if any Mecenas binde mee to him by his bountie, or extend some round liberalitie to mee worth the speaking of, I will doe him as much honour as any poet of my beardlesse yeares shall in England. Not that I am so confident what I can doe, but that I attribute so much to my thankfull mind aboue others, which I am perswaded would enable me to worke miracles.

On the contrary side, if I bee euill intreated, or sent

away with a flea in mine eare, let him looke that I will rayle on him soundly; not for an houre or a day, whiles the injury is fresh in my memory, but in some elaborate, polished poem, which I will leauue to the world when I am dead, to be a liuing image to all ages of his beggerly parsimony and ignoble illiberalitie: and let him not (what soeuer he be) measure the weight of my words by this booke, where I write *quicquid in buccam venerit*, as fast as my hand can trot, but I haue tearmes (if I be vext) laid in steepe in *aqua fortis* and gunpowder, that shall rattle through the skyes, and make an earthquake in a pesant's eares. Put case (since I am not yet out of the theame of Wrath) that some tyred jade belonging to the presse, whome I neuer wronged in my life, hath named me expressly in print (as I will not doo him), and accused me of want of learning, vpbraiding me for reuiuing, in an epistle of mine, the reuerend memorie of Sir Thomas Moore, Sir John Cheeke, Doctor Watson, Doctor Haddon, Doctor Carre, Master Ascham, as if they were no meate but for his masterships mouth, or none but some such, as the sonne of a ropemaker, were worthie to mention them. To shewe how I can rayle, thus would I begin to rayle on him:—Thou that hadst thy hood turned ouer thy eares, when thou wert a bachelour, for abusing of Aristotle, and setting him vpon the schoole gates, painted with asses eares on his head, is it anie discredit for me, thou great baboune, thou pigmee braggart, thou pampheter of nothing but *pæans*, to bee censured by thee, that hast scorned the prince of philosophers: thou, that in thy dialogues soldst hunnie for a halfe penie, and the choysest writers extant for cues a peece; that cam'st to the logick schooles when thou wert a fresh-man, and wrist phrases; off with thy gowne, and vntrusse, for I meane to lash thee mightily. Thou hast a brother, hast thou not, student in almanackes?

I would tell  
you in what  
booke it is,  
but I am  
afrayde it  
would make  
hys booke sell  
in hys latter  
dayes, which  
hetherto hath  
lien dead, &  
bin a great  
losse to the  
printer.

Looke at the  
chandler's  
shop, or at the  
flaxwives  
stall, if you  
see no tow  
nor sope  
wrapt vp in  
the title page  
of such a  
pamphlet as  
Incerti autho-  
ris, Io Pæan.

Go too ! Ile stand to it, he fathered one of thy bastards, (a booke I meane) which, being of thy begetting, was set forth vnder his name.

Gentlemen, I am sure you haue heard of a ridiculous asse, that manie yeares since sold lyes by the great, & wrote an absurd astrologicall discourse of the terrible coniunction of Saturne and Jupiter, wherein (as if hee had latelie cast the heauen's water, or been at the anatomizing of the skies intrayles in Surgeons' Hall) hee prophecieth of such strang wonders to ensue from starres distemperature, & the vniuersal adultry of planets, as none but he, that is bawd to those celestiall bodies, could euer descry. What expectation there was of it both in towne and country, the amazement of those times may testifie; and the rather, because he pawned his credit vpon it in these expresse tearmes :

Which at home, iwis, was worth a dozen of halters, at least, for, if I be not deceiv'd, his father was a rope-maker.

" If these things fall not out in euerie point as I haue wrote, let mee for euer hereafter loose the credit of my astronomie." Wel, so it happend, that he happend not to be a man of his word : his astronomie broke his day with his creditors, and Saturne and Jupiter proued honester men than all the worlde tooke them for. Whereupon the poore prognosticator was readie to runne himselfe through with his Jacob's staffe, & cast himselfe headlong from the top of a globe, (as a mountaine) and breake his necke. The whole uniuersitie hyst at him, Tarlton at the Theater made iests of him, and Elderton consumed his ale-crammed nose to nothing in bearbayting him with whole bundells of ballets. Would you, in likely reason, gesse it were possible for anie shameswoln toad to haue the spet-proofe face to outlive this disgrace ? It is, deare brethren, *Vivit, imo, vivit* ; and, which is more, he is a vicar.

Poor slauie ! I pitie thee that thou hadst no more grace but to come in my way. Why could not you haue sate quyet at home, and writ catechisms, but you must be

comparing me to Martin, and exclayme against me for reckning vp the 'high schollers of worthie memorie ? *Jupiter ingenii præbet sua numina vatum*, saith Ouid ; *seque celebrari quolibet ore sinit*. Which, if it be so, I hope I am *aliquis*, & those men, *quos honoris causa nominari*, are not greater than gods. Methinks, I see thee stand quiuering and quaking, and euen now lift vp thy hands to heauen, as thanking God my choler is somewhat asswaged ; but thou art deceiued, for howeuer I let fall my stile a little, to talk in reason with thee that hast none, I doo not meane to let thee scape so.

Thou hast wronged one for my sake, (whom for the name I must loue) T. N., the Master Butler of Pembroke Hall, a farre better scholler than thy selfe, (in my judgement) and one that sheweth more discretion and gouernment in setting vp a size of bread, than thou in all thy whole booke. Why man, thinke no scorne of him, for he hath helde thee vp a hundred times, whiles the Deane hath giuen thee correction, and thou hast capd and kneed him (when thou wert hungry) for a chipping. But thats nothing, for, hadst thou neuer beene beholding to him, nor holden vp by him, he hath a beard that is a better gentleman than all thy whole body, and a graue countenance, like Cato, able to make thee run out of thy wits for feare, if he looke sternly vpon thee. I haue reade ouer thy sheepish discourse of the Lambe of God and his Enemies, and entreated my patience to bee good to thee whilst I read it ; but for all that I could doe with myselfe, (as I am sure I may doe as much as an other man) I could not refrayne, but bequeath it to the priuie, leafe by leafe as I read it, it was so vgly, dorbellicall, and lamish. Monstrous, monstrous, and palpable ; not to be spoken of in a christian congregation ! thou hast skumed ouer the schoole men, and of the froth of theyr folly made a dish of diuinitie brewesse, which the

His owne  
words.

dogges will not eate. If the printer haue any great dealings with thee, he were best get a priuiledge be-times, *ad imprimendum solum*, forbidding all other to sell waste paper but himselfe, or else he will be in a wo-full taking. The Lambe of God make thee a wiser bell-weather than thou art, for else, I doubt thou wilt be driuen to leaue all, and fall to thy father's occupation, which is, to goe and make a rope to hange thy selfe. *Neque enim lex aequior ulla est, quam necis artifices arte perire sua*: and so I leaue thee till a better opportunitie, to be tormented world without end of our poets and writers about London, whom thou hast called pi-perly make-playes and make-bates: not doubting but he also whom thou tearmest the vayn Pap-hatchet, will haue a flurt at thee one day, all ioynlytly driuing thee to this issue, that thou shalt bee constrained to goe to the chiefe beame of thy benefice, and there, beginning a lamentable speech with *cur scripsi, cur perii*, ende with *pravum prava decent, juvat inconcessa voluptus*, and with a trice trusse vp thy life in the string of thy sancebell. So be it, pray penne, inke, and paper, on their knees, that they may not be troubled with thee any more.

*Redeo ad vos, mei auditores.* Haue I not a indifferent pretty veine in spurgalling an asse? if you knew how extemporall it were at this instant, and with what haste it is writ, you would say so. But I would not haue you thinke, that all this that is set downe heere is in good earnest, for then you goe by S. Gyles the wrong way to Westminster; but onely to shew how for a neede I could rayle, if I were throughly fyred. So hoe! Honiger Hammon: where are you all this while, I cannot bee acquainted with you? Tell me, what doe you thinke of the case? am I subject to the sinne of wrath I write against, or no, in whetting my penne on this block? I know you would faine haue it so, but it shal not choose

but be otherwise for this once. Come on : let vs turne ouer a new leafe, and heare what Gluttony can say for her selfe ; for Wrath hath spet his poyson, and full platters doe well after extreame purging.

The Romayne emperours that succeeded Augustus were exceedingly giuen to this horrible vice, whereof some of them would feede on nothing but the tongues of phesants and nightingales ; other would spend as much at one banquet, as a king's reuenues came to in a yeare : whose excesse I would decypher at large, but that a new Laureate hath sau'd me the labor ; who, for a man that standes vpon paines and not wit, hath perform'd as much, as anie storie dresser may doe, that sets a new English nap on an olde Latine apothegs. It is enough for me to licke dishes here at home, though I feed not mine eyes at anie of the Romane feasts. Much good doo it you, Master Dives, here in London : for you are he my pen meanes to dine withall. *Miserere mei*, what a fat churle it is ! Why, he hath a belly as big as the round church in Cambridge, a face as huge as the whole bodie of a base viall, and legs that, if they were hollow, a man might keepe a mill in either of them. *Experto crede Roberto*, there is no mast like a merchaunt's table. *Bond fide*, it is a great misture, that we have not men swine as well as beasts, for then we should haue porke that hath no more bones than a pudding, and a side of bacon that you might lay vnder your head in stead of a bolster.

It is not for nothing that other countreyes, whome wee vpbrayd with drunkennesse, call vs bursten-bellyed gluttons ; for we make our greedie paunches powdring tubs of beefe, and eate more meate at one meale, than the Spaniard or Italian in a month. Good thriftie men, they drawe out a dinner with sallets, like a Swart-rutter's sute, and make Madona Nature their best caterer. We must

The com-  
playnt of  
gluttonie.

Nature in England is but playne dame, but in Spayne and Italy(because they haue more use of her than we) she is dubbed a lady.

haue our tables furnisht like poultrers stalls, or as though we were to victuall Noah's arke againe, (wherein there was all sorts of liuing creatures that euer were) or els the good-wife wil not open her mouth to bid one welcome. A stranger that should come to one of our magnificoes houses, when dinner were set on the board, and he not yet set, would thinke the goodman of the house were a haberdasher of wylde-fowle, or a merchant venturer of daintie meate, that sells commodities of good cheere by the great, and hath factors in *Arabia, Turkey, Egipt, and Barbarie*, to prouide him of straunge byrdes, *China* mustard, and odde patternes to make custards by.

Lord ! what a coyle haue we, this course and that course, remouing this dish higher, setting another lower, and taking away the third. A generall might in lesse space remoue his camp, than they stand disposing of their gluttonie. And whereto tends all this gurmandise, but to giue sleepe grosse humors to feede on, to corrupt the braine, and make it vnapt and vnweldie for anie thing ?

The Romane Censors, if they lighted vpon a fat cor-pulent man, they straight tooke away his horse, and constrainyd him to goe a foote, posituely concluding his carkasse was so puft up with gluttonie or idlenes. If wee had such horse-takers amongst vs, and that surfet-swolne churles, who now ride on their foot-cloathes, might bee constrainyd to carrie their flesh budgets from place to place on foote, the price of veluet and cloath would fall with their bellies, and the Gentle Craft (*alias* the red herrings kinsmen) get more, and drinke lesse. *Plenus venter nil agit libenter, et plures gula occidit quam gladius.* It is as desperate a peece of seruice to sleep vpon a full stomacke, as it is to serue in face of the bullet : a man is but his breath, and that may as wel be stopt by putting too much in his mouth at once, as

running on the mouth of the cannon. That is verified of vs, which Horace writes of an outragious cater in his time. *Quicquid quæsierat ventri donabat avaro*, whatsoeuer he could rap or rend, he confiscated to his couetous gut. Nay, we are such flesh-eating Saracens, that chast fish may not content us, but we delight in the murder of innocent mutton, in the vnpluming of pulterie, and quartering of calves and oxen. It is horrible and detestable, no Godly fishmonger that can digest it. Report (which our moderners clepe flundring fame) puts mee in memorie of a notable jest I heard long agoe of Doctor Watson, verie conducible to the reproofe of these fleshly-minded Belials. He being at supper, on a fasting or fish-night at least, with a great number of his friends and acquaintance, there chanced to be in the companie an outlandish doctor, who, when all other fell to such victuals (agreeing to the time) as were before them, he ouerslipt them ; and there being one ioynt of flesh on the table for such as had meate stomackes, fell freshly to it. After that hunger (halfe conquered) had restored him to the vse of his speach, for his excuse he said to his friend that brought him thether, *profectò, domine, ego sum malissimus piscator*, meaning by *piscator*, a fisherman ; (which is a libertie, as also *malissimus*, that outlandish men in their familiar talke doo challenge, at least vse, aboue vs). *At tu es bonissimus carnifex*, quoth Doctor Watson, retorting very merrily his owne licentious figures vpon him. So of vs it may be said, we are *malissimi piscatores*, but *bonissimi carnifices*. I would English the jest, for the edification of the temporalitie, but that it is not so good in English as in Latine : and though it were as good, it would not conuert clubs and clouted shoone from the flesh-pots of *Egipt*, to the provant of the Low-countreyes ; they had rather (with the seruing-man) put vp a supplication to the Parlia-

A rare wittie  
iest of Doctor  
Watson's.

Or rather  
belly-allis, be-  
cause all theyr  
mind is on  
theyr belly.

ment House, that they might haue a yard of pudding for a penie, than desire (with the baker) there might bee three ounces of bread sold for a halfe penie.

The moderation of Fryer Alphonso, King Phillip's confessor.

Alphonsus, King Philip's confessor, that came ouer with him to *England*, was such a moderate man in his dyet, that he would feede but once a day, and at that time hee would feed so slenderly and sparingly, as scarce serued to keep life and soule together. One night, impertunatly inuited to a solempne banquet, for fashion sake he sate downe among the rest, but by no entreatie could be drawne to eate any thing : at length, frute being set on the boord, he reacht an apple out of the dish, and put it in his pocket, which one marking that sat right ouer against him, askt him, *domine, cur es sollicitus in crastinum?* Sir, why are you careful for the morrowe? Whereto he answered most soberly, *Imo hoc facio, mi amice, ut ne sim sollicitus in crastinum.* No; I doo it, my friend, that I may not be carefull for the morrow: as though his appetite were a whole day contented with so little as an apple, and that it were enough to pay the morrowes tribute to nature.

The strange alteration of the Countie Moline's, the Prince of Parma's companion.

Rare, and worthie to be registered to all posterities, is the Countie Molynes (sometime the Prince of Parmaes companion) altered course of life ; who, being a man that liued in as great pompe and delicacie as was possible for a man to doo, and one that wanted nothing but a kingdome that his hart could desire, upon a day entring into a deepe melancholy by himselfe, he fell into a discoursiue consideration what this world was, how vain and transitorie the pleasures thereof, and how manie times he had offended God by surfeiting, gluttonie, drunkennes, pride, whoredome, and such like, and how hard it was for him, that liu'd in that prosperitie that he did, not to bee entangled with those pleasures : whereupon he presently resolu'd, twixt God and his owne conscience, to forsake

it and all his allurements, and betake him to the seuerest forme of life vsed in their State. And with that cald all his souldiers and acquaintance together, and, making knownen his intent vnto them, he distributed his lyuing and possessions (which were infinite) amongst the poorest of them ; and hauing not left himselfe the worth of one farthing vnder heauen, betooke him to the most beggerlie new erected order of the Frier Capuchines. Their institution is, that they shall possesse nothing whatsoeuer of their owne more than the cloathes on their backes, continually to goe barefoote, weare haire shirts, and lye vpon the hard boords, winter and summer time : they must haue no meat, nor ask any but what is giuen them voluntarily, nor must they lay vp any from meale to meale, but giue it to the poore, or els it is a great peccatvie. In this seuere humilitie lyves this deuout Countie, and hath done this foure yeare, submitting himselfe to al the base drudgerie of the house, as fetching water, making cleane the rest of their chambers, insomuch as he is the junior of the order. O ! what a notable rebuke were his honourable lowlines to succeeding pride, if this prostrate spirit of his were not the seruaunt of superstition, or hee misspent not his good workes on a wrong faith.

Let but our English belly-gods punish their pursie bodies with this strict penaunce, and professe the Capuchinisme but one month, and Ile be their pledge, they shall not grow so like dry fats as they doo. O ! it will make them jolly long-winded, to trot vp and downe the dotor staires, and the water-tankard will keepe vnder the insurrection of their shoulders, the haire shirt will chase whoredome out of their boanes, and the hard lodging on the boards take their flesh downe a button hole lower.

But if they might be induced to distribute all their

goods amongst the poore, it were to be hoped Saint Peter would let them dwell in the suburbes of heauen; whereas, otherwise, they must keepe aloofe at Pancredge, and not come neere the liberties by ffe leagues and aboue. It is your doing (Diotrepes Diuell) that these stall-fed cormorants to damnation must bung vp all the wealth of the land in their snap-haunce bags, and poore schollers and souldiers wander in backe lanes, and the out-shiftes of the citie, with neuer a rag to their backes; but our trust is that, by some intemperance or other, you will tourne vp their heeles, one of these yeares, together, and prouide them of such vnthriffts to their heyres, as shall spend in one weeke amongst good fellowes what they got by extortiōn and oppression all their life-time.

The com-  
plaint of  
drunkennes.

Drinking  
super nagu-  
lum, a devise  
of drinking  
new come out  
of Fraunce;  
which is, after  
a man hath  
turnde up the  
bottom of the  
cup, to drop it  
on hys nayle,  
and make a  
pearl with  
that is left;  
which, if it  
slide, and he  
cannot mak  
stand on, by  
reason thers  
too much, he  
must drinke  
againe for his  
penance.

From gluttonie in meates, let me descend to superfluitie in drink, a sinne that, euer since we haue mixt our selues with the Low Countries, is counted honourable, but before we knew their lingring warres, was held in the highest degree of hatred that might be. Then, if wee had seene a man goe wallowing in the streetes, or lyne sleeping vnder the boord, wee would haue spet at him as a toade, and cald him foule, drunken swine, and warned all our friends out of his company: now, he is no body that cannot drinke *super nagulum*, carouse the hunters' hoope, quaffe *vpsey freeze crosse*, with leapes gloues, mumpes, frolickes, and a thousand such dominering inuentions. He is reputed a pesaunt and a boore that will not take his licour profoundly; and you shall heare a caualier of the first feather, a princockes that was but a page the other day in the court, and now is all to be frenchified in his sooldiours suite, stand vpon termes with "God's wounds! you dishonour me, sir, you doo me the disgrace, if you do not pledge me as much as I drunke to you;" and, in the midste of his cups, stand vaunting his manhood, beginning euerie sentence with

"When I first bore armes," when he neuer bare anie thing but his lord's rapier after him in his life. If he haue been ouer, and visited a towne of garrison, as a trauailer or passenger, he hath as great experience as the greatest commander and chiefe leader in *England*. A mightie deformier of men's manners and features is this vnnecessary vice of all other. Let him bee indued with neuer so manie vertues, and haue as much goodly proportion and fauour, as Nature can bestow vpon a man, yet if hee be thirstie after his owne destruction, and hath no ioy nor comfort, but when he is drowning his soule in a gallon pot, that one beastly imperfection wil vtterly obscure all that is commendable in him, and all his goode qualities sinke like lead downe to the bottome of his carrowing cups, where they will lye, like lees and dregges, dead and vnregarded of any man.

Clim of the Clough, thou that vsest to drinke nothing but scalding lead and sulphur in hell, thou art not so greedie of thy night geare. O ! but thou hast a foule swallow if it come once to the carrousing of humane blood ; but thatts but sildom, once in seauen yeare, when theres a great execution, otherwise thou art tyde at rack and manger, and drinkst nothing but the *aqua vitae* of vengeance all thy life time. The prouerbe giues it foorth thou art a knaue, and therefore I haue more hope thou art some manner of a good fellowe : let mee intreate thee (since thou hast other iniquities inough to circumuent vs withall) to wype this sinne out of the catalogue of thy subtleties : helpe to blast the vynes, that they may beare no more grapes, and sowre the wines in the cellars and merchants' storehouses, that our countrey-men maye not pissee out all their wit and thrift against the walls. King Edgar, because his subiects should not offend in swilling, and bibbing, as they did, caused certaine iron cups to be chayned to everie fountaine and wells

King Edgar's  
ordinance  
against drink-  
ing.

The wonderfull abstinenesse of the Marquesse of Pisana, yet living.

side, and at everie vintner's doore, with yron pins in them, to stint euery man how much he should drinke ; and he that went beyond one of those pins forfeyted a pennie for everie draught. And, if stories were well searcht, I belieue hoopes in quart pots were inuented to that ende, that eurie man should take his hooke, and no more. I haue heard it iustified for a truth by great personages, that the olde Marquesse of Pisana (who yet liues) drinkes not once in seauen yeare ; and I haue read of one Andron of *Argos*, that was so sildome thirstie, that hee traualied ouer the hot, burning sands of Lybia, and neuer drank. Then, why should our colde clyme bring forth such fierie throats ? Are we more thirstie than *Spaine* and *Italy*, where the sunnes force is doubled ? The *Germaines* and Lowe Dutch, methinkes, should bee continually kept moyst with the foggie ayre and stincking mystes that aryse out of theyr fennie soyle ; but as their countrey is ouer-flowed with water, so are their heads alwayes ouer-flowen with wine, and in their bellyes they haue standing quag-myres and bogs of English beere.

One of their breedē it was that writ the booke, *De Arte Bibendi*, a worshipfull treatise, fitte for none but Silenus and his asse to set forth : besides that volume, wee haue generall rules and iniunctions, as good as printed precepts, or statutes set downe by acte of Parliament, that goe from drunkard to drunkard ; as still to keepe your first man, not to leauē anie flockes in the bottome of the cup, to knock the glasse on your thumbe when you haue done, to haue some shooing horne to pul on your wine, as a rasher of the coles, or a redde herring, to stirre it about with a candle's ende to make it taste better, and not to hold your peace whiles the pot is stirring.

Nor haue we one or two kinde of drunkards onely,

The private lawes amongst drunkards.

but eight kindes. The first is ape drunke ; and he leapes, and singes, and hollowes, and daunceth for the heauens : the second is lion drunke ; and he flings the pots about the house, calls his hostesse whore, breakes the glasse windowes with his dagger, and is apt to quarrell with anie man that speaks to him : the third is swyne drunke ; heauie, lumpish, and sleepie, and cries for a little more drinke, and a fewe more cloathes : the fourth is sheepe drunke ; wise in his own conceipt, when he cannot bring foorth a right word : the fifth is mawdlen drunke ; when a fellowe will weepe for kindnes in the midst of his ale, and kisse you, saying, “ By God, captaine, I loue thee. Goe thy wayes ; thou dost not thinke so often of me as I doo of thee ; I would (if it pleased God) I could not loue thee so well as I doo ;” and then he puts his finger in his eye, and cryes : the sixt is Martin drunke ; when a man is drunke, and drinkes himselfe sober ere he stirre : the seventh is goate drunke ; when, in his drunkennes, he hath no minde but on lecherie : the eighth is fox drunke—when he is craftie drunke, as manie of the Dutchmen bee, that will neuer bargaine but when they are drunke. All these species, and more, haue I seen practised in one companie at one sitting, when I haue been permitted to remayne sober amongst them, onely to note their seuerall humours. Hee that plyes anie one of them harde, it will make him to write admyrable verses, and to haue a deepe casting head, though hee were neuer so verye a dunce before.

Gentlemen, all you that will not haue your braynes twice sodden, or your flesh rotten with the dropsie, that loue not to goe in greasie dublets, stockings out at the heelles, and weare ale-house daggers at your backes, forswearre this slavering brauerie, that will make you haue stinking breathes, and your bodies smell like brewers’

The eight  
kindes of  
drunkennes.

The discom-  
modities of  
drunkennes.

aprons: rather keepe a snuffe in the bottome of the glasse to light you to bed withall, than leauue neuer an eye in your head to lead you over the threshold. It will bring you, in your olde age, to be companions with none but porters and car-men; to talke out of a cage, rayling as dronken men are wont, a hundred boyes wondering about them; and to dye sodainely, as Fol Long, the fencer, did, drinking *aqua vitae*. From which (as all the rest) good Lord deliuer Pierce Penilesse !

The complaint of Sloth.

The nurse of this enormitie (as of all euills) is Idlenes, or Sloth, which, hauing no painful prouince to set him selfe a worke, runnes headlong, with the raynes in his own hand, into all lasciuiousnesse and sensualitie that maye bee. Men, when they are idle, and know not what to do, saith one, " Let vs goe to the stilliard, and drinke Rhenish wine." " Nay, if a man knew where a good whorehouse were," saith another, " it were somewhat like." " Nay," saith the third, " let vs goe to a dicing-house or a bowling-alley, and there we shall haue some sport for our money." To one of these three (at hand, quoth pick purse) your euill angelship, Master Mani-headed Beast, conducts them, *ubi quid agitur* — betwixt you and their soules be it, for I am no drawer, box-keeper, or pandar, to bee priuie to their sports. If I were to paint Sloth, (as I am not seene in the sweetnings) by Saint John the Euangelist, I sweare I would draw it like a stationer that I knowe, with his thumb vnder his girdle, who, if a man come to his stalle to aske him for a booke, neuer stirres his head, or looks vpon him, but stands stone still, and speakes not a word, only with his little finger poynts backwards to his boy, who must be his interpreter; and so all the day, gaping like a dumbe image, he sits without motion, except at such times as hee goes to dinner or supper, for then he is as Videlicet, be- quicke as other three, eating sixe times euerie day. If

I would raunge abroad, and looke in at sluggards' key-holes, I should finde a number lying a bed to saue charges of ordinaries ; and in winter, when they want firing, loosing halfe a week's commons together, to keepe them warme in the linnen. And, hold you content, this summer an vnder-meale of an afternoone long doth not amisse to exercise the eyes withall. Fat men and farmers' sonnes, that sweate much with eating hard cheese, and drinking olde wine, must have some more ease than yong boyes, that take their pleasure all day running vp and downe.

Setting jesting aside, I hold it a great disputable question, which is a more euill man, of him that is an idle glutton at home, or a retchlesse vnthrift abroad ? The glutton at home doth nothing but engender diseases, pamper his flesh vnto lust, and is good for none but his owne gut : the vnthrift a broad exerciseth his bodie at dauncing schoole, fence schoole, tennis, and all such recreations ; the vintners, the victuallers, the dicing-houses, and who not, get by him. Suppose he lose a little now and then at play, it teacheth him wit ; and how should a man know to eschue vices, if his owne experience did not acquaint him with their inconueniences ? *Omne ignotum pro magnifico est* : that villanie we have made no assayes in, we admyre. Besides, my vagrant reueller haunts playes, and sharpens his wits with frequenting the companie of poets : he emboldens his blushing face by courting faire women on the sodaine, and lookes into all estates by conuersing with them in publique places. Now, tell me whether of the two, the heauie headed gluttonous house dove, or this liuely, wanton, yong gallant, is like to proue the wiser man, and better member in the common wealth ? If my youth might not be thought partiall, the fine qualified gentleman, although vnstaide, should carie it clean away from the lazie clownish droane.

fore he come  
out of his bed,  
then a set  
breakfast,  
then dinner,  
then after  
noones  
nunchlings,  
a supper, and  
a rere supper.

Which is bet-  
ter of the idle  
glutton, or  
vagrant un-  
thrift.

The effects of sloth.

Sloth in nobilitie, courtiers, schollers, or anie men, is the chiefest cause that brings them in contempt. For, as industrie and vnfatigable toyle raiseth meane persons from obscure houses to high throanes of authoritie, so sloth, and sluggish securitie, causeth proud lordes to tumble from the towers of their starrie discents, and bee trod vnder foote of euerie inferior Besonian. Is it the lofty treading of a galliard, or fine grace in telling of a loue tale amongst ladies, can make a man reuerenst of the multitude? No; they care not for the false glistring of gay garments, or insinuating curtesie of a carpet peere; but they delight to see him shine in armour, and oppose himselfe to honourable daunger, to participate a voluntarie penny with his souldiours, and relieuue part of theyr want out of his own purse. That is the course he that will be popular must take; which, if hee neglect, and sit dallying at home, nor will be awakt by anie indignities out of his loue-dreame, but suffer euery vpstart groome to defie him, set him at naught, and shake him by the beard vnreuenged, let him straight take orders, and bee a church-man, and then his patience may passe for a vertue; but otherwise to be suspected of cowardise, and not car'd for of anie.

The means to avoid slouth.

The onely enemie to sloth is contention and emulation; as to propose one man to my selfe, that is the onely myrrour of our age, and strive to out goe him in vertue. But this strife must be so tempered, that we fal not from the eagernes of praise, to the enuying of their persons; for, then, we leauie running to the goale of glorie, to spurne at a stone that lyes in our way; and so bid Atlante, in the midst of her course, stoup to take vp the golden apple her enemie scattered in her way, and was out-runne by Hippomenes. The contrarie to this contention, and emulation, is securitie, peace, quiet, tranquillitie; when we haue no aduersarie to pry into our actions, no malicious eye, whose pursuing

our priuate behauour might make vs more vigilant ouer our imperfections than otherwise we would be.

That state or kingdome that is in league with all the world, and hath no forreigne sword to vexe it, is not halfe so strong or confirmed to endure, as that which liues euerie houre in feare of inuasion. There is a certaine wast of the people for whom there is no vse but warre; and these men must haue some employmēt still to cut them off. *Nam si foras hostem non habent, domi invenient.* If they haue no seruice abroad, they will make mutinies at home. Or if the affaires of the state be such, as cannot exhale all these corrupt excrements, it is verie expedient they have some lyght toyes to busie their heads withall, to cast before them as bones to gnaw vpon, which may keepe them from hauing leasure to intermeddle with higher matters.

To this effect the policie of playes is verie necessarie, however some shallow-brayned censurers (not the deepest serchers into the secrets of gouernment) mightily op-pugne them. For whereas the after noone being the idlest time of the day, wherein men, that are their owne masters, (as gentlemen of the court, the innes of the court, and the number of captaines and souldiers about *London*) doo wholly bestow themselues vpon pleasure, and that pleasure they deuide (how vertuously it skills not) either into gameing, following of harlots, drinking, or seeing a play, is it not then better (since of foure extreames all the world cannot keepe them but they will choose one) that they should betake them to the least, which is playes? Nay, what if I proue playes to be no extreame, but a rare exercise of vertue? First, for the subject of them (for the most part) it is borrowed out of our English chronicles, wherein our forefathers valiant actes (that haue lyne long buried in rustie brass and worm-eaten booke) are reuiued, and they themselves raysed

The defence  
of playes.

from the graue of obliuion, and brought to pleade their aged honours in open presence ; than which, what can bee a sharper reproofe to these degenerate effeminate dayes of ours ?

How would it haue joy'd braue Talbot (the terror of the French) to thinke that after he had lyne two hundred yeare in his tomb, he should triumph againe on the stage, and haue his bones new embalmed with the teares of ten thousand spectators at least, (at seuerall times) who, in the tragedian that represents his person, imagine they behold him fresh bleeding ?

I will defend it against anie collian, or club-fisted usurer of them all, there is no immortalitie can be giuen a man on earth like vnto playes. What talke I to them of immoralitie, that are the onely underminers of honour, & doo enuie anie man that is not sprung vp by base brokerye like themselues ? They care not if all the auncient houses were rooted out, so that, like the burgo-masters of the Low Countries, they might share the gouernment amongst them as States, & be quarter-masters of our monarchy. Al arts to them are vanitie : and, if you tell them what a glorious thing it is to haue Henry the Fifth represented on the stage, leading the French king prisoner, and forcing both him and the Dolphin sweare fealtie. I, but (will they say) what doo we get by it ? respecting neither the right of fame that is due to true nobilitie deceased, nor what hopes of eternitie are to be proposed to aduenturous minds, to encourage them forward, but onely their execrable lucre, and filthie vnquenchable auarice.

They know when they are dead they shall not bee brought vpon thee stage for any goodnes, but in a merriment of the usurer and the diuell, or buying armes of the herald, who giues them the lyon, without tongue tayle or tallents, because his master whom he must serue is a

townsman, and a man of peace, and must not keepe anie  
quarrelling beasts to annoy his honest neighbours.

In playes, all coosonages, all cunning drifts ouerguylded with outward holinesse, all stratagems of warre, all the canker-wormes that breed on the rust of peace, are

The use of  
playes.

most liuely anotomiz'd : they shew the ill successe of treason, the fall of hastie climbers, the wretched ende of usurpers, the miserie of ciuill dissencion, & howe iust God is euermore in punishing of murther. And to proue euerie one of these allegations, could I propound the circumstancies of this play and that play, if I meant to handle this theame other wise than *obiter*. What should I say more ? they are sower pills of reprehension, wrapt vp in sweete words. Whereas some petitioners to the Counsaile against them obiect, they corrupt the youth of the cittie, and with-drawe prentises from their worke, they heartily wish they might bee troubled with none of their youth nor their prentises ; for some of them (I meane the ruder handicraftes seruaunts) neuer come abroad, but they are in danger of vndooing : and, as for corrupting them when they come, that's false ; for no playe they haue encourageth anie man to tumults or rebellion, but layes before such the halter and the gallowes, or prayseth or approoueth pride, lust, whoredome, prodigalitie, or drunckenes, but beates them downe vtterly. As for the hindrance of trades and traders of the citie by them, that is an article foysted in by the vintners, alewiues, and victuallers, who surmise, if there were no playes, they should haue all the companie that resort to them, lye bowzing and beere-bathing in their houses euerie after-noone. Nor so, nor so, good brother bottle-ale ; for there are other places beside, where money can bestow it selfe : the signe of the smocke will wype your mouth clean, and yet I haue heard ye haue made her a tenuant to your tap-houses. But what shall he doo that

The confuta-  
tion of citti-  
zens obiec-  
tions against  
playes.

hath spent himselfe? where shall he haunt? Faith, when dice, lust, and drunkennes, and all haue dealt vpon him, if there be neuer a playe for him to goe to for his peny, he sits melancholy in his chamber, deuising vpon felonie or treason, and how hee may best exalt himselfe by mis-chiefe.

In Augustus time (who was the patron of all witty sports) there hapned a great fray in Rome about a player, insomuch as all the citie was in an vproare: whereupon the emperor (after the broyle was somewhat ouer-blown) cald the player before him, and askt what was the reason that a man of his qualitie durst presume to make such a brawle about nothing. He smilingly replide, " It is good for thee, O Cæsar ! that the peoples heads are troubled with brawles and quarrels about vs and our light matters ; for otherwise they would looke into thee and thy matters." Read Lipsius or anie prophane or christian politician, and you shall finde him of

A players  
witty answer  
to Augustus.

A comparison  
twixt our  
players and  
the players  
beyond the  
sea.

this opinion. Our playes are not as the players beyond sea, a sort of squirting baudie comedians, that haue whores and common curtizans to play womens parts, and forbeare no immodest speach or vnchast action that may procure laughter ; but our sceane is more stately furnishit than euen it was in the time of Roscius, our representations honorable, and full of gallaunt resolution, not consisting, like theirs, of a pantaloun, a whore, and a zanie, but of emperours, kings, and princes, whose true tragedies (*Sophocleo cothurno*) they doo vaunt.

The due com-  
mendation of  
Ned Allen.

Not Roscius nor Esope, those tragedians admyredest before Christ was borne, could euer performe more in action than famous Ned Allen. I must accuse our poets of sloth and partialitie, that they will not boast in large impressions what worthie men (aboue all nations) *England* affoords. Other countreyes cannot haue a fidler breake a string but they will put it in print, and the olde Ro-

manes in the writings they published, thought scorne to vse anie but domestical examples of their owne home-bred actors, schollers, and champions, and them they would extoll to the third and fourth generation: coblers, tinkers, fencers, none escapt them, but they mingled them all on one gallimaufry of glory.

Heere I haue vsed a like methode, not of tying my selfe to mine owne countrey, but by insisting in the experience of our time; and, if I euer write any thing in Latine, (as I hope one day I shall) not a man of any desert heere amongst vs, but I will haue vp. Tarlton, Ned Allen, Knell, Bentley, shall be made knownen to *Fraunce, Spayne, and Italie*; and not a part that they surmounted in more than other, but I will there note and set downe, with the manner of their habites and at-tyre.

The child of sloth is lechery, which I haue plac't last in my order of handling: a sinne that is able to make a man wicked that should describe it; for it hath more

The seventh  
and last com-  
playnt, of  
lechery.

starting-holes than a siue hath holes, more clyents than *Westminster Hall*, more diseases than *Newgate*. Call a leete at *Byshopsgate*, and examine how euery second house in *Shorditch* is mayntayned: make a priuie search in *Southwarke*, and tell mee how many shee-inmates you finde. Nay, goe where you will in the suburbes, and bring me two virgines that haue vowed chastity, and Ile build a nunnery.

*Westminster, Westminster!* much maydenhead hast thou to answe for at the day of judgement. Thou hadst a sanctuary in thee once, but hast few saints left in thee now. Surgeons and appothecaries, you know what I speake is true; for you liue (like summers) vpon the sinnes of the people, tell me is there any place so lewde as this lady *London*? Not a wench sooner creepes out of the shell, but she is of the religion. Some wiues will

sow mandrake in theyr gardens, and crosse neighbour-hood with them is counted good-fellowship.

The court I dare not touch, but surely there (as in the heauens) bee many falling starres, and but one true Diana. *Consuetudo peccandi tollit sensum peccati.* Custome is a lawe, and lust holdes it for a lawe, to liue without lawe. Lais, that had so many poets to her louers, could not allwaies preserue her beautie with their prayses. Marble will weare away with much rayne, gold wil rust with moyst keeping, and the ritchest garments are subiect to time's moath-frets: Clitemnestra, that slewe her husband to enioy the adulterer *Ægistus*, and bathde herselfe in milke euery day to make her younge againe, had a time when shee was ashamed to viewe herselfe in a looking-glasse, and her boddie withered, her minde being greene. The people poynted at her for a murtherer, yonge children howted at her as a strumpet. Shame, misery, sicknesse, beggery, is the best end of vncleannessesse.

Lais, Cleopatra, Helen, if our clyme had any such; noble Lord Warden of the wenches & anglers, I commend them with the rest of our vncleane sisters in *Shordiitch*, the *Spittle*, *Southwarke*, *Westminster*, and *Turnbull Streete*, to the protection of your portership; hoping you will speedily carrie them to hell, there to keepe open house for all yonge deuills that come, and not let our ayre bee contaminated with theyr six penny damnation any longer.

Your diuelships

bounden execrator,

PIERCE PENNILESSE.

A Supplication caldst thou this? (quoth the knight of the post) it is the maddest Supplication that euer I saw; me thinkes thou hast handled all the seauen deadly sinnes in it, and spared none that exceeds his limits in any of them. It is well doone to practise thy wit, but (I beleue) our lord will cun thee little thanke for it.

The worse for mee (quoth I), if my destenie be such, to lose my labour euerywhere; but I meane to take my chance, be it good or bad. Well, hast thou any more that thou wouldest haue me to doe? (quoth hee) Onely one sute, (quoth I) which is this; that, sith opportunitie so conueniently serues, you would acquaint me with the state of your infernall regiment, and what that hell is, where your lord holdes his throne; whether a world like this, which spirites like outlawes doe enhabit, who, being banisht from heauen, as they are from their countrey, envy that any shall be more happie then they, and therefore seeke all meanes possible, that wit or arte may inuent, to make other men as wretched as themselues? or whether it be a place of horror, stench, and darknesse, where men see meat, but can get none, or are euer thirstie, and ready to swelt for drinke, yet haue not the power to tast the coole streames that runne hard at theyr feete? where (*permulata vicissitudine*) one ghost torments an other by turnes, and hee that all his life time was a great fornicator, hath all the diseases of lust continually hanging vpon him, and is constrainyd (the more to augment his misery) to haue congresse euery howre with haggis and olde witches; and he that was a great drunkard heere on earth, hath his penance assigne him, to carouse himselfe drunke with dishwash and vineger, and surfet foure times a day with sower ale and small beere? as so of the rest, as the vsurer to swallow moulten gold, the glutton to eate nothing but toades, and the murtherer to be still stabbd with dag-

gers, but neuer dye ? or whether (as some phantasticall refyners of phylosophy will needes perswade vs) hell is nothing but error, and that none but fooles and idiots and mechanicall men, that haue no learning, shall be damnd ? Of these doubts if you will resolute me, I shall thinke my self to haue profited greatly by your companie.

Hee, hearing me so inquisitiue in matters aboue humane capacitie, entertained my greedie humor with this answere. Poets and philosophers, that take a pride in inuenting new opinions, haue sought to renoume their wits by hunting after strange conceits of heauen and hell ; all generally agreeing that such places there are, but how inhabited, by whom gouerned, or what betides them that are transported to the one or the other, not two of them iumpe in one tale. We, that to our terror and grieve doo knowe their dotage by our sufferings, rejoyce to thinke how these sillie flyes play with the fire that must burne them.

But leauing them to the laborynth of their fond curiositie, shall I tell thee in a word what hell is ? It is a place where the soules of vntemperate men, and ill liuers of al sorts, are detayned and imprisoned till the generall resurrection, kept and possessed chiefly by spirites, who lye like souldiours in garison, ready to be sent about any seruice into the world, when soeuer Lucifer, theyr liefetnaunt generall, pleaseth. For the scituacion of it, in respect of heauen, I can no better compare it than to Callis and Douer ; for, as a man standing vpon Callis sands may see men walking on Douer clyffes, so easely may you discerne heauen from the farthest part of hell, and behold the melodie and motions of the angels and spirites there resident in such perfect manner, as if you were amongst them ; which, how it worketh in the mindes and soules of them that haue no power to appre-

hend such felicitie, it is not for me to intimate, because it is preiudicall to our monarchie.

I would bee sorrie (quoth I) to importune you in anie matter of secrecie ; yet this I desire, if it might bee done without offence, that you would satisfie me in full sort, and according to truth, what the diuell is whom you serue, as also how he began, and how farre his power and authoritie extends ?

Persie, beleeue me, thou shryvest me verie neere in this latter demaund, which concerneth vs more deeply than the former, and may worke vs more damage than thou art aware of ; yet, in hope thou wilt conceale what I tell thee, I wil lay open our whole estate plainly and simply vnto thee as it is. But first I will begin with the opinions of former times, & so hasten forward to that, *manifeste verum* that thou seekest. Some men ther be that, building to much vpon reason, perswade themselues that there are no diuells at all, but that this word *demon* is such another morall of mischiefe, as the poet's Dame Fortune is of mishap ; for as vnder the fiction of this blinde goddesse we ayme at the folly of princes and great men in disposing of honors, that oftentimes preferre fooles and disgrace wise men, and alter their fauors in turning of an eye, as Fortune turns her wheele, so vnder the person of this olde Gnathonicall companion, called the Diuell, we shrowd all subteltie, masking vnder the name of simplicitie all painted holines devouring widowes houses, all gray-headed foxes clad in sheepe's garments ; so that the Diuell (as they make it) is onely a pestilent humour in a man, of pleasure, profit, or policie, that violently carries him away to vanitie, villanie, or monstrous hypocrisie. Under vanitie I comprehend not onely all vaine arts and studies whatsoeuer, but also dishonorable prodigality, vntemperate veneerie, and that hateful sinne of selfe-loue, which

is so common among vs : vnder villany I comprehend murder, treason, theft, counsage, cut-throat couetise, and such like : lastly, vnder hypocrisie, al Machiavilisme, puritanisme, & outward gloasing with a mans enemie, and protesting friendship to him I hate and meane to harme, all vnder-hand cloaking of bad actions with common-wealth pretences ; and, finally, all Italionate conveyances, as to kill a man and then mourne for him, *quasi vero* it was not by my consent, to be a slauie to him that hath iniur'd me, and kisse his feete for opportunities of reuenge, to be seuere in punishing offenders, that none might haue the benefite of such meanes but myselfe, to vse men for my purpose & then cast them off, to seeke his destruction that knowes my secrets ; and such as I haue employed in any murther or stratagem, to set them priuily together by the eares to stab each other mutually, for fear of bewraying me ; or, if that faile, to hire them to humor one another in such courses as may bring them both to the gallowes. These, and a thousand more such sleights, hath hypocrisie learned by trauailing strange countries. I will not say she puts them in practise here in England, although there be as many false brethren and crafty knaues here amongst vs as in any place ; witnes the poore miller of Cambridge, that, hauing no roome for his hen-loft but the testor of his bed, and it was not possible for anie hungrie poultrers to come there but they must stand vpon the one side of it, and so not steale them but with great hazard, had in one night notwithstanding (when hee and his wife were a snorting) all the whole progenie of their pulterie taken away, and neyther of them heard anie stirring : it is an odde tricke, but what of that, we must not stand vpon it, for wee haue grauer matters in hand than the stealing of hennes. Hypocrisie, I remember, was our text, which was one of the chiefe mor-

rall Diuels, our late doctours affirme to be most busie in these dayes ; and busie it is, in truth, more than anye bee that I knowe : now you talke of a bee, Ile tell you a tale of a battle-dore.

The beare on a time, beeing chife burgomaster of all the beastes vnder the lyon, gan thinke with himselfe how hee might surfeit in pleasure, or best husband his authoritie to enlardge his delight and contentment. With that hee beganne to prye and to smell through euerie corner of the forrest for praye, to haue a thousand imaginacions with himselfe what daynetie morsell he was master of, and yet had not tasted. Whole heards of sheepe had he deuoured, and was not satisfied; fat oxen, heyfers, swine, calves, and yong kiddes were his ordinarie vyands : he longed for horse-flesh, and went presently to a medowe, where a fat cammell was grazing, whom, fearing to encounter with force because he was a huge beast and well shod, he thought to betray vnder the colour of demaunding homage, hoping that, as he should stoop to doo him truage, he might seaze vpon his throate, and stifle him before he should be able to recouer himselfe from his false embrase. But therein hee was deceiued, for, comming vnto this stately beast with this imperious message, in stead of dooing homage vnto him, he lifted vp one of his hindmost heeles, and stroake him such a blowe on the forehead that he ouer-threwe him. Thereat not a little moou'd, and enrag'd that he should be so dishonored by his inferiour, as he thought, he consulted with the ape how he might be reuenged. The ape, abhorring him by nature because he ouer-lookt him so lordly, and was by so manie degrees greater than he was, aduised him to dig a pit with his pawes right in the way where this big boord gentleman should passe, that so stumbling and falling in, he might lightly skip on his backe, and bridle him, and then hee come and seaze on him at his pleasure. No

sooner was this perswaded than performed ; for enuy, that is neuer idle, could not sleep in his wrath, or ouer-slip the least opportunitie, till he had seene the confusion of his enemie. Alas, goodly creature, that thou mightst no longer liue ! What auaileth thy gentlenes, thy prowesse, or the plentiful pasture wherein thou wert fed, since malice triumphs ouer al thou commandest ? Well may the mule rise vp in armes, and the asse bray at the authors of thy death, yet shall their furie be fatall to them-selues, before it take holde on these traitours. What needeth more words ? the deuourer feedes on his captiue, and is gorged with bloud. But, as auarice and crueltie are euermore thirstie, so far'd it with this hungrie usurper ; for, having flesht his ambition with this treacherous conquest, he past along through a groue, where a heard of deare were a ranging ; whom, when he had stedfastly surveyed from the fattest to the leanest, hee singled out one of the fairest of the company, with whom he meant to close up his stomacke instead of cheese : but because the wood-men were euer stirring thereabout, and it was not possible for one of his coate to commit such outrage vndescried, and that, if he were espied, his life were in perill, though not with the lion, whose eyes he coulde blinde as he list, yet with the lesser sort of the brutish comminaltie, whom no flattery might pacifie. Therefore, he determined slylie and priuily to poyson the stremme where this jolly forrester wonted to drink ; and as he determined so he did : whereby it fell out that, when the sunne was ascended to his height, and all the nimble citizens of the wood betooke them to their laire, this youthfull lord of the lawnds, all faint and malcontent, (as prophecying his neere approaching mishap by his languishing) with a lazie, wallowing pace, strayed aside from the rest of his fellowship, and betooke him all carelessly to the corrupted fountaine that was

prepared for his funerall. Ah, woe is mee ! this poysone  
is pitiles. What need I say more, since you know it is  
death with whom it encounters ? And yet cannot all  
this expence of life set a period to insatiable murther ;  
but still it hath some anvyle to worke vpon, and ouer-  
casts all opposite prosperitie that may anie way shadow  
his glorie. Too long it were to reherse all the practises  
of this sauadge blood hunter ; how he assailed the uni-  
corne as he slept in his den, and tore the heart out of his  
breast ere he could awake ; how he made the lesser beasts  
lie in wayt one for the other, and the crocodyle to coape  
with the basiliske, that when they had enterchaungeably  
weakned each other, hee might come and insult ouer them  
both as he list. But these were lesser matters, which  
daily vse had worne out of men's mouths, and he himself  
had so customably practised, that often exercise had quite  
abrogated the opinion of sinne, and impudence throughly  
confirm'd an vndaunted defiance of vertue in his face.  
Yet new-fangled lust, that in time is wearie of welfare,  
and will be as soone cloyed with too much ease and de-  
licacie, as pouertie with labour and scarcitie, at length  
brought him out of loue with this greedie, bestiall hu-  
mour ; and now he affected a milder varietie in his diet :  
he had bethought him what a pleasant thing it was to  
eate nothing but honnie another while, and what great  
store of it there was in that countrey.

Now did he cast in his head, that if hee might bring  
the husbandmen of the soyle in opinion that they might  
buy honey cheaper than being at such charges in keeping  
of bees, or that those bees which they kept were most of  
them drones, & what should such idle drones doo with  
such stately hyues, or lye sucking at such precious honni-  
combs ; that if they were took away from them and  
distributed equally abroad, they would releue a great  
manie of painfull labourers that had need of them, and

would continually liue seruiceable at their commaund, if they might enioy such a benefite: nay more, let them giue waspes but onely the wax, and dispose of the honnie as they thinke good, and they shal humme and buzz a thousand times lowder than they, and haue the hiue fuller at the yeres end (with yong ones, I meane) than the bees are wont in ten yere.

To broach this deuice the foxe was addrest like a shepheards dogge, and promist to haue his pattent seald, to bee the king's poulterer for euer, if hee could bring it to passe. Faith, quoth he, and Ile put it in a venter, let it hap how it will. With that he grew in league with an old camelion, that could put on all shapes, and imitate anie colour, as occasion serued; and him he addrest, sometime like an ape to make sport, & then like a crocodile to weepe, sometime lyke a serpent to sting, and by and by like a spaniel to fawne; that with these sundrie formes, (applyde to mens variable humors) he might perswade the world he ment as he spake, and only intended their good when he thought nothing lesse. In this disguise these two deceiuers went vp and downe, and did much harme vnder the habite of simplicitie, making the poore silly swaines beleue they were cunning phisitions, and well seene in all cures, that they could heale anye malady, though neuer so daungerous, and restore a man to life that had been dead two dayes, only by breathing vpon him. Aboue all things they perswaded them, that the honny that their bees brought forth was poysonous and corrupt, by reason that those floures and hearbs, out of which it was gathered and exhaled, were subiect to the infection of euery spider and venomous canker, and not a loathsome toade (how detestable soeuer) but reposde himselfe vnder theyr shadow, and lay sucking at their rootes continually: wheras in other countries, no noisome or poisnous creature might liue, by reason of the

imputed goodnes of the soyle, or carefull diligence of the gardners aboue ours ; as, for example, Scotland, Denmarke, and some more pure parts of the 17 prouinces. These perswasions made the good honest husbandmen to pause, and mistrust their owne wits verie much in nourishing such dangerous animals ; but yet, I know not how, antiquitie and custome so ouer rulde their feare, that none would resolute to abandon them on the sodaine, til they saw a further inconuenience ; whereby my two cunning philosophers were driuen to studie Galen anew, and seeke splenatiue simples to purge their popular patients of the opinion of their olde traditions and customes ; which, how they wrought with the most part that had least wit, it were a world to tell. For now nothing was canonicall but what they spake, no man would conuerse with his wife but first askt their aduise, nor pare his nayles, nor cut his beard without their prescription : so senseles, so wauering is the light vncostaunt multitude, that will daunce after euerye mans pype, and sooner prefer a blinde harper that can squeake out a new horne-pipe, than Alcinous or Appolloes varietie, that imitates the eight straines of the Doryan melodie. I speak this to amplify the nouel folly of the headlong vulgar, that making their eyes and eares vassailes to the legerdemaine of these iugling mountebanks, are presently drawne to contemne art and experience, in comparison of the ignorance of a number of audacious ideots. The fox can tell a faire tale, and couers all his knauerie vnder conscience, and the camelion can addresse himself like an angell whensoeuer he is disposed to worke mischief by myracles ; but yet, in the end, their secret driftes are laide open, and linceus eyes, that see through stone walls, haue made a passage into the close couerture of their hypocrisie.

For one daye, as these two deuisers were plotting by

Interdum  
vulgus rec-  
tum videt, et  
ubi peccat.

themselues how to driue all the bees from their honnichombes, by putting worm-wood in their hyues, and strewing henbane and rue in euerie place where they resort, a flye that past by, and heard all their talke, stomacking the foxe of olde, for that he had murthered so manie of his kindred with his flayle-driuing taile, went presently and buzzd in linceus eares the whole purport of their malice ; who awaking his hundred eyes at these vnexpected tidings gan pursue them whersoeuer they went, and trace their intents as they proceeded into action, so that ere halfe their baytes were cast foorth, they were apprehended and imprisoned, and all their whole counsaile detected. But long ere this, the beare, impatient of delayes, and consum'd with an inward greefe in himselfe, that hee might not haue his will of a fat hinde that out-ran him, he went into the woods all melancholy, and there dyed for pure anger, leauing the foxe and the camelion to the destinie of their desert, and mercie of their judges. How they scapte I know not, but some saye they were hanged, and so weeble leaued them.

How lik'st thou of my tale, friend Persie ? Haue I not described a right earthly diuell vnto thee in the discourse of this bloodie-minded beare ? or canst thou not attract the true image of hypocrisie vnder the description of the foxe and the camelion.

Yes, verie wel (quoth I) ; but I would gladly haue you returne to your first subiect, since you haue mooued doubts in my minde, which you haue not yet discust.

Of the sundrie opinions of the diuell thou meanest, and them that imagine him to haue no existence, of which sort are they that first inuented the prouerbe, *homo homini dæmon* ; meaning thereby that that power which we call the deuill, and the ministring spirites belonging to his kingdom, are tales and fables, and meere bugge-beares to scare boyes, and that there is no such

essence at all, but onely it is a terme of large content, describing the rancour, grudge, & bad dealing of one man towards another ; as, namely, when one friend talkes with another subtilly, and seekes to dyue into his commoditie, that hee may deprive him of it craftily ; when the sonne seeks the death of the father, that he may be infeoffed in his wealth ; and the step-dame goes about to make away her sonne-in-law, that her children may inherit ; when brothers fall at jarres for portions, & shall, by open murther or priuy conspiracie, attempt the confusion of each other, only to ioyne house to house, and vmite two liuelihoods in one ; when the servant shal rob his master, and men put in trust start away from their oathes and vowes, they care not how.

In such cases and many more, may one man be said to bee a deuill to an other, and this is the second opinion. The third is that of Plato, who not only affirmeth that there are diuellis, but deuided them into three sorts, euery one a degree of dignity aboue the other : the first are those, whose bodies are copact of the purest ayerie element, combined with such transparent threds, that neither they doo partake so much fier as should make them visible to sight, or haue any such affinitie with the earth, as they are able to be prest or toucht ; and these he setteth in the highest incomprehensible degree of heauen. The second he maketh these, whom Apuleius dooth call reasonable creatures, passiuе in mind and eternall in time, being those apostata spirites that rebelled with Belzebub ; whose bodies, before their fall, were bright and pure all like to the former, but, after their transgression, they were obscured with a thicke, fiery matter, and euer after assigned to darknes. The third he attributes to those men that, by some diuine knowledge or vnderstanding seeming to aspyre aboue mortallitie, are called *dæmona*, (that is) gods, for this word *dæmon* con-

tayneth eyther, and Homer in euery place dooth vse it both for that omnipotent power that was before all things, and the euill spirite that leadeth men to error: so dooth Syrianus testifie that Plato was called *dæmon*, because he disputed of deepe common-wealth matters, greatly auayable to the benefit of his countrey; and Aristotle, because he wrot at large of all things subiect to mouing and sence. Then belike (quoth I) you make this word *dæmon* a capable name of gods, of men, and of deuills; which is farre distant from the scoape of my demand, for I doo only inquire of the diuell, as this common appellation of the diuel signifieth a malignant spirit, enemie to mankinde, and a hater of God and all goodnes. Those are the second kinde, said he, usually termed detractors, or accusers, that are in knowledge infinite, insomuch as, by the quickness of their wits & agreeable mixtures of the elements, they so comprehend those seminarie vertues to men vnknown, that those things which, in course of time or by growing degrees, Nature of it selfe can effect, they, by their art and skil in hastning the works of Nature, can contriue and compasse in a moment: as the magitians of Pharao, who, whereas Nature, not without some interposition of time and ordinarie causes of conception, brings forth frogs, serpents, or any liuing thing els, they, without all such distance of space, or circumscription of season, euen in a thought, as soone as their king commanded, couered the land of Egipt with this monstrous encrease. Of the original of vs spirites the Scripture most amply maketh mention; namely, that Lucifer, (before his fall) an arch-angel, was a cleere bodie, compact of the purest and brightest of the ayre, but after his fall hee was vayled with a groser substance, and tooke a new forme of darke and thicke ayre, which he still reteineth. Neither did he onely fall when hee stroue with Michael, but drewe a number of angels

to his faction, who, ioynt partakers of his proud reuolt, were likewise partakers of his punishment, and all thrust out of heauen together by one iudgement; who euer since doo nothing but wander about the earth, and tempt and enforce frayle men to enterprise all wickednes that may bee, and commit most horrible and abhominable things against God. Mervaile not that I discouer so much of our estate vnto thee, for the Scripture hath more than I mention; as S. Peter, where he saith that *God spared not his angels that sinned*; and in an other place, wher he saith that *they are bound with the chains of darknes, and throwen headlong into hell*; which is not meant of any locall place in the earth, or vnder the waters, for, as Austin affirmeth, we doe inhabite the region vnder the moone, and haue the thick aire assigned vs as a prison, from whence we may with small labour cast our nets where wee list: yet are we not so at our disposition, but that we are still commanded by Lucifer, (although we are in number infinit) who, retaining that pride wherewith he arrogantly affected the maiestie of God, hath still his ministring angels about him, whom he employes in seuerall charges, to seduce & deceiue as him seemeth best: as those spirits which the Latins call *Jovios* and *Antemerdianos*, to speake out of oracles, and make the people worship them as gods, when they are nothing but deluding diuels, that couet to haue a false deitie ascribed vnto them, & draw men vnto their loue by wonders and prodegies, that els wold hate them deadly, if they knew their maleuolence and enuie. Such a monarchizing spirit it was that said vnto Christ, *If thou wilt fall downe, and worship me, I will give thee all the kingdomes of the earth*; and such a spirit it was that possest the *Libian Sapho*, and the Emprour Dioclesian, who thought it the blessedst thing that might be to be called God. For the one being wearie of humane honor, & inspired with a

supernaturall folly, taught little birds, that were capable of speach, to pronounce distinctly, *Magnus Deus Sapho*; that is to say, A great god is Sapho : which words, when they had learned readely to carroll, and were perfect in their note, he let them flie at randome, that so dispersing themselues euery where, they might induce the people to account of him as a god. The other was so arrogant, that he made his subiects fal prostrate on their faces, and, lifting vp their hands to him as to heauen, adore him as omnipotent.

The second kind of diuels, which he most employeth, are those notherne *Marcii*, called the spirits of reuenge, & the authors of massacres, & seedsmen of mischiefe; for they haue commisson to incense men to rapines, sacrilege, theft, murther, wrath, furie, and all manner of cruelties, & they commaund certaine of the southern spirits (as slaves) to wait vpon them, as also great Arioch, that is tearmed the spirite of reuenge.

These know how to dissociate the loue of brethren, and to break wedlock bands with such violence, that they may not be vnited, and are predominant in many other domestical mutinies ; of whom, if you list to heare more, read the 39 of Ecclesiasticus. The prophet Esay maketh mention of another spirit, sent by God to the *Egyptians*, to make them stray and wander out of the way, that is to say, the spirite of lying, which they call Bolychym. The spirits that entice men to gluttony & lust, are certaine watry spirits of the west, and certaine southern spirits as Nefrach and Kelen, which for the most part prosecute vnlawfull loues, and cherish all vnnatural desires : they wander through lakes, fishponds, and fennes, and ouerwhelm ships, cast boates vpon ankers, and drowne men that are swimming : therefore are they counted the most pestilent, troublesome, and guilefull spirits that are ; for by the helpe

of Alynach, a spirit of the west, they will raise stormes, cause earthquakes, whirlwindes, rayne, haile or snow in the cleerest day that is ; and if euer they appeare to anie man, they come in womens apparell. The spirits of the aire will mixe themselues with thunder and lightening, and so infect the clyme where they raise any tempest, that sodainely great mortalitie shal ensue to the inhabitants from the infectious vapors which arise from their motions. Of such S. John maketh mention in the ninth of the Apocalips ; their patrone is Mereris, who beareth chief rule about the middle time of the day.

The spirits of the fire haue their mansions vnder the regions of the moone, that whatsoeuer is committed to their charge they may there execute, as in their proper consistorie, from whence they cannot start. The spirits of the earth keepe, for the most part, in forrests and woods, and doo hunters much noyance ; and sometime in the broad fields, where they lead trauelers out of the right way, or fright men with deformed apparitions, or make them run mad through excessiue melancholy, like Ajax Telamonious, & so proue hurtful to themselves, & dangerous to others : of this number the chiefe are Samaab and Achymael, spirits of the east, that haue no power to doo any great harm, by reason of the vnconstancie of their affections. The vnder-earth spirits are such as lurk in dens & little cauernes of the earth, and hollow crevises of mountaines, that they may dyue into the bowels of the earth at their pleasures : these dig metals and watch treasures, which they continually transport from place to place, that non should haue vse of them : they raise windes that vomit flames, & shake the foundation of buildins ; they daunce in rounds in pleasant lawnds, and greene medowes, with noises of musick and minstralsy, and vanish away when any comes nere them : they will take vpon them any

similitude but that of a woman, and terrefie men in the likeness of dead mens ghosts in the night time ; and of this qualitie and condition the nigromancers hold Gaziell, Fegor, and Anarazel, southerne spirits, to be. Besides, there are yet remaining certaine lying spirits, who (although all be giuen to lye by nature) yet are they more prone to that vice than the rest, being named Pythonists, of whom Apollo comes to be called Pythæus : they haue a prince aswel as other spirits, of whom mention is made in the 3 book of Kings, when hee saith he will be a lying spirit in the mouth of all Ahabs prophets ; from which those spirites of iniquitie doo little differ, which are called the vessels of wrath, that assist Belial (whom they interpret a spirite without yoake or controuler) in all damnable devises and inuentions. Plato reports them to be such as first devised cardes and dice, and I am in the mind that the monke was of the same order that found out the vse of gunpowder, and the engines of warre therto belonging. Those that writ of these matters call this Beliall Chodar of the east, that hath all witches and coniurers spirits vnder his iurisdiction, & giues them leauie to helpe juglers in their tricks, and Simon Magus to doo miracles ; allwaies prouided they bring a soule home to their master for his hyre.

Yet are not these all, for there are spirits called spies and tale-cariers, obedient to Ascaroth, whom the Greekes call Daimona, and S. John, *the accuser of the brethren* : also tempters, who for their interrupting vs in al our good actions are cald our euill angels. Aboue all things they hate the light, and reioyce in darkness, disquieting men maliciously in the night, & sometimes hurt them by pinching them, or blasting them as they sleepe ; but they are not so much to be dreaded as other spirites, because if a man speak to them they flee away, and will not abide. Such a spirit Plinius Secundus

telleth of, that used to haunt a goodly house in *Athens* that Athenodorus hired: and such another Suetonius describeth to haue long houered in Lamianus garden, where Caligula lay buried; who for because hee was onely couered with a fewe clods, and vnreuently throwne amongst the weedes, hee meruailously disturbed the owners of the garden, & would not let them rest in their beds, till by his sisters, returned from banishment, he was taken vp, & entoombed solemnly. Pausanias avoucheth (amongst other experiments) that a certayne spirit called Zazilus doth feed vpon dead mens corses, that are not deeply enterred as they ought: which to confirme, there is a wonderfull accident set downe in the Danish historie of Asuitus and Asmundus, who, being too famous frends (well knownen in those parts) vowd one to another, that which of them two out-liued the other shuld be buried aliue with his frend that first died. In short space Asuitus fell sicke and yelded to nature: Asmundus, compelled by the oathe of his friendship, took none but his horse and his dog with him, and transported the dead bodie into a vast caue vnder the earth, and ther determined, hauing victualled himselfe for a long time, to finish his dayes in darknes, and neuer depart from him that he loued so dearlie.

Thus shut vp, and enclosed in the bowels of the earth, it hapned Eritus, King of Sweveland, to passe that way with his armie, not full two moneths after; who coming to the toombe of Asuitus, and suspecting it a place where treasure was hidden, caused his pioneers with their spades and mattockes to dig it vp: whereupon was discouered the loathsome body of Asmundus, al to besmeared with dead mens filth, and his visage most vgly and ffearfull, which imbruied with congealed bloud, and eaten and torne like a raw vlcer, made him so gastly to behold, that all the lookers on were affrighted.

Hee, seeing himselfe restored to light, and so many amazed men stand about him, resolued their vncertaine perplexitie in these tearmes. “ Why stand ye astonisht at my vnusual deformities, when no liuing man conuerseth with the dead but is thus disfigured? But other causes haue effected this alteration in me; for I know not what audacious spirit, sent by Gorgon from the deep, hath not only most rauenously deuoured my horse and my dog, but also hath laid his hungrie pawes vpon mee, and, tearing downe my cheekes as you see, hath likewise rent away one of mine eares. Hence it is that my mangled shape seemes so monstrous, and my humane image obscured with gore in this wise. Yet scaped not this fell harpie from mee vnreuengd: for, as he assail'd me, I raught his head from his shoulders, and sheathed my sword in his body.” Haue spirits their visible bodies, said I, that may be toucht, wounded, or pierst? Beleeue me, I neuer heard that in my life before this. Why, quoth he, although in their proper essence they are creatures incorporal, yet can they take vpon them the induments of any liuing body whatsoeuer, and transforme themselues into all kinde of shapes, whereby they may more easily deceiue our shallow wits and senses. So testifies Basilius, that they can put on a materiall forme when they list. Socrates affirmeth that his daemон did oftentimes talke with him, & that he saw & felt him many times. But Marcus Cheronesius (a wonderfull discouerer of diuels) writeth, that those bodies which they assume are distinguisht by no difference of sex, because they are simple, and the discernaunce of sex belongs to bodies compound. Yet are they flexible, motiue, and apt for any configuration, but not al of them alike; for the spirits of the fire and aire haue this power aboue the rest. The spirits of the water haue slow bodies resembling birds and women, of

which kinde the Naiades and Nereides are much celebrated amongst poets. Neuertheles, howeuer they are restrayned to their seuerall similitudes, it is certaine that all of them desire no forme or figure so much as the likenesse of a man, & doo thinke themselves in heauen when they are infeoft in that hue. Wherfore I know no other reason but this, that man is the neerest representation to God, in so much as the scripture saith, " He made man after his own likenesse and image ;" and they affecting, by reason of their pride, to bee as like God as they may, contend most seriously to shroud themselues vnder that habit.

But, I pray, tell mee this, whether are there (as Porphirius holdeth) good spirits aswell as euill? Nay, certainly, (quoth he) we are al evill, let Phorphirius, Proclus, Apuleius, or the Platonists dispute to the contrary as long as they will ; which I will confirme to thy capacity by the names that are euerie where giuen vs in the Scripture ; for the deuill, which is the *summum genus* to vs all, is called *Diabolus quasi deorsum ruens*, that is to say, falling downward, as he that aspyring too high was thrown from the top of felicitie to the lowest pit of despaire ; and Sathan, that is to say, an aduersary, who, for the corruption of his malyce, opposeth himselfe euer against God, who is the chiefest good. In Job Behemoth and Leuiathan, and in the 9 of the Apocalips, Apolion, that is to say, a subuerter ; because the foundation of those vertues, which our high Maker hath planted in our soules, hee undermineth and subuerteth. A serpent for his poysoning, a lyon for his deuouring ; a furnace, for that by his malyce the elect are tryed, who are vessels of wrath and saluation. In Esay a syren, a lamia, a scrich-owle, an estridge. In the Psalmes, an adder, a basiliske, a dragon ; and lastlie, in the gospel, Mammon, prince of this world, and the gouernour of darknes. So

that, by the whole course of condemning names that are gyuen vs, and no one instance of any fauorable tytle bestowed vppon vs, I positivelie set downe that all spirits are euill. Now, whereas the diunes attribute vnto vs these good and euill spirits, the good to guide vs from euill, and the euill to draw vs from goodnesse, they are not called spirites, but angells, of which sort was Raphaell, the good angell of Tobias, who exilde the euill spirite Asmodius into the desart of Egipt, that he might bee the more secure from his temptation. Since we haue entred thus far into the deuills common-wealth, I beseech you certefie me thus much, whether haue they power to hurt granted them from God or from themselues? can they hurt as much as they will? Not so, quoth hee, for although that diuell be most mightie spirits, yet can they not hurt but permissiuelie, or by some special dispensation: as when a man is falne into the state of an outlaw, the lawe dispensest with them that kils him, & the prince excludes him from the protection of a subiect, so, when a man is a relaps from God and his lawes, God withdrawes his prouidence from watching ouer him, & authorizeth the deuil, as his instrument, to assault him and torment him, so that whatsoeuer he dooth, is *limitata potestate*, as one saith; insomuch as a haire cannot fall from our heads, without the will of our heauenly father.

The diuell could not deceiue Achabs prophetes till he was licensed by God, nor exercise his tyrannie ouer Job, til he had giuen him commission, nor enter into the heard of swine, til Christ bad them goe. Therefore, need you not feare the diuel any whit, as long as you are in the fauour of God, who raineth him so straight, that except he let him loose he can doo nothing. This manlike proportion, which I now retaine, is but a thing of suffrance, granted vnto me to plague such men as hunt after strife, and are delighted with variance. It may bee so

verie well ; but whether haue you that skill to foretell things to come, that is ascribed vnto you ? We haue (quoth he) sometimes ; not that we are priuy to the eternall counsel of God, but for that by sense of our ayrie bodies we haue a more refined faculty of foreseeing, than men possibly can haue that are chained to such heauie earthly moulder ; or els for that by the incomparable pernicitiie of those ayrie bodies, we not onely out-strip the swiftnes of men, beasts and birds, wherby we may be able to attain to the knowledge of things sooner, than those that by the dulnes of their earthly sense come a great way behinde vs. Hereunto may we adjoin our long ex-perience in the course of things from the beginning of the world, which men want, and, therefore, cannot haue that deep conjecture that we haue. Nor is our know-ledge any more than conjecture, for prescience only be-longeth to God ; & that gesse that we haue proceedeth from the compared disposition of heauenly & earthly bo-dies, by whose long obserued temperature we doo diuine manie times as it happens : & therefore doo we take vpon vs to prophecy, that we may purchase estimation to our names, & bring men in admiration with that we doo, and so be counted for gods. The myracles wee work are partly contriued by illusion, and partly assisted by that supernaturall skill we haue in the experience of nature aboue al other creatures.—But against these allusions of your subteltie and vaine terrors you inflict, what is our chiefe refuge ?—I shalbe accounted a foolish diuel anone, if I bewray the secrets of our kingdome as I haue begun ; yet speak I no more than learned clarke haue written, and asmuch as they haue set downe will I shew thee.

Origen, in his Treatise against Celsus, saith there is nothing better for him that is vexed with spirits, than the naming of Jesu, the true God ; for he auoucheth he hath seen divers driuen out of mens bodies by that

meanes. Athanasius in his booke *De variis questionibus* saith, the presentest remedie against the inuasion of euill spirits is the beginning of the 67 Psalme, *Exurgat Deus, & dissipentur inimici ejus.* Cyprian counsailes men to abiure spirits onely by the name of the true God. Some hold that fire is a preseruatiue for this purpose, because when any spirit appeareth, the lights by little and little goe out, as it were of their owne accord, and the tapers are by degrees extinguisht. Others by inuocating vpon God, by the name of *Vehiculum ignis superioris*, and often rehearsing the articles of our faith. A third sort are perswaded that the brandishing of swords is good for this purpose, because Homer faineth, that Ulysses, sacrificing to his mother, wafted his sword in the aire to chase the spirits from the bloud of the sacrifice : and Sibilla, conducting Æneas to hell, begins her charmes in this sort.

*Procul, O procul, este prophani :  
Tuque juvande viam, vaginaque eripe ferrum.*

Philostratus reporteth, that he and his companions meeting that diuel which artists entitle Apolonius, as they came one night from banquetting, with such termes as he is curst in holy writ, they made him run away howling. Manie in this case extoll perfume of *Calamentum paeonia menta palma Christi*, and *Appius*. A number prefer the carrying of red corall about them, or of *Arthemisia hypericon, ruta verbena*; & to this effect manie doo vse the jyngling of keyes, the sound of the harp, and the clashing of armor. Some of old time put great superstition in characters curiously engraued in theyr Pentagonon, but they are all vaine, & will do no good, if they be otherwise vsed than as signes of covenant betweene the diuell & them. Nor doo I affirme all the rest to be vnfallible prescriptions, though sometime

they haue their vse ; but that the onely assured way to resist their attempts is prayer and faith, gaist which all the diuellis in hell cannot preuaile. Inough, gentle spirit : I wil importune thee no farther, but commit this Suppli-  
cation to thy care ; which, if thou deliuier accordingly, thou shalt at thy returne haue more of my custome, for by that time I wil haue finished certain letters to diuers orators & poets, dispersed in your dominions.—Thats as occasion shal serue ; but now I must take leaue of you, for it is terme time, and I haue some busines. A gentlewoman (a frend of mine, that I neuer saw before) stayes for me, and is like to be vndone if I come not in to bear witnes on his side. Wherefore *Bazilez manus* till our next meeting.

Gentle reader, *tandem aliquando* I am at leisure to talke to thee. I dare say thou hast called me a hundred times dolt for this senseles discourse : it is no matter, thou dost but as I haue done by a number in my dayes ; for who can abide a scurie pedling poet to plucke a man by the sleeve at euerie third step in Paules Church-yard, and when hee comes in to survey his wares, theres nothing but purgations and vomits wrapt vp in wast paper. It were verie good the dogwhipper in Paules would haue a care of this in his unsaverie visitation euerie Saterday, for it is dangerous for such of the queenes liege people as shall take a viewe of them fasting.

Looke to it, you booksellers & stationers, and let not your shops be infected with any such goose gyblets, or stinking garbadge as the jygs of newsmongers ; and especially such of you as frequent Westminster Hall, let them be circumspect what dunghill papers they bring thether : for one bad pamphlet is inough to raise a dampe that may poysone a whole terme, or at the least a number, of poore clyents, that haue no money to preuent il aire by breaking their fasts ere they come thether.

Not a base Jack-dropper, or scuruie plodder at *Noverint*,  
but vailes his asses eares on euery poast, & comes off  
with long *circumquaque* to the gentlemen readers ; yea,  
the most excrementarie dislikers of learning are growne  
so valiant in impudence, that now they set vp their faces  
(like Turks) of gray paper, to be spet at for siluer game  
in Finsburie Fields. Whilst I am thus talking, me  
thinkes I heare one say, what a fop is this ! he entitles his  
Booke a Supplication to the Diuell, & doth nothing but  
raile on ideots, and tells a storie of the nature of spirits.  
Haue patience, good sir, and weeble come to you by and  
by. Is it my title you finde fault with ? Why, haue  
you not seene a towne surnamed by the principall house  
in the towne, or a noble man deriuie his baronie from a  
little village where he hath least land ? So fareth it by  
me in christening of my booke. But some will obiect,  
wheretoo tends this discourie of diuels, or how is it induc'd ? Forsooth, if thou wilt needs know my reson,  
this it is. I bring Pierce Penilesse to question with the  
diuel, as a yong nouice would talke with a great trauailer,  
who, caryng an Englishmans appetite to enquire of  
news, will be sure to make what vse of him he may, and  
not leaue any thing vnaskt, that he can resolute him of.  
If, then, the diuell be tedious in discoursing, impute it to  
Pierce Penilesse that was importunate in demanding :  
or if I haue not made him so secret or subtil in his art,  
as diuels are wont, let that of Lactantius be mine excuse,  
*lib 2, cap 16 de Origenis errore*, when he saith the diuels  
haue no power to lie to a just man ; and if they abiure  
them by the maiesty of the high God, they will not onely  
confesse themselues to be diuels, but also tell their names  
as they are. *Deus bone !* what a vaine am I fallen into !  
What ! an epistle to the readers in the end of thy booke ?  
Out vpon thee for an arrant blocke, where learndst thou  
that wit ? O, sir, hold your peace : a fellow neuer

comes to his awnswere before the offence be committed. Wherefore, if I in the beginning of my book should haue come off with a long apologie to excuse my selfe, it were all one, as if a theefe, going to steale a horse, should deuise by the way as he went what to speake when he came at the gallowes. Here is a crosse way, and I thinke it good heere to part. Farewell, farewell, good Parenthesis, and commend me to Ladie Vanitie, thy mistres.

Now, Pierce Peniles, if for a parting blow thou hast ere a tricke in thy budget more than ordinarie, bee not daintie of it, for a good patron will pay for all. I, where is he? *Promissis quilibet dives esse potest.* But cap and thanks is all our courtiers payment; wherefore, I would counsell my frends to be more considerate in their dedications, and not cast away so many months labour vpon a clowne that knowes not how to vse a scholler: for, what reason haue I to bestow any of my wit vpon him, that will bestow none of his wealth vpon me? Alas, it is an easie matter for a goodlie tall fellow, that shines in his silkes, to come and out face a poore simple pedant in a thred-bare cloake, and tell him his booke is pretie, but at this time he is not prouided for him. Marrie, about two or three daies hence if he come that way, his page shal say he is not within, or els he is so busie with my L. How-call-ye him, and my L. What-call-ye-him, that he may not be spoken withall. These are the common courses of the world, which euery man priuately murmures at, but none dares openly ypbraid, because the most artists are base minded: like the Indians, that haue store of gold & precious stones at commaund, yet are ignorant of their value, and therefore let the Spaniards, the Englishmen, & euery one load their ships with them without molestation; so they, enioying and possessing the purtie of knowledge, (a treasure farre richer than the Indian mynes) let euerie proud Thraso be pertaker of their perfections,

repaying them no profit, and gyld himself with the titles they giue him, when he wil scarce return them a good word for their labor. Giue an ape but a nut, and he wil looke your head for it ; or a dog a bone, and hele wag his tayle ; but giue me one of my young masters a booke, and he will put off his hat and blush, and so goe his way.

Yes, now I remember me, I lye ; for I know him that had thankes for three yeares worke, and a gentleman that bestowed much cost in refining of musicke, & had scarce fidlers wages for his labor. We want an Aretine here among vs, that might strip these golden asses out of their gay trappings, and after he had ridden them to death with rayling, leauie them on the dunghil for carion. But I will write to his ghost by my carrier, & I hope hele repaire his whip, and vse it against our English peacockes, that painting themselues with church spoyles, like mighty mens sepulchers, haue nothing but atheisme, schisme, hypocrisie, and vainglory, like rotten bones lurking within them. O ! how my soule abhors these buckram giants, that hauing an outward face of honor set vpon them by flatterers & parasites, haue theyr inward thoughts stuft with straw and fethers, if they were narrowly sifted.

Farre be it, bright starres of nobilitie, and glistring attendaunts on the true Diana, that this my speach should be anie way injurious to your glorious magnificence, for in you liue those sparkes of Augustus liberalitie, that neuer sent any away emptie ; and science seauenfold throne, welnigh ruined by riot and auarice, is mightely supported by your plentiful largesse, which makes poets to sing such goodly hymnes of your praise, as no enuious posteritie may forget. But from generall fame, let me digres to my priuate experience, and, with a tongue vnworthie to name a name of such worthines, affectionately emblazon, to the eyes of won-

der, the matchless image of honor, & magnificent rewarder of vertue, Joves eagle-borne Ganimede, thrice noble Amintas, in whose high spirit such a deitie of wisdome appeareth, that if Homer were to write his Odyssea new, (where, vnder the person of Vlysses, he describeth a singular man of perfection, in whome all the ornaments both of peace and war are assembled in the height of their excelence) he need no other instance to augment his conceipt, than the rare cariage of his honorable minde. Many writers and good wits are giuen to commend their patrons and benefactors, some for prowesse, some for policy, others for the glorie of their ancestrie and exceeding bountie and liberalitie; but if my vnable pen should euer enterprise such a continuatue taske of praise, I would embowell a number of those wind-puft bladders, and disfurnish their bald pates of the perriwigs poets haue lent them, that so I might restore glorye to his right inheritance, and these stolne titles to their true owners: which, if it would so fall out, (as time may worke all things) the aspiring nettles, with their shadie tops, shall no longer ouer-dreep the best hearbs, or keep them from the smiling aspect of the sunne, that liue and thriue by comfortable beames. None but Desert should sit in Fame's grace, none but Hector be remembred in the chronicles of prowesse, none but thou, most courteous Amyntas, bee the second musicall argument of the Knight of the Red-crosse.

*Oh decus atque ævi gloria summa tui.*

And here (heauenly Spencer) I am most highly to accuse thee of forgetfulnes, that in that honourable catalogue of our English heroes, which insueth the conclusion of thy famous Fairie Queene, thou wouldest let so speciall a piller of nobilitie passe vnsaluted. The verie thought of his farre deriuied discent, and extraordinarie parts, wherewith hee astoineth the world, and drawes all hearts

to his loue, would haue inspired thy forewearied muse with new furie to proceede to the next triumphs of thy stately goddesse ; but as I, in favor of so rare a scholer, suppose with this counsaile he refraind his mention in this first part, that he might with full saile proceede to his due commendations in the second. Of this occasion long since I happened to frame a sonnet, which, being wholly intended to the reuerence of this renoumed lord (to whom I owe all the vtmost powers of my loue and duetie) I meant here for varietie of style to insert.

Perusing yesternight, with idle eyes,  
 The Fairy Singer's stately tuned verse,  
 And viewing, after chap-mens wonted guise,  
 What strange contents the tytle did rehearse ;  
 I straight leapt ouer to the latter end,  
 Where, like the queint comædians of our time  
 That when their play is doone doe fall to ryme,  
 I found short lynes, to sundry nobles pend,  
 Whom he as speciall mirrours singled fourth  
 To be the patrons of his poetry.  
 I read them all, and reuerenc't their worth,  
 Yet wondred he left out thy memory ;  
 But therefore gest I he supprest thy name,  
 Because few words might not comprise thy fame.

Beare with mee, gentle Poet, though I conceiue not aright of thy purpose, or be too inquisitiue into the intent of thy oblivion ; for, how euer my conjecture may misse the cushion, yet shall my speech sauour of friendship, though it be not allied to judgement.

*Tantum hoc molior* in this short digression, to acquaint our countrymen, that lyue out of the echo of the courte, with a common knowledge of his inualuable vertues, and shew my selfe thankfull (in some part) for benefits receyued ; which, since words may not counteruayle that

are the usual lyp-labor of euery idle discourser, I conclude with that of Ouid.

*Accipe per longos tibi qui deserviat annos,  
Accipe qui pura novit amare fide.*

And if my zeale and duety (though all to meane to please) may by any industry be reformed to your gracious liking, I submit the simplicitie of my endeuours to your seruice, which is all my performance may profer, or my abilitie performe.

*Præbeat Alcinoi poma benignus ager,  
Officium pauper numeret studiumque fidemque.*

And so I breake off this endlesse argument of speeche abruptly.

**FINIS.**

## N O T E S.

---

Page 5, line 23, Divines and dying men may talke of hell,  
But in my heart her several torments dwell.]

This couplet, as stated in the Introduction, is found in "The Yorkshire Tragedy," 4to. 1608, attributed to Shakespeare, having been printed with his name on the title-page, and afterwards inserted in the folio volume of his works published in 1664. The lines had been previously taken possession of by that notorious plagiary, S. Nicholson, who in 1600 printed a small volume, which he called "Acolastus his Afterwitte." They there stand as follows:—

"If on the earth there may be found a hell,  
Within my soule her several torments dwell."

"Acolastus his Afterwitte" is made up of unquoted quotations from authors of the time, including Shakespeare, from whose "Venus and Adonis" and "Lucrece" S. N. borrowed, or rather *stole* largely.

Page 7, line 12, the exploits of Untrusse.] It appears, from the original letter by Nash, which is printed in the "Hist. of Engl. Dram. Poetry and the Stage" (i. 303), that Anthony Munday was the writer of this ballad of "Untruss." "O, it is detestable (says Nash, writing to Sir Robert Cotton) and abominable, far worse then Munday's ballet of Untrusse, or Gillian of Braynfords Will." The whole letter is a very curious and valuable relic of the time: no doubt there was some "pamphlet in praise of pudding pricks," and "a treatise of Tom Thumb," printed about the same date.

Page 8, line 17, I, I, wele giue loosers leaue to talke.] It must be borne in mind that the affirmative *Ay* was almost invariably expressed by a capital *I* at the period when this tract was printed. In a passage in "Romeo and Juliet" (act iii. sc. 2), it is necessary to preserve the old spelling in this respect, in consequence of the play upon the "bare vowel" *I*.

"Hath Romeo slain himself? say thou but I,  
And that bare vowel *I* shall poison more  
Than the death-darting eye of cockatrice," &c.

Page 11, line 7, a short thrid-bare gowne on his backe, fac't with moath-eaten budge.] *Budge* was a common kind of fur, often mentioned in our old writers. Stowe, in his "Survey," informs us that Budge-row was so called "of budge fur, and of the skinners dwelling there." Thoms's Edit. p. 94. Ben Jonson, in his "Bartholomew Fair" (act i. sc. 1), speaks of the "coney-skin woman of Budge-row."

Page 11, line 30, retyred me to Paules, to seeke my dinner with Duke Humfrey.] The allusions in our old comic writers to dining with Duke Humphrey, in the walks of St. Paul's Church, are almost endless. In W. Rowley's "Match at Midnight," act ii. sc. i., Jarvis inquires, "Are they none of Duke Humfreys furies? do you think they devised this plot in Pauls to get a dinner?" See also Bishop Hall's Satires, 1597 (sat. 7), G. Harvey's "Four Letters," &c. 1592, Dekker's "Gull's Hornbook," 1609, &c. &c.

Page 12, line 14, A knight of the post, quoth he.] A knight of the post was a person who received money for giving bail for a debtor, or other party in custody. The term was sometimes used for a cheat generally. To the particular personage employed by Nash on this occasion, his contemporary, T. M., refers in "The Black Book," 1604, 4to. Sig. B 2.

"The blacke Knight of the Poste shortly returnes  
From Hell, where many a Tobacc'nist burnes."

Nothing could be more easy than to accumulate similar allusions to these hirelings.

Page 13, line 3, Marquesse of Conythus.] Of course "Conythus" is a misprint for *Cocytus*, but it runs through the second and other editions of the tract. "Lymbo," afterwards mentioned, is the *Limbus Patrum*, where the patriarchs, &c., were supposed to be confined until they were set at liberty on the descent of the Saviour. Lymbo, or Limbo, was often used as the cant word for any prison or place of durance. See Shakespeare's "Henry VIII.", act v. sc. 3.

Page 14, line 6, I knowe a great sort of good fellows.] i. e. a great company of good fellows: "sort" is perpetually used in the sense of *collection*, or company, in our old writers.

Page 14, line 15, set in onion skind jackets.] This is the reading of the second edition: the first has "set in onions kind jackets."

Page 14, line 23, with angle hookes instead of aglets.] Aglets, properly *aiguillettes*, were the ends or tags of strings used to fasten or sustain dress. These tags sometimes represented small figures, and hence Grumio's "aglet baby," in "The Taming of the Shrew," act i. sc. 2.

Page 14, line 28, bumbasted they were, like beer barrels.] It was the

fashion of the time to stuff out the lower part of the dress of men with cotton, wool, or horse-hair. Hence, in "Henry IV.,<sup>1</sup>" part i., Prince Henry calls Falstaff "my sweet creature of bombast"—act ii. sc. 4.

Page 15, line 4, and a sargent's mace in his mouth.] A *baillif*, at the date when this tract was written, was called a "serjeant."

Page 15, line 19, in stead of oyle, to sayme wool withall.] To "sayme" is to *grease*. *Seme* is Saxon for tallow, or hogslard. In Welsh it is spelt *saim*. Shakespeare uses the word in "Troilus and Cressida," act ii. sc. 2.

Page 17, line 7, a squier of low degree.] "The Squyre of Lowe Degree" is the title of an old romance printed by W. Copland, and inserted by Ritson in vol. iii. of his Collection of Romances. It is one of the comparatively few productions of the kind which was of English origin, though perhaps they are more numerous than Ritson imagined.

Page 17, line 16, his spade peake.] Alluding to the cut of his beard, which was shaped like such a spade as came to a point, or peak, and not square, as they are now usually made.

Page 17, line 23, that hath beene but once at Deepe.] i. e. at *Dieppe*, as "Roan" above is *Rouen*.

Page 18, line 29, A young heyre, or cockney, that is his mother's darling.] Dekker, in his "Knights Conjuring," (recently reprinted for the Percy Society, under the editorial care of Mr. Rimbault, the Secretary) derives the word "cockney" from *cockering*; and in "The Contention between Liberality and Prodigality," 1602, one of the characters says, "I was at first like a cockney dandled."

Page 19, line 7, haberdine and poor John.] Poor John was dried and salted fish—hake; and "haberdine" was food of a similar kind, viz. salt cod—*habordean*, French.

Page 20, line 22, like the Barrowists and Greenwoodians.] Henry Barrow and John Greenwood were executed in the beginning of 1593, (6 April) very soon after this tract by Nash had been published. The interrogatories which they were required to answer with reference to their works and tenets, may be found in detail in "The Egerton Papers," (published by the Camden Society, from the originals in the possession of Lord Francis Egerton) p. 166, *et seq.*

Page 21, line 4, but a needle in his bosome.] This "artificer" was a tailor. Francis Thynn, in his admirable poem, "The Debate betwenee Pride and Lowlines," (Shakespeare Society's publications) from which Robert Greene took his "Quip for an Upstart Courtier," 1592, thus concludes his description of a tailor :

"He condiscended soone to our request :  
Then I, beholding him advisedly,

Sawe where *a needle sticke*d on his brest,  
And at the same a blacke thread hanging by."

Page 22, line 2, Mother Bunches slymie ale.] Mother Bunch was, no doubt, some well known ale-wife of the time. In 1604 was published a jest-book, entitled "Pasquils Jests, mixed with Mother Bunches Meriments," and it was reprinted in 1629, with some additions, but with the omission a part of the book called "A Doozen of Gulles." Dekker in his "Satiromastix," 1602, introduces a mention of Mother Bunch.

Page 22, line 15, coystrells] i. e. properly *kestrels*, a degenerate kind of hawk, and metaphorically used for a *coward*, or a bully. Shakespeare uses the word in "Twelfth Night."

Page 22, line 24, and a good legge.] Probably, we are here to take "a good leg" for a *handsome bow*, the meaning being, that the seven liberal sciences and humble deportment will scarce procure bread and cheese for a scholar. "To make a leg" was synonymous with *bowing*. In "Timon of Athens," act i. sc. 2, Apemantus says of the servile guests,

"I doubt whether *their legs* are worth the sums  
That are given for 'em."

Page 23, line 7, Ulisses was a tall man.] Tall in the language of the time was *bold*, courageous. Nothing can well be more common than the use of "tall" in this sense.

Page 23, line 22, a rebater.] Commonly spelt *rebatoe*, a portion of dress very much in fashion at this period, and often mentioned in "Patient Grissill," 1603, reprinted by the Shakespeare Society. It was a species of ruff much stiffened, and it has been derived by Menage, from the Fr. *rabatre*, because at first it was nothing but the collar *turned back*.

Page 25, line 6, wholly *compact* of deceivable courtship.] i. e. entirely *made*, or composed of it. The word *compact* is frequently so used by Shakespeare. Thus in "The Comedy of Errors," act iii. sc. 2, it is said that women are "compact of credit," or *made* of credulity. In "As You Like It," act ii. sc. 7, we have "compact of jars;" in "Midsummer Night's Dream," act v. sc. i. "of imagination all compact," &c. Afterwards in this tract we are told that Lucifer before his fall was "a cleere bodie, *compact* of the purest and brightest of the ayre."

Page 28, line 29, after the colour of a newe *Lord Mayor's posts*.] Alluding to the custom of painting the posts of the house inhabited by the Lord Mayor. The painting of the sheriffs' posts is over and over again spoken of by old writers. The latter part of the sentence refers to the pageants exhibited in the city on Lord Mayor's day, then the 29th of October in each year.

Page 28, line 31, if a painter were to draw any of these *counterfeits*.] “Counterfeit” was the most common word for a *portrait*, and a “table” for the canvass, or panel, on which it was painted.

Page 29, line 2, the ballet of Blue Starch and Poaking Stickes.] The name of any such “sin-washing poet” has not reached our day, nor indeed the ballad here celebrated. Blue starch was used for stiffening ruffs, &c., and seems to have preceded yellow starch, which was in the highest fashion in the reign of James I. Mrs. Turner, who was executed for being concerned in the murder of Sir Thomas Overbury, was a maker of it. “Poaking sticks,” or *poting* sticks, as they were sometimes called, were used in setting ruffs, and are often mentioned, especially by Stubbes, in his “*Anatomy of Abuses*,” 1583, 8vo.

Page 29, line 6, like a lanterne and candle man] i. e. like a watch man, who “went up and downe,” calling upon people to hang out lanterns and candles for the purpose of lighting the streets. At Bridgewater House is preserved a series of plates of the “Cries of London,” and one of them represents a watchman with his lantern and halbert, while over his head is engraved the following inscription, “Lanthorne and a whole candell light : hang out your lights heare.” See the “Bridgewater Catalogue,” 1837, 4to, p. 76, where a fac-simile of the engraving is given.

Page 30, line 5, tinne and pewter are more esteemed than *Latine*.] A quibble upon the word Latin, which was the name of a mixed metal, frequently mentioned with a similar play upon the word: “tin and pewter” seem intended to express money, as, indeed, they are used at this day. Long Lane, Smithfield, was a place full of brokers’ or pawnbrokers’ shops in the reign of Elizabeth and James I.

Page 30, line 11, Ploiden’s standish] i. e. Edmund Plowden’s, the great lawyer’s, inkstand. Plowden died in 1585.

Page 30, line 23, said it was the foulest place he could spie out in all his house.] This story is told in Sachetti’s novels, and no doubt in many other works. Sachetti tells it of the palace of a nobleman of Italy.

Page 30, line 27, a plume of the Phenix.] Here again Nash has been at the Italian novelists. This refers to the tale of Frate Cipolla in Boccaccio, as it was reformed by command of the pope in some of the later editions of the “Decameron.” In the original story, as written by Boccaccio, the plume was not that of the phoenix, but of the angel Gabriel, when he descended at the time of the Salutation.

Page 30, line 28, A thousand *jymians*.] I do not recollect the word “jymiam” to have occurred in any other writer: Shakespeare has “gimmel” in “Henry VI.” part i. (act i. sc. 2), and “gimmel bit” is met with in “Henry V.” (act iv. sc. 2.) It would not be at all unprecedented if the

word “ jemmy,” an instrument now used by housebreakers, had as ancient an origin, for many old words are still preserved among the slang of the lower orders. Nash seems in the text to employ the word “ jymiam” just in the sense in which we use *gimcrack* now. *Gimcrack* is at least as old as the time of Beaumont and Fletcher.

Page 31, line 32, Hey, passe, come aloft!] This was the ordinary exclamation of conjurors, or jugglers, in performing their tricks, and it is still often employed by the same fraternity.

Page 36, line 7, Tarlton and the rest of his fellowes.] At the date when Nash was writing, Richard Tarlton had been dead about four years, having been buried in September, 1588. The queen selected her company of players in 1583 from the theatrical servants of some of her nobility, and of these Tarlton was one of the principal, his reputation and popularity being most extraordinary. He is mentioned by almost hundreds of writers of the time. Before 1590, Queen Elizabeth had two associations of actors in her pay, both calling themselves “ the Queen’s Players.” See Cunningham’s “ Revels’ Accounts” (published by the Shakespeare Society), “ Introduction,” p. xxxii. The fame of Tarlton survived until the breaking out of the civil wars, and the suppression of theatrical performances.

Page 36, line 16, and make no more account of her cloath in his presence.] It may be necessary to observe that the players of the queen were at first regularly supplied with cloth for cloaks, that they might wear her majesty’s livery. After some time the practice seems to have been discontinued, and an allowance was made in consideration of the non-supply of cloth.

Page 38, line 3, Not far from Chester, I knewe an odde foule-mouthde knaue, called Charles, the Fryer.] This tale is supposed to be founded on fact, and to relate to the person Ben Jonson has introduced into his “ Every Man out of his Humour,” under the name of Carlo Buffone : his real name was Charles Chester, which Nash disguises by laying the scene near Chester, and by calling the hero a friar.

Page 39, line 10, Cornelius Agrippa De Vanitate Scientiarum.] This work had long been translated into English, by James Sandford, under the title of “ Of the Vanitie and Uncertaintie of Artes and Sciences,” 4to. London, 1569. It was reprinted several times, and, when Nash wrote, it was very popular.

Page 39, line 11, a treatise that I have seen in dispraise of learning.] Such as the *Moriae Encomium* of Erasmus, which was translated into English by Sir Thomas Chaloner, and first printed in 1540 under the title of the “ Praise of Follie.”

Page 40, line 10, one such rare poem as Rosamond.] By Samuel Daniel ; first printed in the year when Nash’s “ Pierce Penniless” came out. It

was appended to a collection of sonnets by Daniel, called "Delia," and the work was so popular that it went through two editions in 1592, 4to. Only one perfect copy of the first edition of 1592 appears to exist; and it is to be observed that "The Complaint of Rosamond," as it is there called, contains no fewer than twenty-four stanzas not in the second impression of the same year. The second impression, however, includes four sonnets not in the first. The following is one of them:

My cares draw on mine euerlasting night,  
In horror's sable clowdes sets my live's sunne ;  
My live's sweet sunne, my deerest comfort's light,  
Will rise no more to me, whose day is dunne.  
I goe before unto the mirtle shades,  
To attend the presence of my world's deere ;  
And there prepare her flowres that neuer fade,  
And all things fit against her comming there.  
If any aske me, why so soone I came,  
Ile hide her sinne, and say it was my lot :  
In life and death Ile tender her good name :  
My life nor death shall never be her blot.  
Although this world may seeme her deede to blame :  
Th' Ellisean ghosts shall neuer know the same."

Page 40, line 25, Silver-tongu'd Smith.] The marginal note shews that the Christian name of this poet began with "H. *Encomium H. Smithi.*" We have relics of several English versifiers of the name of Smith, but not one of them was *H. Smith*. The most noted of the Smiths was William, who wrote "Chloris, or the Complaint of the passionate despised Shepheard," 1596, 4to. which was dedicated to Spenser. He is not to be confounded with Wentworth Smith, who was himself confounded with Shakespeare, on account of the identity of their initials.

Page 41, line 23, noble Salustrus.] i. e. William de Saluste du Bartas, with whose works Englishmen were beginning to be acquainted, as several of his productions had been translated by Joshua Sylvester in 1591.

Page 41, line 27, Chaucer's host, Baly, in Southwarke.] We are not aware that the name of Chaucer's host in Southwark has been handed down on any other authority, since the time of the author of the "Canterbury Tales."

Page 43, line 13, some tyrde jade of the presse.] Much that follows is directed against Gabriel Harvey and his brothers John and Richard: the former had named Nash "expressly in print."

Page 44, line 26, Tarlton at the Theater made jests of him.] Tarlton was famous for his extemporal wit, and a volume of his "Jests" has come

down to us, some of which are of this kind. The earliest known edition of it was printed in 1611. "The Theatre" was a place of dramatic amusement so called, at which Tarlton no doubt performed : it was situated like "The Curtain," another playhouse, in Shoreditch. An account of both may be found in Vol. iii. of "The History of English Dramatic Poetry and the Stage." See also Stow's "Survey," by Thoms, 1842, p. 158.

Page 46, line 14, the vayn Pap-hatchet.] Meaning John Lilly, Lylly, or Lily, for his name is thus diversely spelt, the author of "Euphues," 1581, and various dramas. The work particularly alluded to in the text is a tract against Martin Marprelate, called "Pap with a Hatchet, alias, a Fig for my Godson," &c. which was published without a date, but probably in 1589. It was at one time attributed to Nash, and it is written in obvious imitation of his satirical and objurgatory style.

Page 49, line 11, Doctor Watson.] This must have been the Dr. Watson who was employed by Queen Elizabeth in some of her foreign negotiations, and elsewhere spoken of by Nash, not Thomas Watson, the author of "*Ekaterina, or Passionate Century of Love,*" (printed about 1581) as we do not learn that he ever took the degree of doctor, either of divinity, medicine, or civil law. He died before Nash published his "Have with you to Saffron Walden," in 1596, and was author of another work, of even greater rarity than his "*Ekaterina*:" it was printed in 1593 under the title of "*The Teares of Fancie, or Love Disdained.*" It consists of sixty sonnets, but the only copy known (it is in a private library) wants two leaves, containing eight sonnets : we quote one of these productions, not only on account of its rarity, but on account of the remarkable simplicity and beauty of its versification :—

"Behold, dear Mistress, how each pleasant green  
Will now renew his summer's livery :  
The fragrant flowers, which have not long been seen,  
Will flourish now ere long in bravery.  
But I, alas ! within whose mourning mind  
The grafts of grief are only given to grow,  
Cannot enjoy the Spring which others find,  
But still my will must wither all in woe.  
The lusty ver, that whilom might exchange  
My grief to joy, and my delight increase,  
Springs now elsewhere, and shows to me but strange :  
My winters woe, therefore, can never cease.  
In other coasts his sun doth clearly shine,  
And comfort lends to every mould but mine.

Page 49, line 34, to the provant of the Low Countries.] "Provant" means

the provision or rations dealt out to the army, the scantiness and quality of which, in the Low Countries, Nash contrasts with the flesh-pots of Egypt. “Provant” was sometimes applied to the dress and weapons with which the soldiers were furnished: thus we hear of “provant sword” and “provant breeches” in Massinger and Middleton. The word occurs in Shakespeare, Ben Jonson, and in many other writers of his time.

Page 50, line 17, No I doo it, my friend, that I may not be carefull for the morrow.] A story, with precisely the same point, is contained in “The Schoolmaster or Teacher of Table Phylosophie,” 4to. 1576 and 1583, attributed to Thomas Twyne. It there runs as follows:—

“ Phillip King of Fraunce having certaine poore priests with him at his table at dinner, perceived one, that sate farthest off at the borde’s end, conveying an whole capon into his pocket: when dinner was ended the king called him aside, and enquired of him secretly what he studied? who answered, divinity. Why, said the king, is it not written in the Scriptures that you should not be carefull for meat against the morrow? Yea, said the Priest, and, therefore, because I would put away all carefules I have done this thing.”

Page 51, line 29, The *dorter* staires.] i. e. the *dormitory* stairs. It is sometimes spelt *dorture*, and is a contraction of the Latin *dormitura*. The French write it *dortoir*.

Page 52, line 3, keepe aloofe at *Pancredge*.] So Paneras used formerly to be sometimes spelt.

Page 52, line 7, in their *saphaunce* bags.] A saphaunce was a species of firelock, from the German *schnaphans*. We probably procured the weapon from Germany.

Page 52, line 24, drinke *super nagulum*, &c.] Nash uses some of these drinking exclamations in his “Summers Last Will and Testament,” 1600 (Dodsley’s Old Plays, vol. ix. p. 49). “A vous, monsieur Winter, a frolick upsey freeze, cross ho! *super nagulum*.” “Frolick” and “upsey freeze” were no doubt introduced from Friesland. *Super nagulum* is used by Ben Jonson, or by his assistant, in “The Case is Alter’d,” 1609, act iv. sc. 3, and is a corruption (as Nash, in fact, explains in his marginal note) of *super ungulam*.

Page 52, line 29, a princockes.] Or a *princox*, was a coxcomb.

Page 53, line 17, Clim of the Clough.] The names by which Nash from time to time addresses the devil, are generally applicable and easily understood: but why he should call him “Clim of the Clough” is not so clear. Adam Bell, Clim of the Clough, and William of Clouteslie, were all famous archers, as we know by the celebrated ballad. The Devil is not usually represented as skilful with the bow, though his minister Death bears it,

and uses it with unerring aim. Hence the beautiful apologue, in so many languages, of Cupid and Death changing arrows by mistake, upon which James Shirley founded a dramatic entertainment, printed in 1653.

Page 54, line 6, that every man should take his hoope, and no more.] Jack Cade was not of this opinion when he declared ("Henry VI." pt. 2, vol. v. p. 187) "There shall be in England seven half-penny loaves sold for a penny: the three-hooped pot shall have ten hoops; and I will make it felony to drink small beer."

Page 54, line 22, One of their breed it was that writ the booke *De Arte Bibendi.*] The following minute description of the ceremonies used in drinking a health is extracted from B. Rich's "Irish Hubbub," printed without date, about 1618. "He that beginnes the health hath his prescribed orders; first, uncovering his head, hee takes a full cup in his hand, and setting his countenance with a grave aspect, he craves for audience. Silence being once obtained, hee beginnes to breath out the name, peradventure of some honorable personage that is worthy of a better regard then to have his name polluted at so unfitting a time, amongst a company of drunkards: but his health is drunk too; and hee that pledgeth must likewise off with his cap, kisse his fingers, and bow himselfe in signe of a reverent acceptance. When the leader sees his follower thus prepared, he sups up his broath, turnes the bottome of the cup upward, and in ostentation of his dexteritie, gives the cup a phillip to make it cry *Twango*. And thus the first scene is acted.

"The cup being newly replenished to the breadth of an haire, he that is the pledger must now beginne his part, and thus it goes round throughout the whole company; provided alwayes by a canon set downe by the Founder, there must bee three at the least still uncovered, till the health hath had the full passage; which is no sooner ended but another begins againe, and hee drinke an health to his *Lady of little worth*, or peradventure to his *light heel'd mistress.*"

Page 56, line 7, as Fol Long, the fencer, did.] We are not aware that the name of this worthy has survived in any other production of the time. Of course the event was well known, or Nash would have entered into more particulars.

Page 56, line 26, like a stationer that I know.] Perhaps Nash owed this "stationer" (whoever he might be) a grudge for not purchasing one of his pamphlets, and therefore immortalised, not his name, but his nature. At this date the term "stationer" included also the business of a bookseller or publisher.

Page 57, line 14, a *retchlesse* unthrift abroad.] "Retchlesse" is properly *reckless*, or *careless*. The word not unfrequently took this form.

Page 58, line 7, everie inferior Bezonian.] "Bezonian" is a word which occurs several times in Shakespeare: "Henry IV.", pt. ii. act v. sc. iii., "Henry VI.", pt. ii. act iv., sc. 2, &c. It is derived from the Italian, *bisogno*, need, or want, and Florio, in his dictionary, translates *bisogno* also "a fresh needy soldier."

Page 58, line 30, and so bid Atlante.] i. e. Atalanta: our printers were not at this date very careful in the orthography of proper names.

Page 59, line 18, some shallow-brayned censurers.] The principal antagonists of the stage, prior to the year in which Nash's tract was published, were John Northbrooke, who wrote about 1577, Stephen Gosson, 1579, Philip Stubbes, 1583, and William Rankins, 1587. Stephen Gosson's "School of Abuse," first printed in 1579, and afterwards reprinted in 1587, is one of the publications of the Shakespeare Society.

Page 59, line 20, the *idlest* time of the day.] The first edition of "Pierce Penniless has "eldest time of the day;" the correction was made in the second impression in the same year.

Page 59, line 24, how virtuously it *skills* not.] i. e. it does not signify; this idiomatic expression was in very common use.

Page 60, line 5, How would it have joy'd brave Talbot.] The paragraph thus commencing is supposed to refer to a lost play upon which Shakespeare founded his "Henry VI." part i., and not to Shakespeare's alteration and improvement of it. See Collier's Shakespeare, "Introduction" to "Henry VI." part i. vol. v. p. 5.

Page 60, line 12, anie *collian*.] Usually spelt *cullion*; but Nash's mode comes nearer the supposed etymology of the word, viz., the Italian *coglione*, a scoundrel.

Page 60, line 13, no immortalitie can be given a man on earth like unto playes.] Upon this point we may quote the following from B. Rich's "Fruites of Long Experience," 1604, 4to. "But I cannot altogether blame the carelesnesse of the world, in that it is become so sparing of good indevours, when there is neither reward for well doing, nor recompence for good desert; nor so much as a memorandum for the most honourable enterprize, how worthily soever performed, unless, perhaps, a little commendation in a ballad; or, if a man be favoured by a play-maker, he may sometimes be canonized on a stage."

Page 60, line 22, what a glorious thing it is to have Henry the Fifth represented on the stage.] This passage also refers to an old historical play on the reign of Henry V., which, in all probability, preceded that by Shakespeare. See the Introduction.

Page 60, line 32, a merriment of the usurer and the devill.] "A merriment" was the name for a species of ludicrous dramatic entertainment, in

which the clown or jester was principally concerned. Tarlton had his "meriments," and Kemp, who followed him in the same line of parts, also exhibited in that kind of performance.

Page 61, line 11, the circumstances of this play and that play.] It is to be regretted that Nash did not give us a few more particulars, and some of the names of the plays containing these instructive lessons. It would have afforded a curious addition to our early stage history. Stephen Gosson, in his "Schoole of Abuse" (already reprinted by the Shakespeare Society), enters into a few details on the subject, but they are meagre and scanty, as he seems to have apprehended that the persons he was addressing were so well acquainted with the matter, that it was needless to do much more than to refer generally to some of the principal dramatic productions of his day.

Page 61, line 14, Whereas some petitioners to the Counsaile.] The author here seems to refer to a particular remonstrance against plays and players, addressed by the citizens of London to the privy council. None such of this date has come down to us, but it will be seen, by reference to the "Hist. of Engl. Dram. Poetry and the Stage," vol. i., that about this time there had been some correspondence between Lord Burghley and the Lord Mayor of London on the subject of dramatic performances in and near the metropolis, and an attempt had been made to put down several of the companies acting under the names of different noblemen.

Page 62, line 21, common curtezans to play women's parts.] It is well known that in England no women acted upon our public stage until about sixty years after Nash wrote. It was made a charge by the Puritans against the players, until after the Restoration, that boys, disguised as women, performed the female characters at the different theatres.

Page 62, line 31, famous Ned Allen.] Edward Alleyn, the founder of Dulwich College. See this passage, and another from the same tract, quoted in the "Memoirs of Edward Alleyn," (printed for the Shakespeare Society) p. 7.

Page 63, line 9, if I ever write any thing in Latine.] We have no information that Nash carried this design into execution. If he ever did give the characters and habits of Tarlton, Alleyn, Knell, Bentley, or any other famous performers of his time, it has not reached ours; but, probably, like T. Heywood's promised "Lives of the Poets," it has utterly perished.

Page 65, line 6, our lord will cun thee little thank for it.] This idiomatic expression occurs in Shakespeare's "All's Well that Ends Well," act iv. sc. 3, and in "Timon of Athens," act iv. sc. 3, &c. To *cun*, or, properly, to *con*, is to *know*; and the French have an equivalent expression in their *savoir gré*.

Page 67, line 9, Persie, beleue me thou shryvest me verie neere.] Why the Devil, *alias* the Knight of the Post, here and afterwards addresses Nash by the name of "Persie," we cannot decisively say; probably it was only the mode in which the fiend thought fit to pronounce "Pierce." To "shrive" a person was to *confess* them.

Page 69, line 5, The beare on a time, &c.] This elaborate apology was of course much more intelligible and pointed at the date when it was published than at present. It had, no doubt, an individual and personal application. As Nash says in his letter to Jeffes, p. xv., he was not a man to pen an apology in vain. It may be suspected, perhaps, that the bear was the Earl of Leicester.

Page 69, line 30, the nimble citizens of the wood.] Thomas Lodge, in his "Rosalynde," 1590, calls deer "The *citizens of the wood*," and Shakespeare, in "As You Like It," founded upon Lodge's "Rosalynde," terms them "native burghers of this desert city" (act ii. sc. 1).

Page 76, line 27, covered the land of Egift with this monstrous encrease.] There is great confusion in the printing of this long sentence in the original edition, where a full stop is wrongly placed after the words "Nature of itselфе can effect." The second edition reprints the passage exactly as it stands in the first.

Page 78, line 11, The second kind of divels.] This paragraph Malone quotes in illustration of the following passage in "Macbeth," act i. sc. 5.

"Come, come, you spirits  
That tend on mortal thoughts, unsex me here;  
And fill me, from the crown to the toe, top-full  
Of direst cruelty," &c.

Malone observes that Shakespeare, very possibly, in this instance may have resorted to Nash's very popular pamphlet of "Pierce Penniless his Suppli-cation to the Devil."

Page 82, line 15, I *raught* his head from his body.] i. e. I *reft* his head from his body. So in Shakespeare's "Henry VI.," part ii. act ii. sc. 3.

— "two pulls at once—  
His lady banish'd, and a limb lopp'd off;  
This staff of honour *raught*."

Page 86, line 18, Tuque juvande viam.] We print this line, and most other quotations, as in the original edition, but of course it is given erroneously. In the second edition, the *Tuque invade viam* of Virgil is even more corruptly printed, *Tuque ju vande viam*, &c. As Nash's quotations are by no means uncommon, the reader will be easily able to correct them both here and elsewhere.

Page 87, line 6, certain letters to divers orators and poets.] To these letters Nash refers in his "private epistle" to the printer of the second edition of "Pierce Penniless," to which edition, as he informs us, he had intended to append them.

Page 87, line 18, a scurvie peddling poet to plucke a man by the sleeve at every third step in Paules Churhyard.] It is to be borne in mind, that St. Paul's Church-yard was at this date the great mart for new publications. It subsequently changed its locality a little, for Paternoster Row, but now it is dispersed over nearly all parts of the town.

Page 88, line 6, for silver game in Finsburie Fields.] Finsbury Fields were at this period the usual resort of the citizens of London and others to practice shooting with the bow. See Thoms's edition of Stow's "Survey of London," p. 159, &c.

Page 89, line 14, to be more considerate in their dedications.] This passage proves (and many others could be produced to the same effect) that authors of old obtained money by dedicating their works to the rich and powerful. The truth of what follows was no doubt often established.

Page 90, line 10, We want an Aretine here among us.] Nash was termed, by some of his contemporaries and followers, "our English Aretine."

Page 90, line 25, the true Diana.] Of course Queen Elizabeth, to whom Nash has before referred (p. 64) under the same name.

Page 91, line 25, none but thou, most courteous Amyntas, bee the second musical argument of the Knight of the Red-crosse.] It is not easy to decide whom Nash here and before means by "Amyntas." Watson had given that name to Sir F. Walsingham, but he had died in 1590; and Nash's "Amyntas" was obviously living, and pointed out as a fit person to be Spenser's second hero. It is to be observed, that in the second edition of "Pierce Penniless" Amintas is called the "mystical," and not the "musical argument," &c., as in the first edition. Malone (Shakespeare by Boswell, ii. 267) contends that Nash by Amyntas meant Ferdinando Earl of Derby. Possibly the Earl of Southampton, to whom Nash dedicates several tracts, was the nobleman intended.

Page 91, line 30, which insueth the conclusion of thy famous Fairie Queene.] This passage of course refers to the sonnets to various nobility, printed at the end of the first three books of the "Fairy Queen," 4to. 1590. There is a peculiarity in one copy of this volume, now before us, which deserves notice, because it may show that the addition of some of the sonnets was an afterthought. The last page of the main poem is 589. On 591 begins the author's letter to Raleigh: then follow commendatory poems, beginning on p. 596 and ending on p. 600. So far, we apprehend, is com-

mon to all copies of the edition in 1590. Pages 601, 602, 603, and 604, are occupied by sonnets to Sir Christ. Hatton, the Earl of Essex, the Earl of Oxford, the Earl of Northumberland, the Earl of Ormond, Lord Ch. Howard, Lord Grey of Wilton, and Sir W. Raleigh. Then, we have eight unnumbered pages, containing repetitions, in the following order, of the sonnets to Hatton, Oxford, Northumberland, Essex, Ormond, Howard, and Grey of Wilton, but including likewise sonnets to Lord Burghley, the Earl of Cumberland, Lord Hunsdon, Lord Buckhurst, Sir F. Walsingham, Sir John Norris, and the Countess of Pembroke. These unnumbered pages are followed by a leaf numbered 605 and 606, with sonnets to Lady Carew and to the ladies of the court on p. 605, and "Faults escaped in the Print" on p. 606. We have been thus particular, in order that individuals possessing copies of "The Faery Queene," 1590, may be able to ascertain whether they agree with that we have described, because the circumstances we have pointed out may not, in fact, be so peculiar as we imagine.

Page 92, line 17, That when their play is doone doe fall to ryme.] This simile does not seem very appropriate, because the rhimes with which the quaint comedians of Nash's time entertained audiences after the play was over, were what were called *jigs*, or merely ridiculous compositions intended to create laughter, and generally performed by the clown of the company with the aid of a pipe and tabor. See "Hist. of Engl. Dram. Poetry and the Stage," p. 376, 378, for some account of these exhibitions. Tarlton, so highly applauded by Nash in his "Pierce Penniless," was a most celebrated performer of *jigs*, and some of those he delivered at the Theatre are still extant in MS. In the Bridgewater Catalogue, p. 300, is a woodcut of Tarlton, playing upon his pipe and tabor.

THE END.

LONDON :

F. SHOBERL, JUN., 51, RUPERT STREET, HAYMARKET,  
PRINTER TO H. R. H. PRINCE ALBERT.

# FOOLS AND JESTERS:

WITH A

REPRINT OF ROBERT ARMIN'S

# NEST OF NINNIES.

1608.

WITH AN INTRODUCTION AND NOTES.



LONDON:  
PRINTED FOR THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY.

---

1842.

LONDON :  
P. SHOBERL, JUN., 51, RUPERT STREET, HAYMARKET,  
PRINTER TO H. R. H. PRINCE ALBERT.

COUNCIL  
OF  
THE SHAKESPEARE SOCIETY.

---

**President.**

THE MOST NOBLE THE MARQUESS OF NORMANBY.

**Vice-Presidents.**

RT. HON. LORD BRAYBROOKE, F.S.A.

RT. HON. LORD F. EGERTON, M.P.

RT. HON. THE EARL OF GLENGALL.

RT. HON. EARL HOWE.

RT. HON. LORD LEIGH.

RT. HON. THE EARL OF POWIS.

AMYOT, THOMAS, ESQ., F.R.S., TREAS. S. A.

AYRTON, WILLIAM, ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A.

BOTFIELD, BERIAH, ESQ., M.P.

BRUCE, JOHN, ESQ., F.S.A.

COLLIER, J. PAYNE, ESQ., F.S.A., DIRECTOR.

CRAIK, GEORGE L., ESQ.

CUNNINGHAM, PETER, ESQ., TREASURER.

DYCE, REV. ALEXANDER.

FIELD, BARRON, ESQ.

HALLAM, HENRY, ESQ., F.R.S., V.P.S.A.

HALLIWELL, J. O., ESQ., F.R.S. F.S.A.

HARNESS, REV. WILLIAM.

MACREADY, WILLIAM C., ESQ.

MILMAN, REV. HENRY HART.

OXENFORD, JOHN, ESQ.

PETTIGREW, T. J., ESQ., F.R.S., F.S.A.

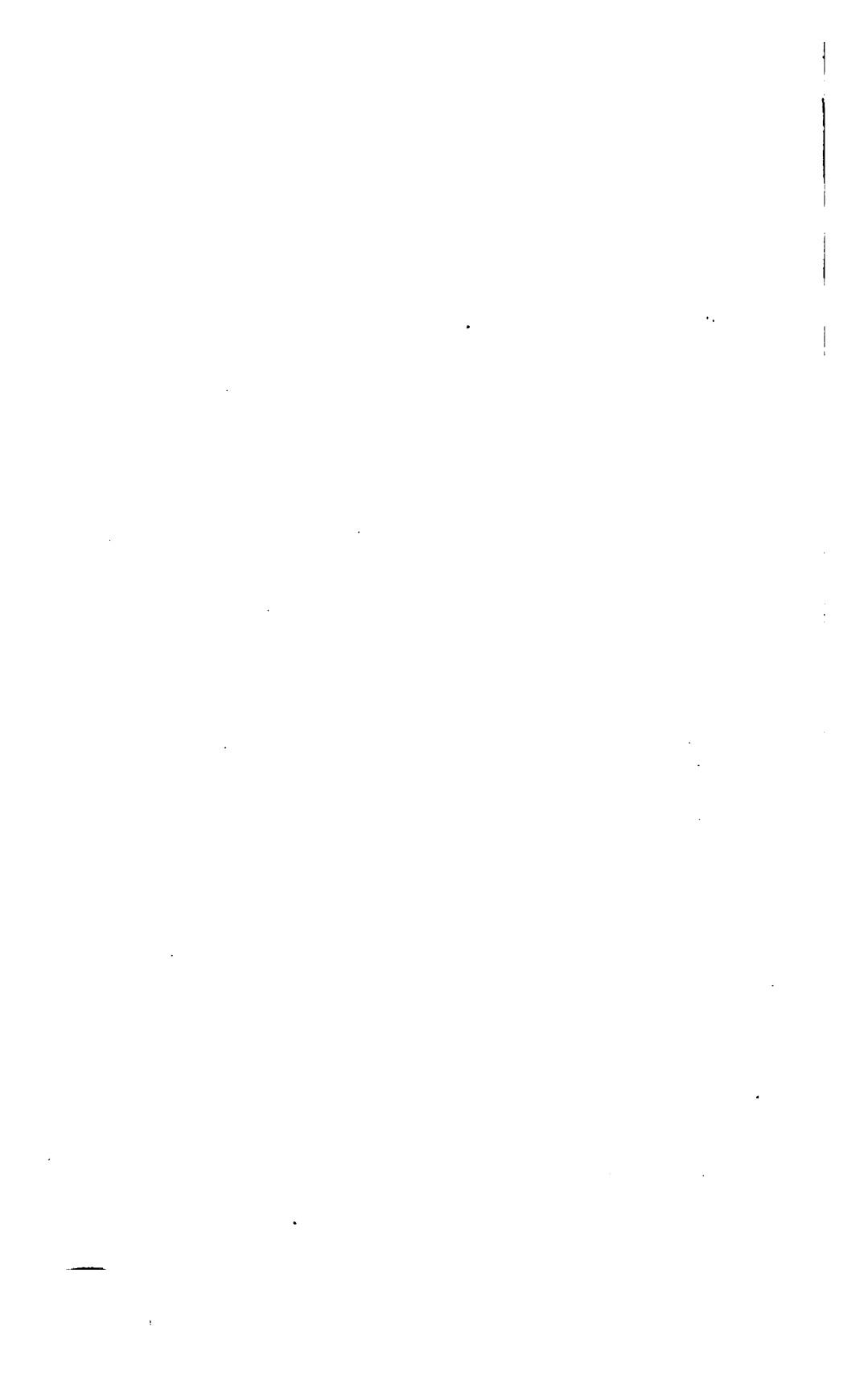
PLANCHÉ, J. R., ESQ., F.S.A.

THOMS, WILLIAM J., ESQ., F.S.A.

TOMLINS, F. GUEST, ESQ., SECRETARY.

WATSON, SIR FREDERICK BEILBY, K.C.H., F.R.S.

WRIGHT, THOMAS, ESQ., M.A., F.S.A.



## INTRODUCTION.

---

It would be singular that a man of so much, and of such peculiar, learning as the late Mr. Douce, in his “Dissertation upon Clowns and Fools,” should not even refer to the ensuing tract, did we not know that only a single copy of it (as far as has been ascertained by the most diligent inquiries during the last thirty or forty years) exists in any public or private collection. Were it, therefore, of less value than it really possesses, as a curious picture of manners, towards the end of the reign of Elizabeth, and in the beginning of that of James I., we should be disposed to reprint it, in order to place it beyond the possibility of destruction. The original is preserved in the Bodleian Library, the statutes of which, we believe, forbid fire within the precincts of the edifice ; and the unceasing and almost affectionate care of the Rev. Dr. Bandinel and his curators inspires every confidence as to the security of the matchless stores in their custody : still we are unwilling that any volume of this description, of which no other exemplar is known, should be exposed to the slightest risk of loss, however remote or improbable. We mention this as an addi-

tional inducement with us for the republication of a relic of much interest and merit, not only *unique* in itself, but unprecedented in its kind. The tract is the only one in our language that treats distinctly of such a subject, and of such persons, as the domestic fools and jesters of a period when they began to receive less encouragement than they had experienced in times of greater ignorance and barbarism.

The entertainment of this class of persons in private families seems to have originated mainly in two causes : one of these was, that the care and custody of idiots was of old assigned to individuals as a source of emolument, the latter having the control and management of the estates of the former : another cause was, perhaps, the natural weakness of our nature, which, when any species of learning was a rare acquisition, and when intellectual abilities were less prized and cultivated, sought to place itself in contrast with those who would show off to advantage even the smallest acquirements, and the most moderate talents. This consideration will account for the ancient familiarity of great men, even of kings and princes, with their fools or jesters, and for the introduction of them at their tables, on the most solemn, as well as on the most festive occasions. It has been ascertained, and requires no proof here, that such was the case of old, not merely in England, but in most other countries of Europe.

It is not our intention at present to pursue this inquiry farther, but merely to observe that the fools, to whose propensities and adventures the following pages chiefly relate, belonged to the class usually entertained

in the houses of the nobility and gentry. There can be no doubt that the dramatic clowns and fools, such as they are represented in the plays of Shakespeare and his contemporaries, originated in this practice; although they came down to the poets of the end of the sixteenth and of the beginning of the seventeenth century, through the medium of the personage who is known as the Vice of the old Moralities: he was employed in them, sometimes by his affected stolidity, and at others by his low cunning, to amuse the spectators, and to relieve their minds from the weight of the more serious portions of the performance. In this point of view, all that relates to the history of the domestic fool cannot fail to be interesting to the student of our early dramatic literature. “It may be objected (says Heywood, in his ‘General History of Women,’ 1624) why, amongst sad and grave histories, I have here and there inserted fabulous tales and jests, savouring of lightness.—I answer, I have therein imitated our historical and comical poets that write to the stage; who, lest the auditory should be dulled with serious courses, which are merely weighty and material, in every act present some zany, with his mimic action, to breed in the less capable mirth and laughter: for they that write to all must strive to please all.”

Many of the anecdotes or incidents in the following pages will strike all readers as merely puerile and absurd; and they will be disposed to wonder how our ancestors could find entertainment in displays of folly and weakness, by which they themselves were not unfrequently sufferers. We must throw our imaginations

back two or three centuries, into the state of society then prevailing in this country, or we shall be disposed to think, that those who laughed at and relished such scenes were little less far gone in fatuity than the principal agent in them. To the readers of the day when the work was written it must have been extremely welcome; and the author, no doubt truly, professes to have been an eye-witness of some of the circumstances he narrates. Thus, it seems extremely probable that he himself saw the remarkable scenes he describes at Edinburgh, in which King James and his fool were concerned; and, as he was a member of the company to which Shakespeare belonged, we may speculate that he visited the Scottish metropolis in his professional capacity, and associated with our great dramatist. We have no direct evidence to establish that Shakespeare was ever beyond the Tweed, but it is certain that some members of the company of actors to which he belonged were at one time as far north as Aberdeen; and that Laurence Fletcher, whose name stands first in the patent or licence, granted by James I. early in 1603, was complimented at Aberdeen by the freedom of the city.

It is enough to make us take a strong interest about Robert Armin, to know that he was one of the original performers in Shakespeare's plays, and that his name is inserted in the list of actors which follows the dedication by Heminge and Condell of the folio of 1623. Of the nature of the characters he sustained we have no precise information; but, in the preliminary matter to one of his productions ("The Italian Tailor and his Boy," 4to., 1609), he

quotes a part of the language of Dogberry, telling his patron and patroness, Lord and Lady Haddington, that he had been “writ down an ass in his time,” as if quoting from one of his known parts. However, it seems certain that Kemp and Cowley were the original Dogberry and Verges of “Much Ado about Nothing,” for both in the 4to and in the folio their names, instead of the names of the characters, are inserted at the head of the scenes in which the constable and his companion appear.<sup>a</sup>

<sup>a</sup> We may take this opportunity of correcting Mr. Knight on a point regarding which he has fallen into an error both in his “Pictorial” and in his “Library Shakspere,” from not having consulted the earlier editions of the plays. “There is,” he observes, “*a remarkable peculiarity in the text of the folio*, which indicates very clearly that it was printed from a playhouse copy \* \* \* In the third act, when the two inimitable guardians of the night first descend upon the solid earth in Messina, to move mortals for ever after with unextinguishable laughter, they speak to us in their well-known names of Dogberry and Verges; but in the fourth we find the names of mere human actors prefixed to what they say: Dogberry becomes Kempe, and Verges Cowley. Here, then, we have *a piece of the prompter's book before us.*” Mr. Knight's inference fails him, because what he notices as “a remarkable peculiarity” in the folio of 1623, derived from “the prompter's book,” is common both to the folio of 1623 and to the 4to of 1600. The folio of 1623 was, in fact, printed precisely from the 4to of 1600, with the names of Kemp and Cowley instead of those of Dogberry and Verges. Mr. Knight would, of course, not have committed this mistake had he resorted to a copy of the 4to 1600. He adds, that Heminge and Condell permitted the names of Kemp and Cowley to remain as they found them in the prompter's book “as a historical tribute to the memory of their fellows.” If there were any tribute to Kemp and Cowley, it was paid by Valentine Simmes, the printer of the 4to 1600, who perpetuated a blunder he found in the manuscript from which “Much Ado about Nothing” was composed by the men in his employ.

We have reason to know that, not long after the publication of “*Much Ado about Nothing*,” Kemp left the company of the king’s players, and joined those of Prince Henry (a point to which we shall presently more distinctly advert); and possibly Armin succeeded to some of the comic parts, which Kemp had previously represented. Moreover, it appears that Armin was at first instructed in the quality of a player by the celebrated Richard Tarlton, who was most famous as, what we now call, a low comedian, though at least one authority may be quoted to shew that he was also a distinguished tragic performer.<sup>b</sup> In an epigram inserted by John Davies of Hereford in his “*Scourge of Folly*,” Armin is termed “*honest gameson Armin*;” and, on the whole, we may

<sup>b</sup> We allude to Stradling’s Epigram, published in his “*Epigrammatum Libri Quatuor*,” Londini, 1607. 12mo.

RICH. TARLTONO, COMŒDORUM PRINCIPI.

“Cujus, viator, sit sepulchrum hoc scire vis,  
 Inscriptionem non habens?  
 Asta, gradumque siste paulisper tuum:  
 Incognitum nomen scies.  
 Princeps Comœdorum tulit quos Angliæ  
 Tellus, in hoc busto cubat.  
 Quo mortuo, spretæ silent comedîæ,  
 Tragediæque turbidae.  
 Scenæ decus desiderant mutæ suum,  
 Risusque abest Sardonius.  
 Hic Roscius Britannicus sepultus est,  
 Quo notior nemo fuit.  
 Abi, viator: Sin te adhuc nomen latet,  
 Edicet hoc quivis puer.”

This epigram is quoted at length in “*The Archæologist*,” No. I. p. 27, and, we think, elsewhere.

conclude that the line of characters he usually filled was of a humorous and ludicrous description.

We have mentioned that he was a pupil of Tarlton. This fact we have upon the evidence of the volume of Jests published in the name of that comic performer, of which the earliest known edition bears date in 1611: it was again printed in 1638—at least, a copy with that date is among Malone's books at Oxford; but how often it had been reprinted in the interval between 1611 and 1638 it is impossible to decide. Neither could the edition of 1611 have been by any means the first; for Tarlton died in 1588, and three-and-twenty years could not have been allowed to elapse before such a collection of stories, relating to so popular an actor, was put to press. At what date Armin received instructions from Tarlton we have no information; but Armin was then an apprentice, and therefore certainly quite young. The story is this:—that Armin, being apprenticed to a goldsmith, was sent to an inn in Gracechurch Street to receive payment for a bill: there he met with Tarlton, who took a fancy to him, induced him to quit his trade, and to take to the stage as a means of obtaining a livelihood. In order to qualify Armin for the profession, Tarlton took him for some time under his own tuition;—that is to say, in all probability, he engaged Armin as his boy—for nearly all the principal actors of that day and afterwards had boys under them, whom they taught to play, and who, when properly qualified, and until their beards grew, usually sustained female characters.

We must suppose Armin to have been not less than fourteen or fifteen years old, when he became acquainted

with Tarlton ; and, as he appeared in print as early as 1590, we can scarcely imagine that he took to the stage later than about 1580. It is singular to see the name of an actor in connection with a work entitled, “ A brief Resolution of the right Religion :” such, however, is the fact ; but all that Armin did was to write a preliminary prose address in commendation of the work, and, possibly, the author was induced to solicit his name in consequence of its popularity.<sup>c</sup>

It is generally believed that Tarlton principally exhibited at the Curtain in Shoreditch ; but that theatre was not built until about 1575, and he was certainly an applauded actor before that date. He was the author of a ballad printed in 1570, and must have put his name to it, not from any vanity of authorship on account of the merit of the production itself, but because it was thought that it would give it a considerable sale : it was upon the floods in Bedfordshire and Lincolnshire, in the year we have mentioned, and it may be found printed from the original broadside in the first publication issued by the Percy Society.<sup>d</sup> After the death of Tarlton, Armin perhaps took some of his master’s parts, and lent his name in a manner somewhat similar.

<sup>c</sup> The title-page runs thus : “ A Briefe resolution of the right Religion, touching the controversies that are now in England. Written by C. S. London. Printed by Roger Ward for John Proctor, &c. 1590. 8vo.” Armin’s contribution to this work does not contain a syllable about himself.

<sup>d</sup> It is called “ A very lamentable and wofull Discours of the fierce Fluds, which lately flowed in Bedford shire, in Lincoln shire, and in many other places, with the great losses of sheep and other cattel, the 5 of October, 1570.”

About this date, or a little afterwards, Armin must have been a writer of some celebrity, for Thomas Nash, in his “Strange News,” 1592, mentions him in company with Thomas Deloney, Philip Stubbs, &c., as one of the progeny of “their father Elderton,” the notorious ballad-maker. Nash associated Stubbs with them for the purpose of derogating from his reputation as the author of “The Anatomy of Abuses,” which, having been first published in 1583, went through several editions before 1592. Nothing by Armin, or attributed to him, of this date has survived. All evidence tends to shew that by far the greater part of the ephemeral literature of that period has perished. It was not usually in a form calculated for preservation; and, even where it assumed a more respectable and permanent shape, as in the tract hereafter reprinted, it was so handed about from one reader to another, and so carelessly and unceremoniously treated by all readers, that it is almost a wonder that a single copy has descended to us. Such prolific penmen as Elderton, Deloney, Johnson, and others, would smile if they could see the eagerness with which their productions are now purchased, and the chariness with which they are treasured in the portfolios of our curious collectors, who have often given more pounds for a copy of a ballad, than the writer of it received pence for composing it.

We hear nothing more of Armin, either as author or actor, until we find his name among the company licensed by James I. when he came to the throne, and thereafter called “the King’s Majesty’s Players.” If any thing be to be inferred from the fact, it may be noticed that

his name stands last but one in the list of nine players, including Lawrence Fletcher and Shakespeare, who are at the head of the company.

Nevertheless, a circumstance occurred in the next year which may lead us to believe that Armin was then in considerable favour with the public. At this date he must have been upon the stage more than twenty years; but, as before remarked, the retirement of Kemp from the company might again give Armin a temporary prominence as the successor to such parts as Dogberry, Peter, Launcelot, or Touchstone. Had Kemp not retired previous to the 17th of May, 1603, it is strange, considering his eminence in the profession, that his name should not have been mentioned in the patent; but we have positive testimony in Henslowe's Diary that he had withdrawn, and had enlisted himself in the rival association led by Edward Alleyn—the Players of Prince Henry. There are numerous entries relating to Kemp, and to dresses furnished to him for his different characters, and to money advanced to him in the spring, summer, and autumn of 1602; the earliest bears date on the 10th March of that year, when Henslowe lent William Kemp twenty shillings; another comparatively small sum was advanced to him on the 22nd August, 1602, and a third entry of a loan is found under the date of the 3rd of September following. This fact is a novelty in the life of this performer, and the Rev. Mr. Dyce was not acquainted with it, when he drew up the excellent memoir which precedes the reprint, under the sanction of the Camden Society, of "Kemp's Nine Days' Wonder," 4to 1600. Neither is it of small importance with

reference to some of Shakespeare's dramas; for, if Kemp ceased to belong to the King's Players, he could not have been the performer of parts assigned to him in pieces which were produced after he quitted the company. We may take this opportunity of mentioning, as an incidental circumstance, that Kemp was still alive, and still acting, in 1605. We afterwards hear no more of him, and possibly he died of the plague, which prevailed to a fearful extent in that year.

Our reason for thinking that Armin was a popular actor in 1604 is, that, in that year, he wrote an introductory epistle to a small tract penned by Gilbert Dugdale (whom Armin terms "his kinsman," and who was the author of a pageant on the coronation of James I.), under the following title: "A true Discourse of the Practises of Elizabeth Caldwell, Ma. Jeffrey Bownd, Isabell Hall widdow, and George Ferneby, on the parson of Ma. Thomas Caldwell, in the County of Chester, to haue murdered and poysoned him with divers others, &c. At London, printed by James Roberts for John Busbie, &c. 1604." 4to. Armin's epistle comes immediately after the title-page, and as it relates mainly to himself, and as the tract in which it is found is of rare occurrence, we subjoin it.

"To the right honourable and his singular good Lady, the Lady  
Mary Chandois,

"R. A. wisheth health and everlasting happinessse.

"My honourable and very good Lady, considering my duty to your kind Ladyship, and remembiring the vertues of your prepared minde, I could doe noe lesse but dedicate this strange worke to your view, being both matter of moment and truth. And to the whole world it may seem strange that a gentlewoman so well brought vp

in God's feare, so well married, so vertuous ever, so suddenly wrought to this act of murder; that when your Ladiship doth read as well the Letter as the Booke of her owne indighting, you will the more wonder that her vertues coulde so aptly tast the follies of vice and villanie. But so it was; and, for the better prooфе that it was so, I haue placed my kinsman's name to it, who was present at all her troubles, at her comming to prison, her beeing in prison, and her going out of prison to execution. That, those Gentlemen to whom he dedicates his worke witnessed, may also be pertakers in that kind, for the prooфе thereof, that your Ladiship and the world, so satisfied, may admire the deede, and hold it as strange as it is true.

" We have many giddie-pated poets, that coulde have published the report with more eloquence; but truth, in plaine attire, is the easier knowne: let fixion maske in Kendall greene. It is my qualitie to add to the truth, truth, and not leasings to lyes.

" Your good honor knowes *Pinck's* poor heart, who, in all my ser-vices to your late deceased kind lord, neuer sauoured of flatterie or fixion: and, therefore, am now the bolder to present to your vertues the view of this late truth, desiring you to so think of it that you may be an honourable mourner at these obsequies, and you shall no more doe than manie more haue doone. So with my tendered dutie, my true ensuing storie, and my euer wishing well, I do hum-bly commit your Ladiship to the prison of heauen, wherein is perfect freedome.

" Your Ladiships euer

" In duty and seruice,

" ROBERT ARMIN."

How Armin acquired the nickname of Pink, and in what capacity he had been in the service of the husband of the lady he addresses, we are left to conjecture: it is very likely that Lord Chandos, like many other noblemen, had at one time a company of theatrical retainers in his pay and under his patronage, and that Armin had been one of them.

His next work, at least the next regarding which we

have any information, was that now presented to the members of the Shakespeare Society. On the personal matter it contains, it is, therefore, unnecessary to dwell. We may observe that it is not mentioned in “The Bibliographer’s Manual,” by Lowndes, and that the only catalogue of books in which we have seen it included is that of Malone at Oxford, where, as already stated, the sole remaining copy is deposited. From it our transcript has been made. The tract was evidently hastily and carelessly printed for a bookseller who published many humorous works, and the errors of the press, especially in the later sheets, are numerous, and in some places not easy of correction.

We apprehend that Armin was, at this date, struggling with poverty, and that he wrote “The Nest of Ninnies” mainly to supply his necessities. Such was certainly the case with his next production, which came out in the following year, 1609. It was called “The Italian Taylor and his Boy,” and is a translation, in verse, of novel 5, night viii. of the *Notti Piacevoli* of Straparola. Armin acknowledges it to be from the Italian, though he does not add the name of his author. On the title-page he still states himself to be “Servant to the king’s most excellent Majesty;” and no doubt he yet belonged to the company, though an actor of, perhaps, thirty years’ standing. In the preliminary matter he more than once confesses his poverty, and that he wrote the tract in hopes of raising money : we may therefore presume that he had, at this date, but a very small, or perhaps no share as proprietor in the Globe and Blackfriars theatres, for which Shakespeare was writing in

the plenitude of his popularity, and which must then have been profitable undertakings.

In his address *Ad lectorem hic et ubique*, before “The Italian Taylor and his Boy,” Armin speaks of his “Nest of Ninnies,” which had been printed in the year preceding; and the dedication to Lord and Lady Haddington contains the following interesting mention of a poet of considerable celebrity, who had been the early friend of Spenser, to whom Chapman dedicated his “Shadow of Night,” in 1594, who was living in retirement in 1609, and who was in such distress, not many years afterwards, that he was glad to accept from Edward Alleyn, the founder of Dulwich College, very trifling charitable donations.

“There is (says Armin to Lady Haddington) under the glister of your starre a poetical light, which shines not in the world as it is wisht, but yet the worth of its lustre is known: he hath remayned in Sussex many yeares; and I beseech God and your noble Father (the Earle) he may live and die beloved so still. It is (if I speake darkely) that pen-pleading poet (grae for yeares and knowledge) Maister Mathew Roiden: I doe stand to his censure, to second yours both; and I doubt not but he will plead for my weaknes in this worke, knowing that *Non cuivis homini cantingit adire Corinthum.*”

The Earl of Fitzwalter, the father of Lady Haddington, did not die until 1629; but, some years before that event, Matthew Roiden, or Roydon, must have been reduced to extreme want: he was relieved by Alleyn in 1618 by the gift of eightpence, and in 1622 he made another appeal to his charity, and obtained sixpence. (See “Memoirs of Alleyn,” p. 155.)

In the same year that “The Italian Taylor and his Boy” came out, Armin printed a dramatic piece, with

the title of “The History of the Two Maids of More Clacke, with the Life and simple manners of John in the Hospital.” It purports to have been acted by the Children of the King’s Revels, although Armin, as the title-page asserts, was “Servant to the King’s most excellent Majesty.” Whether he was alive in 1615 does not appear, but in that year was published another play called “The Valiant Welchman,” the plot of which the Editor of the *Biographia Dramatica* gravely informs us was taken from Milton’s *History of England*, which was, of course, not published until many years afterwards. The initials “R. A. Gent” only are upon the title-page of “The Valiant Welshman,” and it may be doubted whether Armin had any concern in the authorship of it. It was reprinted in 1663.

The following tract will be found to contain the names of several fools and jesters not elsewhere commemorated. The most celebrated in the list is William Somer, Sommers, or Summers, the favourite of Henry VIII., who figures in, at least, two plays of the time of Shakespeare — Thomas Nash’s “Summers Last Will and Testament,” acted in 1593, and printed in 1600; and Samuel Rowley’s “When you see me you know me,” founded upon incidents in the life and reign of Henry VIII., acted about 1604, and printed in 1605. He was a jester of a different character to the others, inasmuch as he was an artificial fool — a witty person, affecting simplicity for the sake of affording amusement. Jesters of this class were often entertained in families where mere idiots would not have been tolerated; but they had their origin in the license allowed to the tongues of

“innocents,” as they were sometimes, for the sake of distinction, called. William Sommers was a historical personage, and is so treated by Samuel Rowley in his play, which is a singular picture of manners, and of the mode in which, just after the death of Elizabeth, her father was exhibited at the public theatres. In this view, “When you see me you know me” may be said to have a direct relation to the “Henry the Eighth” of our great dramatist, and may well deserve to be hereafter reprinted by the Shakespeare Society.

We have to thank Mr. Thoms for some very useful notes, which are distinguished from the rest by his initials.

J. P. C.

A

# NEST OF NINNIES

---

Simply of themselves without  
Compound.

*Stultorum plena sunt omnia.*

BY ROBERT ARMIN.

*LONDON:*

Printed by T. E. for John Deane. 1608.



To the most true and rightly compleat in all good gifts and graces, the generous gentlemen of Oxenford, Cambridge, and the Innes of Court. Ro. Armin greeting.

You first borne brothers of the highest skies,  
Twins of best Joue by blest Memoria,  
From whom our glories and our liuings rise ;  
Brothers and sonnes to him that brings the day  
(Phœbus) whom none can see but by your eyes ;  
You only, and you euer I shall pray,  
And praysing euer that your sunnie shine  
May beautifie our GLOBE in euery line.

But what higher straine am I in, when your selues haue set  
my tongue lower ?

Most liberall and well affected, I am brazed by your fauours,  
made bould in your ostended curtesies, I haue seene you both  
wayes, as the hare that squints on either side—marry to looke  
fore-right I cannot, because judgement out-lookes mee. But  
as the philosopher squened at his curst wife in some feare,  
because of quiet, so I, fearefull, presume not to look into the  
milstone, least I grauell my eye sight. I haue seene the stars  
at midnight in your societies, and might have commenst, like  
an asse as I was ; but I lackt liberty in that, yet I was admitted  
in Oxford to be of Christs Church, while they of Al-soules  
gauē ayme : such as knew me remember my measures. I  
promised them to proue mad ; and I thinke I am so, else I  
would not meddle with folly so deepeley, but similis similem,

&c. If I doe offend, as I make no question, my pardon is signed, I doubt not—marry there is an execution yet behinde, and I long till I passe my plundge, that is censure. They say he goes in collours, as one strangely affected, and I goe in motly, making my own cloakebag ready. If hee proue porter, and beare with me, I shall rest behoulding ; if not, I am his martir, and suffer extreamly. I haue, gentlemen, in this booke gone through Ireland ; if I doe sticke in the bogs, help me out—not with your good skene head me ; that's the way to spoyle all, but with your goad pricke me on the true tract. And you of our Innes of Court, nimble braind brands that burne without smoking, I challenge of you neighbourly neerenesse, and therefore dare say sumus in toto. If you should flie out like rancke riders, or rebell like the Irish, twere much, because my presumption challenges better being in you. But since all is one, and one all that's car'd for, singleness hath such regard, I make a question, which if you easily answer I am satisfied, otherwise buried quicke : how euer, my loue looses not his labour—an universitie fire in the winter, and a temple pot may warme good licour, in which you may drink to me, and ile pledge you. I may liue to make you amends, if not no more but this — such a one died in your debt, and that's a countertenor many a one sings. Vale, as far vide and vici let Cæsar at his next arriue, so salute you.

Yours euer affected,

RO. ARMIN.

## A NEST OF NINNIES.

---

The World, wanton sick, as one surfeiting on sinne (in morning pleasures, noone banquets, after riots, night moriscoes, midnights modicoms, and abundance of trash trickt up to all turbulent reuellings) is now leaning on her elbow, deuising what doctour may deliuier her, what phisicke may free her, and what antidotes may antissipate so dangerous a dolemma : shee now begins to grow bucksome as a lightning before death ; and, gad, she will — riches, her chamberlaine, could not keepe her in ; beauty, her bed-fellow, was bold to perswade her ; and sleepy securitie, mother of all mischiefe—tut, her prayers was but meere prattle : out she would, tucks up her trinkets, like a Dutch tannikin sliding to market on the ise, and away she flings—and whither thinck you ?—

Not to the Law, that was too loud—  
Not to the Church, that was too proud.  
Not to the Court, that was too stately—  
Nor to the Cittie, she was there lately.  
Nor to the Campe, that was to keene—  
No, nor to the Country, where seldom seene—

shee daines her a friendly eye ; but, of all, into a philosophers cell, who, because he was alwayes poking at Fortune with his forefinger, the wise wittely namde him Sotto, as one besotted —a grumbling sir ; one that was wise enough, and fond enough, and solde all for a glasse prospective, because he would wisely see into all men but himselfe, a fault generall in most ; but

such was his, who thus busied, was tooke napping by the weale publike, who smiles upon him with a wapper eye, a iealous countenance, and bids him all haile ! Mistresse (sayes Sotto) I will not say welcome, because you come ill to him that would bee alone ; but, since you are come, looke for such entertainement as my folly fits you with, that is, sharp sauce with bitter dyet ; no swetnes at al, for that were to mingle your pils with sugar : no, I am all one, winter in the head, and frost in the foot ; no summer in me but my smiles, and that as soone gone as smiles. The bauble I play with is mens estates, which I so tumble from hand to hand, that, weary with it, I see (gluttingly and grieuedly, yet mingled with smiles too) in my glasse prospective what shall become of it. The World, curling her locks with her fingers, and anone scratching her braine with her itching pin, as one little regarding, answeres, What then ? Marry, sayes Hodge, ile show thee. See, World, in whose bosome euer hath abundance beene poured, what thy imps of impiety bee ; for as they (I) all for the most part, as these which I will present to thee in my glasse prospective : mark them well, and see what thou breedest in thy wantonnesse, sixe children like thee, not the father that begat them—Where were they nursed ? in folly : fed with the flottin milke of nicetie and wantonnesse, curdled in thy wombe of water and bloud, vnseasoned, because thy mother bearing temper was euer vntrue, farre from the rellich of right breede ; and it is hard that the taste of one apple should distaste the whole lumpe of this defused chaios. But marke me and my glasse : see into some (and in them thy selfe) whom I haue discride, or describde, these sixe parts of folly in thee ; thou shalt see them as cleare as day, how mystic thy clouds be, and what rancknesse raines from them.

The World, queasie stomackt, as one fed with the earth's nectar and delicates, with the remembrance of her own appetite, squinies at this, and lookes as one scorning ; yet beholding what will follow, at length espies a tall blacke man, gearing

like himselfe, a foole in motley, muckinder hunge, euer and anon wipes his nose ; at whose girdle hangde a small black jack of a quart, his vsual draft ; his finger on his tongue, as if he blamde Nature that cut not the strings of it in more large manner, but hindred by defect, hee still did gesse at wisedome, though seldome attaining it. Well, he was gouty, bigge, poste legged, and of yeeres something many, as in the right sequell followeth :—

This foole was tall, his face small,  
His beard was big and blacke ;  
His necke was short, inclind to sport,  
Was this our dapper Jack.  
Of nature curst, yet not the worst,  
Was nastie, giuen to sware ;  
Toylesome euer, his endeaour  
Was delight in beare.  
Goutie, great, of conceit  
Apt, and full of fauor ;  
Curst, yet kinde, and inclinde  
To spare the wise mans labour.  
Knowne to many, loude of any,  
Cause his trust was truth ;  
Seene in toyes, apt to joyes.  
To please with tricks of youth ;  
Writh'd i'th knees, yet who sees  
Faults that hidden be ?  
Calfe great, in whose conceit  
Lay much game and glee.  
Bigge i'th small, ancle all,  
Footed broad and long ;  
In motly cotes, goes Jacke Oates,  
Of whom I sing this song.

The World, ready to disgorge at so homely a present, askt if it were possible such breathde hers to commaunde ? Oh,

saith our philosophicall Hodge, beare his iests, and what an vnknowne habite liues in him, then returne iudgement. Marke our application.

Jack Oates, sitting at cardes all alone, was dealing to himselfe at vide ruffe (for that was the game he ioyed in) and as he spide a knaue—Ah, knaue, art there? quoth he. When he spide a king—King, by your leauue, quoth he. If hee spied a queene—Queene Richard art come? quoth he; and would kneele downe, and bid God blesse her majestie (meaning, indeede, the then queene, whom he heard Sir William Hollis, his maister, so much to pray for). But heere is the jest: Jack, as I say, being at cardes all alone, spying a knaue, and saying, Ah, knaue, art there? a simple seruingman being in the hall, waighting his maisters comming, walking by, and hearing him say so, thought he had called him knaue, tooke the matter in dudgeen, and miscalled the foole. Another seruingman, more foolish then both, took Jack's part, so that in short time they two fell together by the eares; who, being parted, Jack Oates giues them each one a hand, and so takes them into the buttery to drinke. The knight comes in: seeing the hall not yet quiet, askt the matter. Jack comes—Ile tell thee, Willy, quoth hee. As I was a playing at cardes, one seeing I wonne all I playd for, would needes haue the knaue from mee, which, as very a knaue as hee seeing, would needes beare him knaue for company; so bid them both welcome to thy house—I haue bin to intreat the knaue, thy butler, to make them drinke. I, says Sir William; and you, like a knaue, made them fall out. I, answered Jack, and your drinke, Sir Knaue, made them friends. Sir William, laughing, departed.

Newes came to Sir William that such a nobleman was comming to his house: great prouision was made for his welcome; and, amongst all, Jack Oates put on his new motly coate, cleane muckender, and his new shooes. Much preparation was made, which were too long to tell; for, Ile assure ye, it was one of the greatest earles in England, vnfitt to name here: but the

knight and his ladie met him at the gate to entertaine him. Sir William, with a low congy, saluted him ; the good lady, as is the courtly custom, was kist of this noble man. Jack Oates, seeing him kisse his ladie, on the sodaine giues the earle a sound box on the eare. Knaue (quoth he) kisse Sir Willie's wife ? The good knight, amazed at this, caused him to be whipt. But the kinde noble man, knowing simplicitie the ground of his errour, would not suffer it, but, putting it vp, left him, and entred the house. Jack, seeing they were sad, and he had done amisse, had this wit in simplicitie to shadow it : he comes after and askt the earle wher his hand was ? Here (quoth he)—with that he shakes him by it, and sayes, I mistooke it before, knowing not your eare from your hand, being so like one another. Jack thought hee had mended the matter ; but now he was whipt indeede, and had his payment altogether. Thus fooles, thinking to be wise, become flat foolish : but all is one, Jack neuer repented him.

At a Christmas time, when great logs furnish the hall fire—when brawne is in season, and, indeede, all reveling is regarded, this gallant knight kept open house for all commers, where beefe, beere, and bread was no niggard. Amongst all the pleasures prouided, a noyse of minstrells and a Lincolnshire bagpipe was prepared — the minstrels for the great chamber, the bagpipe for the hall—the minstrells to serue vp the knights meate, and the bagpipe for the common dauncing. Jack could not endure to bee in the common hall ; for, indeede, the foole was a little proudly minded, and, therefore, was altogether in the great chamber, at my ladies or Sir Williams elbow. One time, being very melancholy, the knight, to rouse him vp, saide, Hence, foole ! Ile haue another foole ; thou shalt dwell no longer with me. Jack to this answered little ; though, indeede, ye could not anger him worse. A gentleman at the boord answers, If it please you, sir, Ile bring ye another foole soone. I pray ye do (quoth the knight) and he shall be welcome. Jack fell a crying, and departed mad and angry down into the

great hall ; and, being strong armed (as before I described him), caught the bagpipes from the piper, knockt them about his pate, that he laid the fellow for dead on the ground, and, all broken, carries the pipes vp into the great chamber, and layes them on the fire. The knight, knowing by Jack that something was amisse, sendes downe to see. Newes of this jest came ; the knight, angry (but to no purpose, for he loued the foole aboue all, and that the household knew, else Jack had paid for it, for the common peoples dauncing was spoiled) sent downe Jack, and bad him out of his sight. Jack cries, Hang Sir Willy, hang Sir Willy, and departes.

Sir William, not knowing how to amend the matter, caused the piper to be carried to bed, who was very ill, and said, I would now giue a gold noble for a foole : indeede, to anger him throughly, one of the minstrels whispers a gentleman in the eare, and said, If it pleased him, hee would ; whereat the gentleman laught. The knight demaunded the reason of his laughing. I pray you tell me (quoth hee)—for laughing could neuer come in a better time — the foole hath madded me. If it please you (sayes the gentleman), here is a good fellow will goe and attire him in one of his coates, and can in all poynts behauie himselfe naturally, like such a one. It is good (sayes the knight) and I prethee, good fellow, about it ; and one goe call Jack Oates hether, that wee may hold him with talk in the meane time.

The simple minstrell, thinking to worke wonders, as one ouerjoyed at the good opportunitie, threw his fiddle one way, his stick another, and his case the third way, and was in such a case of joy, that it was no boot to bid him make hast : but, proud of the knights fauor, away he flings, as if he went to tak possession of some great lordship ; but, what ere he got by it, I am sure his fiddle, with the fall, fell in pieces, which grieued his maister so, that, in loue and pittie, he laughed till the water ran downe his cheeke. Beside, this good knight was like to

keepe a bad Christmas, for the bagpipes and the musicke went to wracke—the one burnt, and the other broken.

In comes Jack Oates, and (being merry) told the knight and the rest that a country-wench in the hall had eaten garlicke, and there was seuentene men poysoned with kissing her : for it was his vse to jest thus. By and by comes in a messenger (one of the knights men) to tell him that such a gentleman had sent his foole to dwell with him. Hee is welcome, sayes the knight, for I am weary of this foole : goe bid him come in —Jack, bid him welcome. They all laught to see Jack's colour come and goe, like a wise man ready to make a good end. What say you to this ? saies the knight. Not one word sayes Jack. They tinged with a knife at the bottome of a glasse, as toulling the bell for the foole, who was speechlesse and would dye (then which nothing could more anger him); but now the thought of the new come foole so much moued him, that he was as dead as a doore nayle—standing on tip-toe, looking toward the door to behold ariall, that he would put his nose out of joint.

By and by enters my artificiall foole in his old cloaths, making wry mouthes, dauncing, and looking a squint : who, when Jack beheld, sodainely he flew at him, and so violently beate him, that all the table rose, but could scarce get him off. Well, off he was at length : the knight caused the broken ones to be by themselues. My poore minstrell, with a fall, had his head broke to the skull against the ground, his face scratcht ; that which was worst of all his left eye put out, and withall so sore bruised, that he could neyther stand nor goe. The knight caused him to bee laide with the pyper, who was also hurt in the like conflict, who lackt no good looking to, because they miscarried in the knights seruice : but euer after Jack Oates could not endure to heare any talke of another foole to be there, and the knight durst not make such a motion. The pyper and the minstrel, being in bed together, one cryed, O ! his backe and face ; the other, O ! his face and eye : the one cryed O his pype ! the other, O his fiddle ! Good

mussicke or broken consorts, they agree well together ; but when they were well, they were contented for their paines : they had both money and the knights fauour. Here you haue heard the difference twixt a flat foole naturall, and a flat foole artificiall ; one that did his kinde, and the other who foolishly followed his owne minde : on which two is written this Rime :—

Naturall fooles are prone to selfe conceipt :  
Foolees artificiall, with their wits lay wayte  
To make themselues foolees, liking the disguise,  
To feede their owne mindes, and the gazers eyes.  
Hee that attempts daunger, and is free,  
Hurting himselfe, being well, cannot see,  
Must with the fidler, heere, weare the foolees coates,  
And bide his pennance sign'd him by Jack Oates.  
All such, say I, that use flat foolerie,  
Beare this, beare more ; this flat foole's companie.

Jack Oates could neuer abide the cooke, by reason that he would scald him out of the kitchen. Upon a time he had a great charge from his Lady to make her a quince pie of purpose for Sir Williams owne eating, which the cooke endeavored to doe, and sent to Lincolne of purpose to the apothecaries for choyse quinces. Jack, being at this charge giuen, thought to be euen with the cooke, and waited the time when this Pie was made. It hapned so, the cooke could get no quinces : my lady (for it was the knight's desire to haue one) sent about to Boston, and all the chiefe townes, but all in vaine — the season serued not ; but, rather then Sir William should be vnfurnished, sent to Lincolne againe to buy vp many quinces, ready preserved at pothecaries, which she had, though with great cost. The knight, asking his Lady for his pie, she told him with much adoe she had preuailed, but with no little paines, in seeking quinces ; for she

was faine to buy them ready preserued, and to make a vertue of necessity that way. Sir William, seeing it was so, said it should bee as well eaten, and sent for his friends, gentlemen and others of no small account. There was other great cheare prouided to furnish vp this sumptuous feast, and as he inuited them, hee tolde them it was a quince pie, which he would haue eaten. The day drew on, and the gentiles were come, and all was in a redinesse, and still Jack forgat not the pie, but stood faintly sicke, and refused his meate : the knight, sory that his best dish fayled him, made no small account of his well fare, askte him, Jack, sayes hee, where lyes thy paine ? In my mouth, sayes hee (meaning, indeede, his mouth hung for the quince pie.) A barber was sent for from a market towne hard by, who searcht his mouth, and could finde no cause of paine : but Sir William, thinking the foole wanted wit to tell his grieve (though not wit to play the thiefe) had the barber depart, asking Jacke what he would eate ? he sayd, nothing. What he would drinke ? he sayd, nothing ; which made Sir William doubt much of his health, refusing his liquour when it was usually his practice, and the knight joyed in it too : askit him if he would lie downe ? still answering no, but would stand by the kitchen fire. The knight, that never came there but he did some exployte, forgetting that, led him by the hand (so much he made of him) and bad the cooke see he wanted nothing. Jack, standing still, groan'd and sayd, If he dyed, he would forgive all the world but the cooke. Hang, foole, (sayes the cooke) I care not for thee : die to-morrow if thou wilt, and so followed his business. They knockt to the dresser, and the dinner went up. Jack had a sheepe's eye in the oven : anone the second course came, the pie was drawne, set by, and among other backt meates was to be sent up ; but, wanting sugar, stept aside to the spicerie to fetch it ; and Jack, in the meantime, catcheth the pie and claps it under his coate, and so runs through the hall into the yard, where was a broade moate : and, as he ran, the

hot pie burned his belly. I, sayes Jack, are ye so hot, Sir Willies pie? Ile quence ye anone Sir Willies pie, sayes he ; and straight, very subtilly, leapes into the moate up to the arm-pits, and there stood eating the pie. The cooke comes in, misses the pie, withal misses Jack, cryes out, The pie ! Sir Williams pie was gone, the author of that feast was gone, and they all were undone. A hurly burly went through the house, and one comes and whispers the lady with the newes : she tels Sir William how Jack Oates had stolen the pie. Jack was searcht for, and anon found in the moate. It was told the knight where the foole was eating it. Gentlemen (quoth he) we are disfurnished of our feast ; for Jack, my foole, is in my moate, up to the arme-pits, eating of the pie. They laught, and ran to the windows to see the jest : then they might see Jack eate, the cooke call, the people hallow, but to no purpose. Jack fed, and, feeding greedily, (more to anger the cooke, than disappoint Sir William) ever as he burnt his mouth with hast, dipt the pie in the water to coole it. O ! sayes the cooke, it is Sir William's owne pie, sirra. O ! sayes Jack hang thee and Sir Willy too : I care not ; it is mine now. Save Sir William some, sayes one ; save my lady some, sayes another. By James, not a bit, sayes Jack ; and eate up all, to the wonder of the beholders, who never knew him eate so much before, but drink ten times more. At length out comes Jack dropping dry, and goes to get fire to dry him : the knight and the rest all laught a good at the jest : not knowing how to amend it, Sir William sends for the cooke, who came up with a sorrowful heart, and, lamentably complaining, said it was the knights fault for placing him in the kitchen, where he never was but hee did like villany. The knight, not satisfied with the cookes answere, presently discharges him of his service, and sent him to live elsewhere. Goe, sayes he ; trusse up your trinkets and be gone. The cooke, seeing no remedy, departed.

Jack, being dry, up he comes ; and, knowing he had offended,

tels a jest (for it was his manner so to doe) how a yong man brake his codpiece point, and let all be seene that God sent him, or such fooleries, but that was not enough ; and to chide him was to make of things worse then 'twas, and to no purpose neither. Sir William demaunded why hee eate the pye ? Because I had a stomacke, sayes Jack. Would nought else serve, sayes the knight, but my pye ? No, Willy, sayes he, thou would not be angry then, and the cooke had not been turned away : but all is well — thou art rich enough to buy more. The knight, perceiving the fooles envie, sent for the cooke, and bid him enjoy his place againe. So all parties [were] well pleased but the yong big-bellied woman, who, perchance, longed for this long looked for pie ; but if she did, though long lookt for comes at last, yet they shoothe short that ayme to hit this marke, for Jack Oates had eaten the pie and served himselfe. This was a flat foole ; yet, now and then, a blind man may hit a crow, and you know a fooles boult is soone shot : out it goes, happen how it will. Had Jack kept his owne counsell, the cooke had beene still out of service, and [he] had been revenged, but now, being in his place againe, may live to cry quittance for the quince pye.

These, quoth the World, are pretty toyes. I, quoth the philosopher, but marke the applyance. By Jack Oates is merrally meant many described like him ; though not fooles naturall, yet most artificiall : they carde hence what their parents spin, and doe such apish tricks, that rapine, ruine, and a thousand inconveniences, follow. By the knight is meant maintaineres of foolery : by the hall, the inne where the cards of vanity causeth many to be bewitcht ; as appears in the serving men, who, busie in others braules, are as easily made friends, as they were set together by the ears. By the second is meant [those who] reach at stars, ayming at honour, lighting sometime on the eare of memory, but ill taken because badly meant—is rewarded with a deserved whipping. By the third is called to question most that musically fret their time out in idle baubling, and will become

artificiall fooles to outbraue fooles indeede, but stick often in their owne quick-sands, and are got out with repentance. But the fourth and last shews the deuouring of deouotions dyet : how euer come by, yet they will stand up to the arme-pits in daunger rather than to lack their wills, to slacke or rebate the edge of their appetites. With this the World, a little humde and haide, said shee was not pleased that such liued, and did promise some amendment, but desired to see further.

Now our philosophical poker pokte on, and poynted to a strange shew ; the fat foole, not so tall, but this fat foole as low, whose description runs in meeter thus :—

This fat foole was a Scot borne, brought vp  
In Sterlin, twenty miles from Edinborough,  
Who, being but young, was for the king caught vp ;  
Ser'ud this king's father all his life time through.  
A yard high and a nayle, no more, his stature ;  
Smooth fact, fayre spoken, yet vnkinde by nature.  
Two yards in compasse and a nayle, I reade,  
Was he at forty yeeres, since when I heard not  
Nor of his life or death, and further heede,  
Since I neuer read, I looke not, nor regard not.  
But what at that time Iemy Camber was,  
As I haue heard Ile write, and so let passe.  
His head was small, his hayre long on the same :  
One eare was bigger then the other farre ;  
His fore-head full, his eyes shinde like a flame,  
His nose flat, and his beard small, yet grew square ;  
His lips but little, and his wit was lesse,  
But wide of mouth, few teeth, I must confesse.  
His middle thicke, as I haue said before ;  
Indifferent thighs and knees, but very short ;  
His legs be square, a foot long and no more ;  
Whose very presence made the king much sport.  
And a pearle spoone he still wore in his cap,  
To eate his meate he loued, and got by hap.

A pretty little foote, but a big hand,  
On which he ever wore rings rich and good.  
Backward well made as any in that land,  
Though thicke ; and he did come of gentle bloud :  
But of his wisdome ye shall quickly heare  
How this fat foole was made on every where.

The World, smiling at this rime, describing so unseemly a portackt, gaue leave to the rest, and desired greatly to be satisfied with something done, as one longing to know what so round a trust lump could performe. The poking art's maister tels his doing thus.

When the kings and nobles of Scotland had welcomed Jemy Camber to the court, (who was their countryman, borne in Sterlin, but twenty miles from Edinborough, this kings birthowne, as Greenwich was our late queenes) they reasoned with him to understand his wit, which indeed was just none at all, yet merry and pleasing, wherat the king rejoiced : and, seeing he was so fat, caused his doctors and phisitians to minister to him ; but phisick could not alter nature, and he would neuer be but a S. Vincent's turnip, thicke and round. Wherefore the doctors persuaded his grace that the purging of the sea was good for him. Well, nothing was undone that might be done to make Jemy Camber a tall, little, slender man, when yet he lookt like a Norfolke dumpling, thicke and short : well, to Leith was he sent, which is the harbour towne of such ships as arrive at Edinborough ; neerer they cannot come, which is some mile from the cittie. To sea they put in a ship, at whose departure they discharged ordinance, as one that departed from the land with the kings fauour : the Earle Huntly was sent with him to sea to accompany him, so high he was esteemed with the king, who, hearing the ordinance goe off, would aske what doe they now ? Marry, says the Earle, they shoot at our enemies. O, saies hee, hit, I pray God ! Againe they discharge. What doe they now ? quoth hee. Marry, now the

enimie shoots at us. O, misse, I pray God ! (sayes Jemy Camber). So euer after it was a jest in the Scottish court. Hit or misse, quoth Jemy Camber ; that if a maide had a barne, and did penance at the crosse, in the high towne of Edinborough, What hath shee done ? did she hit or misse ? She hath hit, sayes the other : better she had mist, sayes the first ; and so long time after this jest was in memory—yea, I have heard it myselfe, and some will talke of it at this day. Well, to sea they put, on a faire, sunshine day, where Jemy stood fearful of every calme billow, where it was no boote to bid him tell what the ship was made of, for he did it dououtly. But see the chance : a sodaine flaw or gust rose ; the winds held strong east and by west, and the ship was in great danger, insomuch as the Earle, maister and all, began to feare the weather. By and by a stronger gale blew, and split their maine-maste, and gaue their ship a mighty leake, insomuch as the crack made them all screeck out : which Jemy, hearing, was almost dead with feare. Some fell to pumping, others on their knees to praying ; but the fat foole, seeing themselves in this daunger, thought there was no way but one with them, and was half dead with feare : in the end the winde turned, and the raging of the sea began to cease. I warrant thee now (quoth the maister) Jemy, wee shall not bee drowned. I, will ye warrant us ? sayes the foole. I, sayes the maister, Ile giue thee my ship for thy chaine, if we bee drowned : beare witnesse, my lord, sayes hee, a plaine bargaine ; and with that threw the maister his chaine, who would have given it to the Earle, but joy of their escape made him delight in the jest, and therefore the maister enjoyed his bargaine. With much adoe they attainted thether againe, where the king, feareful before, awayted their landing now ; and, seeing Jemy not a jot lesse of body then hee was (only lightened of his chaine) How now ? quoth hee ; how dost thou, man ? O ! sayes Jemy, well now, king ; but till had not the maister beene, who warranted our liues for my chaine, the best bargaine that euer I made, for no way could

I haue been a looser. How? sayes the king? Marry, Ile tell thee king, quoth hee: say we had beene drowned, his ship was forfeit to me for my chaine: Earle Huntley was a witness to the bargaine; and now we are not drowned, for my chaine did warrant our liues of the maister. Nay, says the earle, not our liues; none but yours, Jemy: our liues was as safe warranted without a chaine. With this the foole had some feeling of sence, and on a sodaine cryed out mainly for his chaine, which was restored to him by the maister; but hee lost nothing by that, for he attayned to a suit, as the story sayes, that he had beene three yeeres about. Thus the king and nobles went to Edinborough, merrily talking of their feare and welfare.

Jemy, this fat foole, used every day to goe from the abbey, in the low towne by the hill, into the citie of Edinborough; and one euening, above the rest, he met with a broken virgin, one that had a barne (as there they are known by their attire) wearing a loose kerchiefe, hanging downe backward: she, I saye, cried sallets, as thus—Buy any cibus salletea? Jemy, desirous of sallets, calles her to him. Lasse, sayes he, what shall I giue thee for a good sallet? Faire sire, sayes the wench (for shee knew him for the kings foole, and she could not please him better then to call him faire sir) you giue me an atchison. Now he, hauing nothing but sixe French crownes about him, Canst thou change mee a crowne? sayes he. Yea, sire, sayes shee. He gives her a crowne, and shee gives him a sallet for it, and shee went her way.

Jemy thinks it was much to give a crowne for that, for which shee did demand but an atchison, which in our money is but three farthings: he runnes after and sayes, she had his fayrest crowne; but, sayes hee, giue mee that, and take your choice of these, thinking by that deuise to get the first crowne againe. Will ye chaunge? sayes the lasse: I, sayes the foole; so she takes all the fие, and giues him one againe, and so laughing at his folly goes her way. It was in vaine

to exclayme, for they will hold fast what they get ; but my fat foole goes home to eate his sallet, and inuites the king to a deare dish, and made him laugh heartily at the jest. The king calls for winiger to his sallet, because his sweet meate should haue sower sauce, and perswaded him it was well bought : otherwise, if the foole had repented his bargaine, it was his manner to try for his money againe ; yet, with it all, the court could not quiet him.

Betwixt Edinborough Abbey, the king's place, and Leeth, there stands an euene plaine greene meddow, in which the king used most of his sports : amongst which he rode thereto one day to run at the glove, or the ring, as his grace should please. With him rides Jemy Camber on a trotting mule : it was then a maruailous hot day. O ! saies Jemy, how cold the wether is (so wise was hee that hee scarce knew hot from colde). No, sayes the king, it is hot ; looke how I sweat. No, sayes Jemy, the sunne blowes very colde. No, sayes the king, the winde shines very hot. The foole was almost angry to be crossed, and said hee would be hanged at night, if hee did sweat that day. With this merry talke they rode on ; but one of the king's footmen hearing this, told the king at their returne hee would make his grace laugh heartily. So the king very gallantly rammed that time, and neuer missed the glove, and so did the lords ; which Jemy seeing, said it was nothing to doe. The king bade him runne ; he did so, but the gloue lay still, and Jemy could not doe it. The king's footman (that matcht to doe him a good turne) said Jemy could doe it better blind-fold. What, can he ? quoth the king : I will neuer beleue it. You shall see else, quoth hee ; whereat Jemy maruelled much that without sight a man could doe that, which with all his might and sight he could not doe, was desirous to make tryall ; so was blinded with a scarfe, while another tooke up the gloue, and was ready for the jest. Jemy runs : Now for my maisters, saies hee. They all shout aloud and cry rarely well done, and one unblindes him, while another puts the glove on the speare.

So simple hee was, that hee thought it was strange, and bragged all that day not a little. The king did alight, and went to drink wine at the Lord Hume's house, and Jemy went with him, while the footeman had time to worke his will, and mingling a conceit with butter (which I will not name, least some one should practise the like) clapt it under the saddle ; and, as they rode to Edinborough, sayes the king, what say you to the weather now, Jemy ? Mee thinks it is hotter than it was. Nay, it is colder, sayes he, for I begin to sweat.

The trotting of this mule made the mingled confection lather so, that it got into his breeches, and wrought up to the crowne of his head, and to the sole of his foote, and so he sweat profoundly. Still he whipt and he whipt, sweating more and more : they laught a good to see him in that taking. Now you must be hanged, says the king, as your bargaine was, for you sweat very much. What remedie ? sayes hee. I am content to be hanged, but while I live after Ile never beleue cold weather will make one sweat. No more will I, sayes the king, but hot weather will. Hot or colde, sayes Jemy, I am warme now, I am sure : I would I were ouer head and eares in some riuier to coole mee. So simple hee was that he knew not wether it was the sunne or the winde made him sweat. At night the king caused him to be washed and perfumed, yet he was scarce sweet twenty days after. Thus this fat foole chaft, but not in his owne grease.

Jemy, who was, as you have heard, a tall low man, and was swift of foote, on a time challenged the king's best footeman, for a wager, to run with him from the abbey, up the hill, to Cannegate (which stood entering to Edenborough, as Ludgate doth to London, and the King's place about Temple-barre.) The king being told of this challenge thought it would be good sport to see it performed, still perswaded Jemy to dare his footeman, who before denyed him, and knew fooles would talk any thing, though far unfit to perform any thing. Still the king would say he was made nimble to runne, and askt

euyer nobleman's judgement, who likewise soothed the king : it was so that they made him beleue himself swift of foote, that I think in the end Jemy perswaded himselfe that none but fat men could run well, and nimble men, being light, would fall soonest ; considering that light things, being of small substance, not feeling themselves, would surely fall. But here is the sport—the footeman, seeing it was the king's pleasure to see the wager tryed, dared him, which made Jemy mad, that he would run with him from Edinborough to Bar-wicke (which was forty miles) in one day ; a thing as impossible as to pull down a church in one houre, and to build it againe in another : for Jemy was lost in the king's company once of purpose, but fие miles from the city, at the Earle Morton's castle at da Keth, and they thought hee would neuer haue come home againe : when the king heard euyer houre hee was comming, and still as hee entreated euyer passenger to let him ride, by the king's watch in the high-way they had warning giuen to the contrary, for he was seauen days going the fieu myle : then, judge how long hee would be a running fortie. You will muse how hee did for meate all the time. Ile tell you how : he fasted all day, and went supperlesse to bed ; but being in his first sound sleepe, meate was brought and laide by him, and a choppin of wine (for so they call it there) which made him at his coming to court tell the king that heauen was gentler than earthly men [who] would shew him no favour, neyther to ride nor feede him, when he was euyer night cast into a sound sleepe ; then when he wakt hee was sure of meate from heauen to feede on, when the meate came from the king's kitchen at Edenborough Abbey.

But to goe forward with our challenge. The king said the first word should stand, and on Jemie's head he laid a thousand marks : the Lady Carmichell, that laught to heare all this, wagered as much on the footeman's head. The day was appointed the next morning, being Thursday, to begin at fieu a'clock in the afternoone, in the coole of the euening, and

cury one to his race must make him ready. Jemy, as he had seen the king's footeman doe, washt his feet with beere, and soakt them in butter; so all that night and the next day there was nothing but Jemy and his prouision to that great journey. The time came—Jemy was stript into his shirt, trust round for the purpose: the footeman and hee begins to runne; the footeman makes shew of great labour, and the foole made the substance, for he was quickly in a sweat. They pufte and they blowede; they ran as swifte as a pudding would creepe. Jemy thought himselfe no smal foole to outrun the footeman, and did in his minde assure himselfe to win. The king laughs to see the toyle he made, and the footeman made great shew and little paines. By and by, Jemy calls for drinck; and the king, loath hee should haue any harme with labour, caused him to haue a mixed drincke to cast him into a sleepe; who, when he had drunck, as hee ran on his wager, he dropt downe in the streeete, as heauy as if a leaden plummet, that makes a jack turne a spit, had fallen on the earth dab. There hee slept, and was carryed by commaund to the top of the hill, and laid downe againe: there hee slept halfe an houre, and when he wakt he remembered his journey. Seeing people still about him, up hee gets, away he jogs, and neuer lookes behinde him; and seeing Cannegate so neare him, had not the wit to wonder how hee came there, but laid hold on the ring of the gate, and staid to bee seene.

By and by the footeman comes sweating, with water poured on his face and head. O, my heart! sayes hee. O, my legs! sayes Jemy: I will not doe so much for all Scotland againe.

Well, Jemy cries Victory! victory! and there was the king's coach at hand to carry him home, for himselfe he neuer could haue gone, had his life lain on it. But when hee came home, the bragge hee made, the glory hee got, how hee outran the footman (and ran so easily as if he had been a sleepe) was wonderfull. I, it was sport enough for the king, a month after, to heare him tell it. Well, the king wonne the wager, he

thought, and that was honour sufficient for him. Not three days after hee bad the king put away all his footemen, and hee would serue his turne to any place. The king thanked him for his good will, and said, when his neede was great, hee would make bold to use him. So Jemy, this fat foole, euer bragged of this wager.

There was a laundres of the towne, whose daughter used often to the court to bring home shirts and bands, which Jemy had long time loued and solicited, but to no end : she would not yeeld him an inch of her maidenhead. Now Jemy vowed he would haue it all : well, she consented at last ; and, to be short, soone at night, at nine a'clocke, being in the winter, when shee knew her mother to bee gone to watch with a sick body, he should come, and all that night lye with her. Jemy, though witlesse, wanted no knavish meaning, thought long till it was night. But in the afternoone, this mayd goes up to the castle and gathers a great basket of nettles, and comming home strawes them under the bed. Night comes, nine a'clock strikes ; Jemy on his horse comes riding forward, sets him up, and knockes at the doore : she lets him in, and bids him welcome, bonny man. To bed he goes ; and Jemy euer used to lye naked, as is the use of a number, amongst which number she knew Jemy was one ; who no sooner was in bed, but shee herself knocked at the doore, and herself askt who was there?—which, Jemy hearing, was afraid of her mother. Alas! sir (sayes shee), my mother comes, creepe under the bed. Jemy bustled not a little — under hee creepes, stark naked, where hee was stung with nettles. Judge, you that haue feeling of such matters : there hee lay, turning this way and that way ; here hee stung his leg, there his shoulder, there his buttockes : but the mayde hauing lockt the doore to him, went to bed, and there lay he in durance (as they say) till morning. When the day broke, up gets the maide, to court she goes, and tels the king's chamberlaine of the matter, and hee told the king, who laughed thereat right heartily.

The chamberlaine was sent to see him there, who, when hee came, found him fast a sleepe under the bed, starke naked, bathing in nettles ; whose skinne, when he wakened him, was all blistered grievously. The king's chamberlaine bid him arise and come to the king. I will not, quoth hee : I will go make my graue. See how things chanced ! he shape truer than he was awar ; for the chamberlaine going home without him tolde the king his answere. Jemy rose, made him ready, takes his horse and rides to the church-yard in the high towne, where he found the sexton (as the custom is there) making nine graues, three for men, three for women, and three for children ; and whoso dyes next, first comes, first serued. Lend mee thy spade, sayes Jemy ; and with that digs a hole, which hole hee bids him make for his graue, and doth giue him a French crowne. The man, willing to please him (more for his gold than his pleasure) did so ; and the foole gets on his horse, and rides to a gentleman of the towne, and on the sodaine within two hours after dyed ; of whom the sexton telling, hee was buried there indeed. Thus you see fooles have a guess at wit sometime, and the wisest could haue done no more—not so much. But this fat foole fills a leane graue with his carkasse, upon which graue the king caused a stone of marble to bee put, on which the poets writ these lines in remembrance of him—

He that gard all men till jeare,  
Jemy a Camber he ligges here ;  
Pray for his sall, for he is geane,  
And here a ligges beneath this steane.

Is this possible, sayes the World, that I should bee so serued ? Nay, thou art worse serued heareafter, sayes hee, for thou knowest not the following sceane ; but attend it. By the foole is meant all fatnesse ; by the king, Nature, that nurst him ; by the nobles, such as sooth him ; and by the ship, thee, in which many dangers are floating, through the sense of sinne :

and so, if life were awarranted fooles, fat ones, rich ones, would give the chaine of their soules, that is linked to saluaion, onely to inherit this earth in thy company ; when earth, though it bee heauen to hell, by reason of the paines, yet the comparison auerts ; it is hell to heauen in respect of pleasures.

By the second is meant the surfets of soule and body, that fooles buy with their gold, not sparing any price to please appetite, though the edge of it slice frome the bosome of good old Abraham very heauen itselfe.

By the third, how the fat fooles of this age will gronte and sweat under this massie burden, and purge to the crown from the foote, though their braine perish through the prevailing practise of busie endeauour. The mule, morrally signifies the diuell, upon whose trot their fatnesse takes ease, and rides a gallop to destruction.

By the fourth taile is prefigned the presumption of greatnessse, who are willing to outrun speede it selfe through greedy desire. In this is showne how flattery feedes them, placing before them, as in a sleepe, worke and wonder ; when, to say sooth, all is not worth the wonder : their desire is more than abilitie to performe, and their practise above all ; yet the nimble overshoot them in act, leauing them a quicknesse in will.

In the fifth, answeres is made to the fourth, when often such forwarde deedes meete with backward lurches, and they are stung with their own follyes, netling very lust with shame and disgrace : it signifies adultery in fat ones, who (aboue their owne) whoring after strange gods, make their religion ride hackney to hell, and when shame takes them from the horse, they make their own graues, and are buried in their own shame, with this motto above written—

Fat fooles gather to their woe  
Sorrow, shame, and care ;  
Here they lye that gallopt so,  
In Death's ingraued snare.

This morall motion gaue the World such a buffet, that she skrindge her face as though shee were pincht home ; yet, seeing no remedy but that the flat and fat fooles should draw in her coach together, shee sets in the boote and rides on. The critick reacheth his glasse to her view, and presents the third.

O ! this was a humorous sir, indeede, leane Leonard : they call him a foole of strange and prepostrous breeding, begot of enuie, and out of doubt his base sonne : his description hath a straine of more wonder—long, like a lath, and of proportion little better ; but giue his report hearing—

Curled locks on idiots' heads,  
Yeallow as the amber,  
Playes on thoughts as girls with beads,  
When their masse they stamber.  
Thicke of hearing, yet thin ear'd,  
Long of neck and visage,  
Hookie nosde and thicke of beard,  
Sullen in his visage.  
Clutter fisted, long of arme,  
Bodied straight and slender'd,  
Boisterous hipt, motley warme,  
Euer went leane Leonard.  
Gouty leg'd, footed long,  
Subtill in his follie,  
Shewing right, but apt to wrong,  
When apeard most holy.  
Vnderstand him as he is,  
For his marks you cannot misse.

You heare, maddam, sayes our cinnick, how he is markt : if ye meeete him in your pottage-dish, yet know him. The World, though shee loued not the description, yet shee coueted his condition, and began to woe his report ; which, making no bones of, the sweete youth gaue his doings thus.

In the merry forest of Shearewood dwells a kind gentleman, whose name I omit, fearing I too much offend in meddling with his foole ; but I trust he will pardon me, for sithence, he is so well knowne thereabouts, I thinke it not amisse to tell it at London, that people seeing the strange workes of God, in his differing creatures, we that haue perfect resemblance of God, both in sence and similitude, may the better praise his name, that wee differ from them whose humours we read, see, and heare, are not so strange as true. I say againe this gentleman had a foole, Leonard they call[ed] him, leane of body, looking like enuie, whose conditions agree with his countenance. One time aboue all other, hee lockt himselfe into a parlour, where all alone hee played at slide groat, as his manner was : peices or counters he had none ; yet, casting his hand empty from him, fly, saies hee : short with a vengeance ! then, play, saies hee (to his fellow) when, indeede, there is none but himselfe ; but thus with supposes he playes alone, swaggers with his game fellow, out-sweares him with a thousand oaths, challenges him the field to answere him if hee bee a man, appoyns the place and all, that if any one not knowing his conditions should stand without and heare him, would thinke two swaggerers were fighting in the roome.

To his play againe he fals, seauen up for twelve pence, for that is his game still : well, they fall out, they go together by the eares, and such a hurly-burly is in the roome, that passes. At last the stooles they flye about, the pots they walke, the glasses they goe together ; nay, the prayer-bookes they flie into the fire, that such a noise there was that the whole house wondered at his folly. Persuasions wer to no purpose ; doores hee would open none, till they violently brake them open, though they were of gold ; and so they did, and entered the parlour, found all this leuell coyle, and his pate broken, his face scratcht, and leg out of joynt ; as a number say to this houre that hee is a play-fellow for the diuelle, and in game they cannot agree. But that is otherwise ; for, in the great hall, at the seruing

man's request, he will play by himselfe, if they will not play with him ; and whoso playes with him, though they play for nothing, and with nothing, all is one, they must fall out ; and if others be not by to part them, mischiefe may bee done, for he will lay it on, take it off who will : so that at his first comming he endaungered many, and now take heed is a faire thing, for few will come neere him. Thus you see that fooles that want wit to gouerne themselves well, have a wilfull will to goe forward in folly.

This leane, greedy foole having a stomacke, and seeing the butler out of the way, his appetite was such, as loath to tarry, breakes open the dairy house, eats and spoils new cheesecurds, cheesecakes, ouerthrowes creame bowles, and having filled his belly, and knew he had done euill, gets him gone to Mansfield in Sherwood, as one fearefull to be at home. The maydes came home that morning from milking, and finding such a masaker of their dairie, almost mad, thought a yeere's wages could not make amends. But, O the foole ! leane Leonard, they cried, he did this mischief : they complayned to their master, but to no purpose ; Leonard was farre enough off, search was made for the foole, but hee was gone, none knew whither ; and it was his propertie, hauing done mischiefe, neuer to come home of himselfe, but if any one intreated him, he would easily be won. All this while the foole was at Mansfield in Sherwood, and stood gaping at a shoomaker's stall ; who, not knowing him, asked him what he was ? Goe looke, sayes hee : I know not myselfe. They asked him where hee was borne ? At my mother's backe, sayes hee. In what country ? quoth they. In the country, quoth hee, where God is a good man. At last one of these journeymen imagined he was not very wise, and flouted him very merrily, asking him if he would haue a stitch where there was a hole ? (meaning his mouth). I, quoth the foole, if your nose may be the needle. The shoomaker could have found in his heart to have tooke measure on his pate with a last, instead of his foote, but let him goe as

he was. A country plow-jogger being by, noting all this, secretly stole a peice of shoomaker's wake off the stall, and coming behinde him, clapt him on the head, and asked him how he did? The foole, seeing the pitch ball, pulled to haue it off, but could not but with much paine, in an eniuious spleene, smarting ripe runnes after him, fals at fistie cusses with him; but the fellow belaboured the foole cunningly, and got the foole's head under his arme, and bob'd his nose. The foole, remembraunce how his head was, strikes it up, and hits the fellowe's mouth with the pitcht place, so that the haire of his head and the haire of the clowne's beard were glued together. The fellow cryed, the foole exclaimed, and could not sodainely part: in the end, the people (after much laughing at the jest) let them part faire; the one went to picke his beard, the other his head. The constable came, askt the cause of their falling out, and knowing one to be Leonard, the leane foole, whom he had a warrant from the gentleman to search for, demands of the fellow how it hapned. The fellow hee could answer nothing, but um; um, quoth hee againe, meaning hee would tell him all when his mouth was cleane; but the constable thinking hee was mockt, clapt him in the stocks, where the fellow sat a long houre farning his mouth; and when hee had done, and might tell his grieve, the constable was gone to carry home Leonard to his maister, who, not at home, hee was enforced to stay supper-time, where hee told the gentleman the jest, who was very merrie to heare the story, contented the officer, and bad him set the fellow at liberty, who, betimes in the morning, was found fast asleepe in the stocks. The fellow knowing himselfe faulty, put up his wrongs, quickly departed, and went to work betimes that morning with a flea in his eare.

The gentleman with whom this Leonard dwelt, having bought a goodly fayre hawke, brought her home, being not a little proud of his penny-worth, and at supper to other gentlemen fell a praysing of her, who, soothing up his humour, likewise fayled not to adde a toarch of fire to encrease more

flame ; for indeede the bird was worthy of commendations, and therefore did merit prayses. Leonard standing by with his finger in his mouth, as it was his custome, after hearing them praise the goodnesse of the hawke, thought indeede they had meant for goodnesse, being farre better meate then a turkey or a swan, was very desirous to eate of the same ; and unknowne goes downe, and sodainely from the pearch snatcht the hawke, and hauing wrung off her neck, begins to besiege that good morsell, but with so good a courage, that the feathers had almost choakt him ; but there lay my friend Leonard in a lamentable taking. Well, the hawke was mist, and the deede was found : the maister was fetcht, and all men might see the hawke, feathers and all, not very well digested. There was no boote to bid runne for drams to driue down this undigested moddicombe ; the gentleman of the one side cryed, hang the foole ! the foole on the other side cryed not, but made signes that his hawke was not so good as hee did praise her for ; and, though the gentleman loued his hawke, yet he loued the foole aboue, being enforced rather to laugh at his simplicitie, then to vere at his losses sodainely—being glad to make himselfe merry, jested on it ever after. Upon whose hawke a gentleman of his very wisely writ these lynes, and gaue unto his maister.

Fooles feede without heede ; unhappy be their feeding  
Whose heed being in such speed, attempted without heeding ;  
May they choke that prouoke appetite by pleasure,  
When they eate forbidden meate, and feede so out of mea-  
sure.

The gentleman laughed at this rime, yet knew not whether more foole he for writing, the other for eating, or he for loosing. Well, putting the hare to the goose-giblets, seeing there was no remedy, made himselfe pastime, pleased himselfe, and did rest contented.

He that mischieves many, sometime wrongs himselfe, as

hearken to this jest. Leonard of all things loued his wheele-barrow, and would worke all day, and carry dung in it, yet would sleep in it at night — he would set up meate for his belly in it—I, what did hee without it. Once at a Christmas time, when the fire in the hall was full, Leonard was sore a cold : hee got coles out of the scullery, and put them into his barrow, and set them on fire, and so sate him downe to warme him, quite forgetting it was made of wood, and wood would burne : so, in the end, being warme, goes for a jacke of beere, brings it, and sets it on the fire to warme, so that the inside melted, and hee dranckt the drinck notwithstanding ; but, on the sodaine, he seeing the wheele-barrow flame that he so loued, aloud hee cryes, Dmee ! dmee ! dmee ! and takes it up flaming, and trundles it into the hall, among the people, to shew. The young men and maydes tumbled over one another for feare : some had their faces burned, others their leges ; the maydes their smocks — yea, one set fire on another, for their aprons burned, and being many people, the flame increased rather then decreased. Leonard, seeing none would helpe him, runs (for feare lest the gentleman should know it) and thrusts it into the barne to hide it, which some seeing, runs after, and, had they not come at that time, the hay and straw had beene all burnt, for it was already of a light fire, but being quencht out all was well. Such is the enuie of fooles, who, seeing none would helpe him, thought to doe them mischiefe, which he did, but not much.

The World laughed a good at these jests, though, to say sooth, shee could hardly afford it, for feare of writhing her sweet fauour ; yet strayning courtesy in this kinde, did, as our wantons doe at a feast, spare for manners in company, but alone cram most greedily. So shee, forgetting modesty, gapte out a laughter, and, like women hardly wonne, cryd More ! more ! The currish crittick said shee should, and gaue her the third penneth of the morral, and said : You laugh at leane enuie in a long foole, but you have cause to weepe at long

enuie in a leane age, as you liue in. This foole cries out not all mine, but distributes like a kinde companion, being a superficiall glasse to gaze in. There be leane fooles as well as fat: such are they whose noses dropes necessitie, and they smell out for church lands, many tenements, onthrifts, surfets, looking leanely on all this, but feede fatly on hope. This fatnesse goes to the heart, not seene in the visage. These seeme simple, but, like Leonard, hit home at advantage: they can stop men's mouths, and seale them up in advantage, and giue the stocks to the simple deseruer, when themselves are not blamlesse. O! beware when you see a long, meagre looke; search him—he hath also long, reaching fingers, and can slide a groat by himselfe, as Leonard did, fall out, curse, sweare, and batter heauen it selfe with humour of folly. Such was the leane-neckt crane, who had the fat foxe to dinner, making him lick the outside of the glasse, while his leanness fed within. You understand me, maddame: such are your landlords to the poore, youre leane lords to the fat tennant, or by a figure one for the other. Thus they batten heere; but the diuell will gnaw their bones for it.

By the third jest we observe a greedinesse in leane folly, that, so good a report come in their way, these eat up hawke, feathers, and all, to put it by, though they choake in the deede. Hereupon comes in leane envy, swallowes fat bits—I mean honest manners—and makes them sterril of all good manners, as the lawyer the poore clyant's plow pence, the cittie the country commodities; that, under the shew of leanness, they fat themselves to the ribs—good hold for flesh hookes at the general waste. By the fourth and last (I would it were least) it bewrayes a curious and common leanness in lewd liuers, who, to revenge on others, will fire their own wheelebarrow. Like the leane tennant, who, falling out with his landlord, and seeing his neighbour's house on fire, desired his neighbours to pull downe his first, for feare of more danger; not that he louede his neighbour's safety and his owne, but that

hee hated his landlord : or the contrary, couetous of their owne commoditie, fire themselues, and, because they will not burn alone, endanger their friends, and say 'tis kind to have company. These are fooles, indeed, leane ones ; these are fat and foule, and make thicke doings for the diuel's dyet. World, I name them not ; thou knowest them well enough. At this shee bit her lip, knowing some that were leane Leonards in this ; but kay me Ile kay thee : giue me an inch to day, Ile giue thee an ell to-morrow, and weeble to hell together. The World, dimpling her chin with meere modestie, as it were throwing off variety of squemish nicetie, began to say, Sooth, thou saist true, there are such nicks in mee, but I know not how to mende : I am willing, but flesh is weake ; prethee be more sparing, carpe not, confound not, hope the best amendment may come. Prethee goe in, furnish thy sallet : these hearbs already are sauory, and I picke out to my appetite, and though I bee not altogether pleased, yet am I not quite past patience : I will endure, for that disease that festers so much receives cure gladly, though it come with exceeding paine, yet so much the profit by how much the perplexities, cries cure to the danger. Mistris, sayes Sotto, I am glad to sit so neare you ; and to bee thought a kinde neighbour, too, is more then the world affords. But looke, who is heere we have ? we haue fellowde one with our flat, and fat foole disturb'd by the leane. Now, as in a history we mingle mirth with matter, to make a please plaister for melancholy, so in our glasse we present to the leane a cleane. One that was more beloued among ladyes than thought can hatch, or opinion produce. His name is Jack Miller : he liues yet, and hath beene in this citie within few dayes, and giue me leauue to describe him thus —

You that follie comprehend,  
Listen to my storie ;  
This description well attend—  
I haue writ it for yee.

This cleane nigit was a foole,  
Shapt in meane of all,  
And of order fit to rule  
Anger in her loudest brawl.  
Fat and thicke, neate and cleane,  
And delights in pleasure,  
Saue a nasty ugly straine  
Of an other measure  
From his nostrils rumatick.  
Griefe it was to see  
Such a simple neatnesse spring  
From imbisillitie.  
Creatures of the better sort,  
For the foole was cleane,  
Gauie him loue with good report,  
Had not this ill beene.  
But let slip it was no fault,  
Men as sloughish be,  
Since the wisest jump as short  
In all cleanlynesse as he.

Alas ! quoth the World, I am sorry, trust me, that one so outwardly well should bee so inwardly ill, and haue that appearance in nastie defect, which of it selfe is neate ; but go on with the repetition, since wee are mended in the condition. Wee will winck at small faults, tho wee yeelde it greate in nature. Nemo sine criminè, and so forth. I, quoth Sotto, say yee me so ? haue at him then, out it goes, but mark it well.

In a gentleman's house where Jack Miller resorted, as he was welcome to all, it chanced so there was a play, the players dressed them in the gentleman's kitchen, and so entered through the entry into the hall. It was after dinner, when pyes stood in the oven to coole for supper : Jack had not dyned, and seeing the oven stand open, and so many pyes there untold, (hee thought because they seemed numberlesse) O ! sayes

Jack, for one of them p— p— pyes, for so hee stammered in speaking. The players boy being by, and in his ladyes gowne, could haue found in his heart to creepe in, cloathes and all; but he perswaded Jack to do so, to which hee was willing, and very nimblly thrusts his head into the hot oven, which being newly opened, on the sodaine hee was singed both of head and face, and almost not a hayre left on his eye-brows or beard. Jack cryes, O ! I burne, and had not the wit to come back, but lay still : the gentlewoman-boy tooke him by the heeles, and pulled him out, but how he lookt I pray you judge that can discerne fauours. Jack was in a bad taking with his face, poore soule, and lookt so ugly and so strangely, that the lady of the play, being ready to enter before the gentiles to play her part, no sooner began, but, remembred Jack, laught out, and could goe no further. The gentleman mused at what hee laught, but such a jest being easily seene, was told the gentleman, who sent in for Jack Miller, who came like bald Time, to tell them time was past of his hayre: but hee so strangely lookt, as his countenance was better then the play. But against night the players dress themselves in another place ; and at supper Jack Miller sang his song of Dirryes Faire, with a barmy face to take out the fire, and lookt like the poter of the ale-fat. It was no boote to bid him stut and stammer, poore foole : as cleane as he was, hee was now but beastly faced, for hee looked like a man that, being ashamed to shew his face, had hid it in a dry lome wall, and pulling it out againe left all the hayre behinde him.

Jack, on Newyeeres day in the morning, was to carry a Newyeeres gift to a gentleman a myle off, and as he staid to have it delivered him to beare, asked which was the cleanest way thither. A fellow, knowing his cleanlinessse, sends him over a dury marsh ; and so hee folded up his band (then cleane) for fouling, that at the gentleman's doore he might put it on. The present came, which Jack seeing, made legs to the gentlewoman, forgetting his band was in his hose, carried

a stif neck to and fro to the gentlewoman, and what ere she spake, or where shee stood, Jack would look but one way, as though his neck had been starcht. And, remember, saies the gentlewoman, you abuse not my message, nor my gift : No, fo, fo, forsooth, sayes Jack ; and away he goes, and thought hee would see what it was, and, as hee went he lift up the basket lid and lookt. Ah, ha ! quoth Jack, I see it is almond bu—, bu—, butter.

Along he goes, and seeing the marsh wet and durty, thought to leape a little ditch, and so to goe a cleane hie way, but (O ! poor Jack) hee, basket and all, lay in the midst of the ditch up to his arme-pits in mud ; which, Jack seeing, got out, and goes to a riuver by, and washes himselfe first, his band next ; where, if it had been about his neck as it should, it had labour well sauad : but he washt his almond butter so long, that the butter was washt away, which hee perceiving, in that woefull taking comes back, and called for more bu—, bu—, butter. The gentlewoman seeing how things went, rather laught then vext, because shee was so simple to trust a foole with matters of trust, and bad him get him to the fire and dry him ; and said next time she would stay her seruants leisure, (who then were abroad) rather then trust to a rotten staffe. Thus cleane fooles light still on beastly bargaines.

In the towne of Esam, in Worstersh., Jack Miller being there borne, was made much of in every place. It hapned that the Lord Shandoye's players came to towne and played there ; which Jack not a little loved, especially the clowne, whom he would embrace with a joyful spirit, and call him Grumball, for so he called himselfe in gentleman's houses, where hee would imitate playes, being all himselfe king, gentleman, clowne, and all : hauing spoke for one, he would sodainely goe in, and againe return for the other ; and, stammering as he did, make much mirth : to conclude, he was a right innocent, without any villany at all.

When these players I speake of had done in the towne, they went to Partiar, and Jack said he would goe all the world over

with Grumbal. It was then a great frost new begun, and the hauen was frozen over thinly ; but heere is the wonder, the gentleman that kept the Hart, (an inne in the towne) whose backside looked to the way that led to the riuier-side to Partiar, lockt up Jack in a chamber next the hauen, where he might see the players passe by ; and they of the towne, loth to lose his company, desirued to have it so ; but hee, I say, seeing them goe by, creepes through the window, and said, I come to thee, Grumball. The players stood all still to see further. He got down very dangerously, and makes no more adoe, but venters over the hauen, which is by the long bridge, and, as I guess, some forty yards ouer ; yet he made nothing of it, but my hart aked when my eares heard the ise crack all the way. When hee was come unto me I was amazed, and tooke up a brick-bat (which lay there by) and threw it, which no sooner fell on the ise, but it burst. Was not this strange, that a foole of thirty yeares was borne of that ise which would not endure the fall of a brick-bat ? but euery one rated him for the deede, telling him of the daunger. He considered his fault, and, knowing faults should be punished, he intreated Grumball the clowne, who hee so deereley loued, to whip him but with rosemary, for that he thought would not smart. But the players in jest breecht him till the bloud came, which he tooke laughing, for it was his manner euer to weepe in kindnesse, and laugh in extreames. That this is true mine eies were witnesses, being then by.

Jack Miller, welcomed to all places, and bard of none, came to a gentleman, who being at dinner requested him for mirth to make him a play, which he did, and to sing Derries Faire, which was in this manner. First it is to be noted, hee strutted hugely, and could neyther pronounce b nor p., and thus he began.

*As I went to Derries Faire, there was I ware of a jolly begger,  
Mistris Annis M. Thomas, under a tree mending of shoone,  
Mistris Annis M. Thomas, night braue beggars every one.*

And so forward; but the jest was to heare him pronounce braue beggars, and his qualitie was, after hee began his song, no laughing could put him out of it. One standing by, noting his humour that b and p plagued him, bad him say this after him, which Jack said he would doe: Buy any flawre, pasties, pudding pyes, plum pottage, or pes-cods. O! it was death to Jack to doe it; but like a willing foole he fell to it. Buy any, buy any fla—, flaw—, p—, p—, p—, pasties, and p—, p—, p—, pudding, p—, p—, p—, pyes, p—, p—, p—, &c. And euer as hee hit the on word, hee would pat with his finger on the other hand, that more and more it would make a man burst with laughing almost to see his action: sometime he would be pronouncing one word, while one might goe to the doore and come againe. But euer after gentiles would request him to speake that, where before, Derryes fayre was all his song.

He came not long after (to this I am witness, because my eares heard it) to a gentleman's not far from Upton upon Seuerne, in Gloxester-shire, where at the table among many gallants and gentlewomen, (almost the state of the country) hee was to jest and sing: especially they intreated him for his new speech of the pees, which he began in such manner to speake with drieulling and stuttering, that they began mightely to laugh; insomuch, that one proper gentlewoman among the rest, because shee would not seeme too immodest with laughing, for such is the humour of many, that thinke to make all, when God knows they marre all: so she, straining herself, though inwardly she laughed heartily, gave out such an earnest of her modesty, that all the table rung of it. Who is that? says one: not I, says another; but by her cheeks you might find guilty Gilbert, where he had hid the brush. This jest made them laugh more, and the rayther that shee stood upon her marriage, and disdained all the gallants there, who so heartily laught, that an old gentlewoman at the table took such a conceit at it with laughing, that had not the foole bin

which stood (by fortune) at her back, and was her supporter, being in a great swound, she had fallen to the ground backward. But downe they burst the windows for ayre, and there was no little boot to bid ront : shee was nine or ten dayes ere she recovered that fit on my knowledge. Thus simple Jack made mirth to all, made the wisest laugh, but to this gathered little wit to himselfe.

This, quoth the World, is mere mirth without mischiefe, and I allow of it : folly without faults, is as reddish without salt, may passe in digestion one without the other, and doe better, where both together engenders but rheume, and mirth does well in any. I, sayes Sotto, so way you not the true waight : as it is sufferable to be whole, so it is saluable to be hurt, and one to the other giues ayme ; but [to] bee neither is monstrous. I would faine morrall of it, if you please. Leave was granted, for the World knew it would else be commanded, and Sotto thus poynts at the parable.

By the first merry emblem I reach at stars, how they fire themselves in the firmament : whether it bee sitting to neere the sunne in the day, or couching to neere the moone in the night, I know not ; but the hayre of their happynesse often fals off, and shoots from a blazing commet to a falne star, and carries no more light then is to be seene in the bottome of Platoe's inck-horne ; and, where they should study in private with Diogenes in his cell, they are with Cornelius in his tub.

By the second, the cleane fooles of this world are pattern'd, who so neatly stand upon their ruffes, and shoeties, that the braine is now lodged in the foote ; and thereupon comes it that many make their head their foote, and employment is the drudge to prodigalitee, made sawcie through the mud of their owne minds, where they so often stick fast, that Bankes, his horse, with all his strength and cunning, cannot draw them out.

By the third is figured saucie adventure in folly ; for wisdome puts no forward[er] then warrant, and for pleasure the wisest make themselves fooles.

To conclude this foolish description of the fourth, many sing out their tunes, and like ideots true borne, confound with folly what was created more holy, shutting out trifles that out method matter of more waight, where nisetie herselife will let goe in laughter, though she spoyle her marriage.

The World likte not this well, but bit the lip againe, but as rich men suffer wrongs for advantage, took her pennerth's together, casts her eye aside, and sees a comely foole indeed passing more stately, and, who was this? forsooth, Wil. Sommers, one not meanly esteemed by the king for his merriment: his melody was of a higher straine, and he lookt as the noone broade waking. His description was writ in his fore-head, and yee might read it thus :—

Will. Sommers born in Shropshire, as some say,  
Was brought to Greenwich on a holy day,  
Presented to the king ; which foole disdain'd  
To shake him by the hand, or else asham'd :  
How er'e it was, as ancient people say,  
With much adoe was wonne to it that day.  
Leane he was, hollow eyde, as all report,  
And stoop he did, too ; yet in all the court  
Few men were more belou'd then was this foole,  
Whose merry prate kept with the king much rule.  
When he was sad, the king and he would rime :  
Thus Will exiled sadness many a time.  
I could describe him as I did the rest,  
But in my mind I doe not think it best:  
My reason this ; how ere I doe descry him,  
So many knew him that I may belye him ;  
Therefore, to please all people, one by one,  
I hold it best to let that paines alone :  
Onely this much,—hee was a poor mans friend,  
And helpt the widdow often in the end.  
The king would euer grant what he would craue,  
For well he knew Will no exacting knave :

But whisht the king to doe good deeds great store,  
Which caus'd the court to loue him more and more.

The World was in loue with this merry foole, and said he was fit to the time indeede, and therefore deserued to be well regarded. Insomuch as shee longed to heare his friscoes moralized, and his gambals set downe. And Sotto as willingly goes forward thus.

Will Sommers, in no little credit in the king's court, walking in the parke at Greenwich, fell asleepe on the stile that leads into the walk, and many that would haue gone that way so much loued him, that they were loth to disease him, but went another way ; I, the better sort, for now adaiers beggars are gallants, while gentiles of right blood seeme tame ruffians ; but note the loue Will Sommers got. A poore woman, seeing him sleepe so dangerously, eyther to fal backward, or to hurt his head leaning so against a post, fetcht him a cushion and a rope ; the one for his head, and the other to bind him to the post, from falling backward : and thus hee slept, and the woman stood by, attending as the groom of his chamber. It chanced so, that upon great occasion, as you shall after heare, Will Sommers uncle came out of Shropshire to seeke him in the court ; a plaine old man of threescore yeeres, with a buttoned cap, a lockram falling band, course but cleane, a russet coat, a white belt of a horse hide, right horse-coller white leather, a close, round breech of russet sheeps wool, with a long stock of white kersey, a high shoe with yellow buckles, all white with dust ; for that day the good old man had come three and twenty miles on foot. This kinde old man, comming up in his countrys behalfe, and comming into Greenwitch, asked the way to the court : euery one directs him ; but one villaine page directs him by the court gate, to crosse in a boat over to Blackwal, and told him that was the court. The silly old man willingly paid his penny before hand, and was going ouer ; but some that ouer-heard their talk, hindered his journey and laughed

at the jest, yet pitied his simplicitie, and sets him in the right way. When he came in and saw such a place, he was amazed, and stood gazing, which the gard and gentlewomen, in their windows, had much sport to see. At last one asked him what he was? The old man answeres, A poore Shropshire man; and demands if there were not a gentleman in the court dwelling, called by the name of M. Will Sommers? for the country hearing him in fauour in the court, said hee was so at least. The courtier answered, Here is such a one indeede. For fault of a worse, saies hee, I am his uncle; and wept with joy that hee should see him. Marry, sayes the man, Ile help you to him straight; for, I tell you, not any in the court durst but haue sought him, which this man did, and it was told him. Hee was walkt into the parke, while the king slept that hote day. Thether went they to seeke him. All this while my friend Will was in counsel with the post; and the cushion stood as arbitrator betwixte them, and the woman as a witnesse what was said and done. At last came these two and wakened him. William, seeing his head soft, What soft post is this? quoth he. A post of mine own making, saies the woman. But she lost nothing by her good will; for ere she left Wil Sommers, shee got him to get her sons pardon of the king, who was to bee hanged three days after for piracy: but by Will Sommers means he deceived the hang-man. This and many good deedes he did to diuers.

The foole, being wakened, lookes about him; when he had thanked the woman, asked what newes? sayes the man, Sir, here is your uncle come out of the country to see you. God a mercy cousin! sayes Will Sommers; I thank thee for thy labour, you cannot uncle me so. Yes, truly, sir, I am your own deare uncle, M. William, and with that wept. Are you my uncle? sayes Will. I, sir, sayes hee. Are you my uncle? sayes hee againe. I, sure, and verely too. But are you my uncle, indeed? By my vusse I am, sayes the old man. Then, uncle, by my vusse, welcome to court, sayes Will Sommers. But what make you heere, uncle? He ups and tels his com-

ming to him. Will takes him by the hand : Come, saies hee, thou shalt see Harry, onckle — the onely Harry in England ; so he led him to the chamber of presence, and euer and anon cryes out, Aware, roome for me and my uncle ! and knaues bid him welcome. You are welcome, sir, said they : the old man thought himselfe no earthly man, they honoured him so much.

But Will, ready to enter the presence, lookes on his uncle, and seeing him not fine enough to looke on the king : Come, uncle, sayes hee, we will haue your geere mended ; leads him to his chamber, and attires him in his best fooles coate, simply, God wot, meaning well to him ; and the simple old man as simply put it on, cap and all.

But they come ; and up they came, and to the king they goe, who, being with the lord treasurer alone, merry, seeing them two, how Will had got another foole, knew there was sport at hand. How now ! sayes the king, What news with you ? O, Harry ! sayes he, this is my owne uncle ; bid him welcome. Wel, said the king, he is welcome. Harry, sayes hee, heare me tell thee a tale, and I will make thee rich, and my uncle shall be made rich by thee. Will tels the king how Terrils Frith was inclosed. Tirrels Frith ! sayes the king ; what is that ? Why, the heath where I was borne, called by the name of Tirrels Frith : now a gentleman of that name takes it all in, and makes people beleue it is all his, for it took the name from him ; so that, Harry, the poore pine, and their cattle are all undone without thy help. And what should I doe ? sayes the king. Marry, sayes Will, send to the Bishop of Hereford ; hee is a great man with Terril : commaund him to set the Frith at liberty againe, who is now imprisoned by his means. And how shall I be rich by that ? sayes the king. The poore will pray for thee, sayes Will ; and thou shalt bee rich in heauen, for on earth thou art rich already. All this was done, and Wills uncle went home, who, while he liued, for that deed was allowed bayly of the common, which place was worth twenty pound a yeere.

Howseuer, these three things it came in memory, and are for mirth incerted into stage playes I know not, but that Will Sommers asked them of the king, it is certaine : there are some will affirme it now living at Greenwich. The king being on a time extreame melancholy, and full of passion, all that Will could doe will not make him merry. Ah ! sayes hee, this must haue, must haue a good showre to clelse it ; and with that goes behinde the arras. Harry, saies hee, Ile goe behind the arras, and study three questions, and come againe ; see, therefore, you lay aside this melancholy muse, and study to answere me. I, quoth the king : they will be wise ones, no doubt. At last out comes William with his wit, as the foole of the play does, with an anticke looke to please the beholders. Harry, sayes hee, what is it, that the lesser it is, the more it is to be feared ? The king mused at it ; but, to grace the jest better, he answered, he knew not. Will answered, it was a little bridge ouer a deepe riuver ; at which hee smyled.

What is the next, William ? sayes the king. Marry, this is the next : what is the cleanliest trade in the world ? Marry, sayes the king, I think a comfit-maker, for hee deales with nothing but pure ware, and is attired cleane in white linen when hee sells it. No, Harry, sayes [he to] the king ; you are wide. What say you, then ? quoth the king. Marry, sayes Will, I say a durt-dauber. Out on it, says the king, that is the foulest, for hee is durty up to the elbows. I, sayes Will ; but then he washes him cleane againe, and eats his meate cleanly enough. I promise thee, Will, saies the king, thou hast a pretty foolish wit. I, Harry, saies he, it will serue to make a wiser man than you a foole, methinks. At this the king laught, and demaunds the third question. Now, tell me, saies Will, if you can, what it is that, being borne without life, head, lippe, or eye, yet doth runne roaring through the world till it dye. This is a wonder, quoth the king, and no question ; I know it not. Why, quoth Will, it is a fart. At this the king laught hartely, and was exceeding merry, and bids Will aske any reasinable

thing, and he would graunt it. Thanks, Harry, saies he ; now against I want, I know where to find it, for yet I neede nothing, but one day I shall, for euery man sees his latter end, but knows not his beginning. The king understande his meaning, and so pleasantly departed for that season, and Will laid him downe among the spaniels to sleepe.

Of a time appointed the king dined at Windsor, in the chappel yard at Cardinall Wolsey's, at the same time when he was building that admirable worke of his tombe : at whose gate stooede a number of poore people, to be serued with alms when dinner was done within ; and, as Will passed by, they saluted him, taking him for a worthy personage, which pleased him.

In he comes, and finding the king at dinner, and the cardinall by attending, to disgrace him that he neuer loued, Harry, sayes hee, lend me ten pound. What to doe ? saies the king. To pay three or foure of the cardinall's creditors, quoth hee, to whom my word is past, and they are come now for the money. That thou shalt, Will, quoth hee. Creditors of mine ? saies the cardinall : Ile give your grace my head if any man can justly aske me a penny. No ! saies Will. Lend me ten pounds ; if I pay it not where thou owest it, Ile give thee twenty for it. Doe so, saies the king. That I will, my liege, saies the cardinall, though I know I owe none. With that he lends Will ten pounds. Will goes to the gate, distributes it to the poore, and brought the empty bag. There is thy bag againe, saies hee : thy creditors are satisfied, and my word out of danger.

Who received ? sayes the king ; the brewer or the baker ? Neyther (Harry), saies Will Sommers. But, cardinall, answere me in one thing : to whom dost thou owe thy soule ? To God, quoth hee. To whom thy wealth ? To the poore, sayes hee. Take thy forfeit (Harry) sayes the foole ; open confession, open penance : his head is thine, for to the poore at the gate I paid his debt, which hee yeelds is due : or if thy stony heart will not yeeld it so, sauе thy head by denying thy

word, and lend it mee : thou knowest I am poore, and haue neyther wealth nor wit, and what thou lendest to the poore God will pay thee ten fold ; he is my surety—arrest him—for, by my troth, hang mee when I pay thee. The king laughet at the jest, and so did the cardinall for a shew, but it grieved him to jest away ten pound so : yet worse tricks then this Will Sommers serued him after, for indeede hee could neuer abide him, and the forfeiture of his head had liked to haue beene payed, had hee not poysoned himselfe.

There was in the time of Will Sommers another artificiall foole, or jester, in the court, whose subtilitie heapt up wealth by gifts giuen him, for which Will Sommers could neuer abide him ; but, indeede, lightly one foole cannot indure the sight of another, as Jack Oates, the minstrell, in the fat foole's story, and one beggar is woe that another by the doore should goe. This jester was a big man, of a great voyce, long black locks, and a verry big, round beard. On a time, of purpose, Will Sommers watcht to disgrace him, when he was jugling and jesting before the king. Will Sommers brings up a messe of milke and a manchet : Harry, saies hee, lend me a spoone. Foole, saies the jester, use thy hands, helpe hands, for I haue no lands, and meant, that saying would warrant his grose feeding. I, saies Will Sommers, beasts will doe so, and beasts will bid others doe as they doe themselves. Will, said the king, thou knowest I haue none. True Harry, saies hee, I know that, therefore I askt thee ; and I would (but for doing thee harme) thou hadst no tongue to grant that foole his next sute ; but I must eate my creame some way. The king, the jester, and all gathers about him to see him eate it. Will begins thus to rime ouer his milk :

*This bit, Harry, I give to thee, and this next bit must serue  
for mee, both which Ile eate apace ;  
This, madame, unto you, and this bit I myself eate now, and  
all the rest upon thy face.*

Meaning the foole, in whose beard and head the bread and milk was thicke sowne, and his eyes almost put out. Will Sommers hee gets him gone for feare. This lusty jester, forgetting himself, in fury draws his dagger, and begings to protest. Nay ; saies the king, are ye so hote ? claps him fast, and, though hee draws his dagger here, makes him put it up in another place. The poore abused jester was jested out of countenance, and lay in durance a great while, till Will Sommers was faine, after he broke his head, to giue him a plaister, to get him out againe. But neuer after came my jugler in the court more so neere the king, being such a dangerous man to draw in the presence of the king.

Now, Lady World, saies Sotto, you wonder at this first jest : do not ; 'tis common, for who so simple that, being gorged with broth themselues, will not giue their friends one spoonful, especially our kinne. O weell to make them great, make our selues, and pollitikly rise againe by their greatness. But hee was simple in that ; for though hee raised many, hee himselfe stood at one stay. But the deed is not common, therefore may fitly be termed a fooles deed, since the wise meddle not with it, unlesse to plunge further in, and winde from povertie. But leauie it the greatest power of all to remedie and reuenge, while earthly majestie grows great by adding libertie to their afflictions, as in our commons of late, God preserue him for it.

By the second morally signification giues this ; that fooles questions reach to mirth, leading wisdome by the hand, as age leads children by one finger, and though it holds not fast in wisdome, yet it points at it.

Better so then the wise to put questions to fooles ; for that's to put money out of the bag, and leauie the money behinde to bad use, while themselues beg with the bag. Such, like Will Sommers, sleepe amongst dogs. The third bids us charitably learne of simplicitie to pay our debts when the poore creditor calls for it ; but 'tis a generall fault, and such who haue doores shut, whereat the poore stand, shal find gates fast whereat

themselves may not enter ; but especially we of the laity, for while the pastor cherishes the soule, we seeke to starve the body ; but let's be mindfull least decaying one we lose both.

O ! the World could not indure this, but offered to fling away. Nay, nay, saies the cinnick ; soft and faire — a word or too more : and, halfe angry, looking into his glasse, sees one all in blew, carrying his neck on the one side, looking sharply, drawing the leg after him in a strange manner, described in meeter thus :

Some thing tall, dribling euer,  
 Bodie small, merrie neuer,  
 Splay footed, visage black,  
 Little beard, it was his lack,  
 Flat capt still in view,  
 The citties charge many knew ;  
 Long coated, at his side  
 Muckinder and inckhorne tied,  
 Preaching still unto boyes,  
 Ayming well, but reaching toyes :  
 Louing all, hating none,  
 Lesse such as let him not alone ;  
 As a liude, so a dyde ;  
 Was death's scorne, though life's pride.

This is singular, indeede, sayes the World : I long to heere of this dry, poore John. His name is John, indeede, saies the cinnick ; but neither John a nods, nor John a dreames, yet either as you take it, for he is simply simple without tricks, not sophisticated like your tobacco to tast strong, but as nature aloud him he had his talent. Whereat the World so tickled her spleene that she was agog, clap[ped] her hands for joy, and saies she was deeply satisfied, and cryed more. The crooked stick of liquorish that gaue this sweet relish, being to set his teeth to it, wipes his rheumy beard, and smites his philosophical nose,

snapping his fingers, barber-like after a dry shauing, jogs on thus :

This innocent ideot, that neuer harmed any, before I enter tany furher, I will let you understand in too words, how he came to be of the hospital of Christschurch.

Some certaine yeers since (but not a few yeers) there dwelt a poore blinde woman in Bow-lane, in London, called by the name of blinde Alice, who had this foole of a child to lead her ; in whose house he would sit eyther on the stayres, or in a corner, and sing psalms, or preach to himselfe of Peter and Paul, because he delighted to goe to sermons with blinde Alice, and heard the preacher talk of them. It chanced the Wor-shipfull of the City (good benefactours to the poore) to take her into Christ's hospital, with whom John went as a guide to lead her : who being old, after shee dyed, hee was to bee turned out of doore ; but the City, more desirous to pitty then to be cruell, placed him as a fostred fatherless child, and they did wel in it too, seeing hee was one of God's creatures, though some difference in persons. Well, to goe forward in what I promised you : John went to St. Paul's church, in London, to meet with B. Nowell, the deane, whose bounty to him was great ; and the foole knew it well enough, whom he would duly attend after his preaching, for euer at their meeting he gaue them a groat, and hee would bring it to his nurse. Well, B. Deane preached not that day ; whereupon John stands in a corner, with boyes flocking about him, and begins to preach himselfe, holding up his muckender for his booke, and reads his text. It is written, saies he, in the 3 chapter of Paule to the Corinthians. Brethren, you must not sweare (for that was lightly all his text) : then thus he begins.—Wheras or wherunto it is written ; for because you must belieue it ; for surely else we are no Christians. Write the sermon (boy) saies hee (as the hospital boyes doe) and then one must write on his hand with his finger, and then he would goe forward thus. The world is proud, and God is angry if wee do not repent.

Good friend giue me a pin, or good friend giue me a poynt, as it came in his minde. And so sucking up his drieuell and his breath together, would pray and make an end: which being done, who bids me home to dinner, now? saies John. The boyes that knew his qualities, answeres that do I, John. Thank ye, friend, saies he, and goes home to his own dwelling at Christ's Church. But, at this time, one wealthy merchant's son, to make his father merry, bad him home to dinner indeede, and, will hee or nill hee, he must goe with him. With much adoe, John went; and, coming into the house, simply sits him downe, as his use was, in the chimney corner. It was in Lent, when pease pottage bare great sway, and when euery pease must have his ease. John, beholding pease pottage on the fire, thought on his nurse, for he was all sauing for her, and seeing nobody by, stept to the pot, and put a great ladle of pottage into his pocket, and pittiously burnt his thigh; and but that the leather was thick, it had beene worse. John, feeling something burne, lept and cryed: they ran in to see the matter why he cryed, but more and more he exclaimed, I burn! I burn! and got out of doores, and neuer leaues it, til he came to his nurse, who quickly shifted him, and mended what was amisse. But the jest was to see the folk of the house, who, wondering what he ayled, could not devise what the matter was; but a begger in the entry, who beheld all, told the truth of the matter, who lost a good alms for his labour. But thus simple John, by his own folly, died the inside of his pocket pease pottage tawny, and set a good scarlet red upon his thigh.

Gaffer Homes, being sexton of Christ's Church, would often set John aworke to-toull the bell to prayers or burials, wherin he delighted much: it chanced so, that comming through the church, and hauing nothing to doe, seeing the bell so easily to be come by, towles it. The people, as the custom is, repairs to church (as they used) to know for whom it was. John answeres them still, for his nurse's chicken. They said, wherefore towles the bell, John? I know not. When dyed he?

Even now. Who, John ? Who, my nurse's chicken, quoth hee, and laughs. This jest was knowne to euery neighbour thereabouts, who sent him to bid him leaue touling ; but it was not his custome, till Goodman Homes tooke the rope from him that gaue the rope to him. Well, there stood Jack, towling, from foure a'clock to sixe, goodman Homes being from home, who was not a little vext at John's dilligence, but laid the rope euer after where John could not reach it. John was of this humor : ask him what his coat cost him ? he would'say a groat ; what his cap, band, or shirt cost ? all was a groat ; aske what his beard cost ? and still a groat. So, one Friday morning there was a gentleman to ride down into Warwickshire, about payment of an hundred pound upon a bond's forfeiture : the time was next day, by sunset ; it was no boote to bid him pull on his boots and be gone. Well, he made hast and went to doe it without bidding ; and yet, for all his haste, his bootes were seeme-rent, and must haue a stitch or two needes : he sends them to a cobler, next to Christ's Church gate in Newgate market, who was diligent to mend them straight ; and as he had done, comes John of the hospitall to him (as his use was) to carry home his work, and he sends John home with the boots. As John was going through Iuy lane, a country fellow that knew him not, meets him, and seeing the boots, What shall I giue thee for them ? saies hee. John (who sold euery thing for a groat) asked a groat. The fellow, seeing it was a good penniworth, giues him a groat and de-parts with the boots. John, as his use was, gaue it to his nurse. She asked him where hee had it ? Hee said for boots ; but she not knowing his minde, fell to worke againe as he found her.

The forfeiture of the bond so hammered in this gentleman's head, that he thought euery houre two, till he had his boots, and mused they came not from mending, sends for them presently. One comes sweating (zoones !) cobler, the boots : and being at worke very busie, I, sayes hee, they are mended and carryed home. Another comes, boots ! boots !

Would the boots were in your belly, quoth the cobler ; once againe, they are gone home. By and by comes the gentleman in his white linen boot hose, ready to the purpose. A poxe of lazy coblers ! sayes hee ; my boots ! shall I forfeit a bond for your pleasure ? The cobler puts off his considering cap. Why, sir, sayes hee, I sent them home but now. By whom ? sayes he. By John, blew John, sayes the cobler. The gentleman he runs home one way, the cobler another. Well, no boots were to be had. The gentleman hee stayed, and the cobler hee prayed, but all this while the boots belaid and came not. The cobler seekes John at his nurse's, where he was, and found the boots were sold for a groat. The cobler seeing no remedy, because the gentleman was in haste, giues him fие shillings, with a heauy hey ho, towards a new paire, and lost four shillings, eight pence, by the bargaine ; but the cobler would neuer let John carry home his ware more. Nay, sayes the cobler, if my money can be booted and ride poste so by fие shillings at a time, it is no boot for me to say utinm, but the next bootes Ile make a page of my own age, and carry home myselfe, for I see fooles will afford good penniworths.

On Easter Sunday the ancient custome is that all the children of the hospitall goe before my Lord Maior to the Spittle, that the world may witnesse the works of God and man, in main-tennance of so many poore people, the better to stir up liuing men's minds to the same good. Before which the children of the hospitall, like a captaine, goes John ; whom, to behold the people flock apace, and the weather being hot, their thrusting made John extreme dry. John considered he was like to fast while dinner, yet kept on his rank to the spittle, where the cannes did walke apace by his nose, but neuer came at him, which made him more eager of drinck. Well, while the chil-dren were placing, John stood making of water, and seeing a gentleman's doore open, slips in, and the houshold without, standing to see my Lord Maior passe by, regarded him [not] ; but hee whose nose had wit to smell good beere, got downe into

the seller, and fell to it tipple square, till he was lost and quite drunck, and lay'd himselfe to sleepe behinde two barrels, and unseene slept all that day. In the sermon time he was mist, sought, and not found. The afternoone came ; the gentleman's butler and other good fellowes fell to carouse soundly, till the butler was layd up too : heere was a seller well fraught with fooles ; but all this while the beadles fayled not to search up and downe the citie : the cryer cryed a man child, of the age of two and thirtie yeeres, for at least hee was so old. But returne we to the seller. The two drunkards waked both together. John cals nurse! nurse! which the butler (halfe awake) hearing, thought the diuell had bin playing bo peep with him ; but when he looked and beheld him, imagining how it was, he secretly sent him to the hospitall, least hee were blamed for his negligence in looking to the doore no better.

A number of things more John did, which I omit, fearing to be tedious. Not long after he dyed, and was old — for his beard was full of white haires, as his picture in Christ's Hospital (now to be seene) can witnesse : buryed he is, but with no epitaph. Mee thinks, those that in his life time could afford him his picture, might with his graue yeeld him so much as foure lynes, that people may see where he lyes, whom they so well knew : and if I might persuade, his motto should be to this effect :

Here sleeps blew John, that giues  
Food to feede wormes, and yet not liues.  
You that passe by, looke on his graue,  
And say yourselves the like must haue.  
Wise men and fooles all one end makes :  
Gods will be done, who giues and takes.

Surely, says Mistress Nicetie, this pleases well to see one so naturally silly to be simply subtil : it is strange ; but I heare it, and, like a tale out of a poore man's mouth, hardly credit it.

This foole, says Sotto, signifies many who come to church to meete acquaintance, more than for piety, and will sooner sell the church for mony, then pawne ought to underprop it. At these the boyes and children of this world wonder, while manly age sees and will not see. For these, as the second tale saies, folly towles the bell, and a number longs to heare it ring out, when the losse of Johns chicken is of more want then theirs; but, a rope out of it, it will one day be better. Ther are, as Hamlet saies, things cald whips in store.

The third jest of John shews morrally many things; amongst which, things, I meane workes, are so cobbled that, to rid it with quicknesse, John may beare it up and downe to the owner, while workmanship and time is merely abused — but it boots not to meddle in this, least some say, ne sutra, &c. But let me tel ye this, by the way, World: there are knaues in thy seames, that must be ript out. I, sayes the World; and such, I feare, was your father. O! no, sayes the critticke, he was the silly gentleman that staid while the foole brought home his boots, and so forfeited his bond, that his good conditions lay at gage for it. Marry, yes, saies the World; and was after canseld at the gallows: for such as her lies in wait to cosin simplictie, and for a groat buy that which, well got, deserues a portague. At this the cinnick fretted: and heere they begin to challenge the combat; but a parly sounded, summoned them to the last tale with John to the cellar in the spittell; where, if they please, they may carouse freely, though they die deepe in scarlet, as many doe, till they loose themselves in the open streets. Such Diogenes sought at noone day with a lanthorne and a candell. Well, the World so buffeted the cinnicke at his owne weapon, that he playes with her, as weake fencers that carries flesh up and downe for others to dresse. Such was the cinnicke, onskilfull in guips and worldly flaunts, rather to play with short rods, and giue venies till all smarte againe; not in the braines, as the World did, but in the buttocks, as such doe, hauing their joses displaid, making them expert till they cry it up in the top of question.

Our sullen cinnicke sets by his glasse in malice, knits a betill brow till the roome grew darke againe, which the wanton World seeing, flings out of his cell, like a girle at barley brake, leauing the last couple in hell, away she gads, and neuer lookes behinde her. A whirlewinde, sayes the cinnicke, goe after!—is this all my thanks? — the old payment still! — will the World still reward mortality thus? — is vertue thus bedridden? — can she not helpe herselfe? and lookes up to heauen, as hee should say, some power assist! But there he sat, fretting in his owne grease, and, for ought I know, nobody came to help him.

#### CONCLUSIO.

Thus, gentlemen, as the kinde hostess salutes her guests, saying, You see your cheere, and you are welcome — so say I. It may bee you like it not. I am sorrier, you will say, these sallets were ill drest. Like enough; but good stomachs digest anything, and that it was a dry feast. The cinnicke bad [not] the World so much as drinck:—true, a worldling right, who, as the word is drinck before you goe, sets the cart before the horse, and sayes, goe before you drink, why may he not in his cell? — his betters will. I haue seene it in the gentlemens cellers—but I cry you mercy; there, I think, it is, drinck till you cannot goe. Bownce is the worlds motto there, till they discharge the braine of all good abearing, making the body breake the peace in euery corner: but blame me not, I am tedious; pardon my folly—writing of folly; if you knew, you would say hic mirum. Wherefore, if my pardon may be purchased, then so; if not, you may bid me keepe any fooles company.

## N O T E S.

---

Page 1, line 5. *Stultorum plena sunt omnia.*] Armin's motto reminds us of that assumed by La Société de la Mère Folle de Dijon—*Numerus Stultorum infinitus est*. See Du Tilliot “ Mémoires pour servir a l' Histoire de la Fête des Fouux.”—W. J. T.

Page 3, line 11. May beautifie our GLOBE in every line.] An allusion to the *Globe Theatre*, at which Armin was an actor.

Page 3, line 23. While they of Al-soules *gave ayme.*] “ To giue aim” and “ to cry aim” seem to have been synonymous of old, and were figurative phrases derived from archery, generally meaning *to consent to*. “ To cry aim” occurs in “ King John,” act ii., sc. 1 (Collier’s edit., vol. iv., p. 24), and elsewhere in Shakespeare. It may also be pointed out in the works of nearly all the popular writers of the same date. For a few instances, see Dodsyey’s Old Plays, last edit., vol. ii., p. 279.

Page 4, line 4. I goe in *motly.*] Motley was the term applied to the parti-coloured dress of jesters or clowns; such as that worn by Touchstone in “ As you like it,” the domestic fool in “ All’s well that ends well,” &c.

Page 4, line 9. Not with your good *skene* head me.] A skene, or skean, was a species of knife or short sword used by the Irish; and called, in their language, *sgian* or *skian*, probably from the Icelandic *skeina*, to wound.

Page 5, line 7. She now begins to grow *bucksome* as a lightning before death.] The old meaning of “ buxom” is *obedient*. In “ Henry V.,” act iii., sc. 6, Pistol talks of “ buxom valour,” meaning valour that was controllable, and under good command; but it does not seem very clear in what way Armin means to apply the word.

Page 5, line 19. No, nor to the Country, where seldom seene.] This and the five preceding lines are printed as prose in the original; perhaps for the purpose of saving room.

Page 5, line 23. One that was wise enough and *fond* enough.] The most common sense of “fond,” of old, was foolish; and hence we may perhaps infer that our ancestors thought it *foolish* to be fond.

Page 5, line 20. And sold all for a glass prospective.] i. e. Such a glass as conjurors were in the habit of using.

Page 6, line 6. That is sharp *sauce* with bitter dyet.] For *sauce*, the original has *lance*, an obvious misprint.

Page 6, line 18. For as they (!) all for the most part.] *Ay* was almost invariably printed with a capital *I* at the period when this tract was published.

Page 7, line 23. Knowne to many, *loud*e of any.] i. e. probably “*allow'd* of any,” because he relied upon truth in his jests. It may, however, be a misprint for “*loud as* any.”

Page 7, line 31. In motley cotes goes Jack Oates.] Jack Oates is a new name in the list of English Fools or Jesters, and obviously belongs to that class of the General Domestic Fool which the late Mr. Douce, in his Dissertation on the Clowns and Fools of Shakespeare, describes as being “silly by nature, yet cunning and sarcastical.”—W. J. T.

Page 7, line 36. If it were possible such breathde hers to commaunde.] The meaning seems to be, that the World inquires, if it were possible that such persons as Jack Oates breathed hers to command, or at her command.

Page 8, line 8. Queene Richard, art come? quoth he.] “Queen Dick” is still an expression among the lower orders. How it came into use it is not, perhaps, possible to explain.

Page 9, line 18. At Christmas time, when great logs furnish the hall fire.]

When icicles hang by the wall  
And Dick, the shepherd, blows his nail,  
And Tom bears logs into the hall. &c.  
“As you like it.” Act v., sc. 2.

Page 9, line 22. A noyse of minstrels and a Lincolnshire bagpipe was provided.] A *noise* of minstrels meant of old a company of minstrels: thus, in Henry IV., Part 2, Act ii., sc. 4 (Collier's edit. iv., 379), we hear of “Sneak's noise,” which the drawer was told to procure for the entertainment of Falstaff. In the first part of the same play, Shakespeare does not speak very favourably of “the drone of a Lincolnshire bagpipe;” but, from various authorities, it appears that it was an instrument then in much request. From what follows, in Armin, we learn the part of the family for which it was provided.

Page 13, line 29. They knockt to the dresser, and the dinner went up.]

The custom for the cook to knock on the dresser, when the dinner was ready to be placed upon table, is mentioned by many old writers. See Middleton's "Blurt Master Constable," Act ii., sc. 1; upon which the Rev. A. Dyce, in his edition of that dramatist's Works i., 247, makes the following note:—"When dinner was ready, the cook used to knock on the dresser with his knife, as a signal for the servants to carry it into the hall." He adds a correction of an important error on the subject made by Reed and Nares.

Page 14, line 26. The knight and the rest all laugh a good.] i. e. laughed in *good earnest*. The expression was common, and sufficient instances of its use may be seen in a note on Marlowe's "Rich Jew of Malta," in Dodsley's Old Plays, last edit. viii., p. 280. The words occur again on p. 21 and 32 of this tract.

Page 15, line 10. The knight perceiving the fooles *envie*.] i. e. the fool's *hatred*: "envy" was then constantly used with this meaning.

Page 15, line 25. They carde hence what their parents spin.] There is a play here upon the word *card*, as applied to the domestic operations of *carding and spinning* and gaming: "they card hence what their parents spin," means they wantonly disperse what their parents had industriously accumulated.

Page 16, line 3. The deuouring of *deouotions* dyet.] We suspect some misprint here: possibly we ought to read "another's diet," the compositor having carried on the first part of the word "deuouring" to the next word but one.

Page 16, line 18. Two yards in compasse & a nayle I *reade*.] It may be doubtful whether we are to take "I read" literally, and that Armin had read this description of the uncouth dwarf, James Camber, in some work of the time; or whether we are to understand "I read" only in that sense in which our older authors sometimes employ *I rede*, i. e. I *advise* or *inform*. Probably, from what follows, the former was the case.

Page 16, line 22. But what that time Jemy a Camber was.] The custom of keeping a fool appears to have prevailed in the Scotch as generally as in any other of the European courts, and it may be presumed was retained for a long time among the nobility; since, among the curiosities shown at Glammis Castle, was, within these few years, the dress worn by the domestic fool belonging to the family. Among the Scotch wearers of Motley, the name of John Lowe, the king of Scotland's fool, holds a prominent place; while Archee and Muckle John figure among the professed jesters of the English court. The late Mr. Octavius Gilchrist published an interesting account of Archibald Armstrong, and his jests, in the *London Magazine* for Sept. 1824.—W. J. T.

Page 17, line 31. Who hearing the ordinance goe off, would aske what doe they now?] Jemmy Camber would ask; not the king, the last antecedent. Sufficient has been seen to show us that we must not be very critical, either as to Armin's grammar or style of composition.

Page 18, line 3. That of a maide had a *barne*.] A word still used in the north for a *child*.

Page 18, line 12. A sodaine *flaw* or gust rose.] This passage forms a brief but decisive explanation of the line in "Hamlet," Act v., sc.1.

"Should patch a wall to expel the winter's *flaw*,"

and other passages in Shakespeare, where the word "flaw" occurs. A "flaw" is a gust of wind. Boswell informs us that Dryden uses it generally for a storm, but such is not the case in the quotation he makes to support his position.

Page 18, line 35. For no way could I haue been a looser.] There is probably some misprint in the original copy in this sentence; for, as it stands, it is not intelligible.

Page 19, line 18. Wearing a loose kerchiefe, hanging downe backward.] This is curious, shewing that women of bad character at that time wore some peculiar kind of dress by which they were known. They are now recognised by other indications, quite as decisive.

Page 19, line 23. Giue me an Atchison.] "The meaning of the term 'Atchison,' as applied to coins," writes Mr. Laing, of Edinburgh, "is thus explained. Thomas Atcheson was assay-master of the Mint at Edinburgh during the minority of James VI., and also during the reign of Mary. His name was given in derision to base metal coins which then were in circulation, and which, as Bishop Nicolson mentions (Scottish Hist. Library, p. 326, 8vo edit.), were in the year 1587 'cryed down by Proclamation, because counterfeit in England and other foreign parts.' Nicolson, however, at p. 34, confounds this Atcheson with an Englishman, who wrote a treatise on the Gold Mines in Scotland, which was printed some years ago for the Bannatyne Club; and Gough, correcting the Bishop's error, only commits a greater mistake."

Page 20, line 25. He did so, but the glove lay still.] In running at the glove, it was placed upon the ground, and the art was for a horseman, at speed, to take it up on the point of his lance. Running at the ring was different, for there the object to be carried away was suspended. Explanations may be found in Strutt's "Sports and Pastimes."

Page 21, line 26. Jemy, who was, as you haue heard, a *tall* low man.] This reads like a contradiction in terms; but "tall," in the time of our author,

did not usually mean lofty of stature, but *courageous* and *bold*. Shakespeare so uses it with reference to Sir Andrew Aguecheek in "Twelfth Night," act i., sc. 3 (Collier's edit. iii. 330), "He's as *tall* a man as any's in Illyria." Instances of the same kind in other authors of the time are innumerable.

Page 22, line 14. The Earle of Morton's castle at *da Keth*.] No doubt misprinted for *Dalkeith*.

Page 25, line 8. Jemy rose, made him ready.] To make *ready* meant of old merely to *dress*, and to be ready was to be dressed. It was the commonest form of expression.

Page 25, line 25. He that *gard* all men till jeare.] i. e. He that made all men to jest. Mr. Holloway, in his Gen. Dict. of Provincialisms, derives the verb to *gar*, i. e. to compel or make, from the Danish *gior*. Spenser employs it in his "Shepherd's Calendar" for April:—

"Tell me, good Hobbinol, what *gars* thee greet;"

and it is still in use in the north of England as well as in Scotland.

Page 25, line 34. Through the sense of sinne.] Perhaps we ought to read, "through the seas of sin." It seems an error of the press in the original.

Page 27, line 27. When 'a peard most holy.] i. e. When *he appear'd* most holy. Shakespeare repeatedly makes his characters in familiar dialogue use "'a" for *he*. Few of his contemporaries adopt this practice so frequently.

Page 28, line 17. But thus with *supposes* he plays alone.] Shakespeare uses the word "supposes" for suppositions in "The Taming of the Shrew," and in "Titus Andronicus." Gascoyne had done so before him throughout his translation of the *Suppositi* of Ariosto.

Page 28, line 25. Such a hurly-burly in the roome, that passes.] i. e. that passes, or *surpasses*, belief. The expression was common.

Page 28, line 3. Found all this levell coyle.] Perhaps we ought to read, "found all this *lewd* or *wicked* coil or confusion."

Page 29, line 29. In the country, quoth hee, where God is a good man.] This expression is put into Dogberry's mouth in "Much Ado About Nothing," act iii., sc. 5; and it is also found in the interlude of "Lusty Juventus," in the "Merry Jest of Robin Hood," and in Burton's "Anatomy of Melancholy."

Page 30, line 7. And got the foole's head under his arme and bob'd his nose.] The plough-jogger was an early adept in boxing, and got Leonard's head, as we now express it, "in Chancery." The expression is the more applicable since the appointment of *Vice-chaancellors*, so called, perhaps, from the tenacity with which they hold suitors who are unlucky enough to get into any of their courts.

Page 30, line 35. Who, *soothing* up his humours.] The original, by a misprint, has “who *something* up his humours.”

Page 31, line 19. Then to *vere* at his losses sodainely.] There is probably an error in the press in this passage: perhaps we might read “than to *veze* at his losses suddenly.”

Page 32, line 13. Aloud he cries Dmee! Dmee! Dmee!] Most likely an abbreviation of “Dear me”!

Page 36, line 21. His song of *Dirries Farie*.] Part of this song is given afterwards. See p. 38.

Page 36, line 23. Like the poter of the ale-fat.] i. e. like the poker of the ale-vat, in consequence of the “barm” or yeast upon his face to take out the fire.

Page 37, line 24. In the towne of Eexam.] i. e. Evesham.

Page 37, line 36, They went to Partiar.] i. e. Pershore.

Page 38, line 6. They of the towne, loth to lose his company *desirued* to haue it so.] *Sic* in the old copy, but probably we ought to read *desired* for “desirued.”

Page 38, line 13. My hart aked, &c.] This shews that Armin, the author, was one of the players on this occasion, and perhaps the performer of the clown’s parts in the company.

Page 38, line 24. To weepe iu kindnesse, and laugh in extremes.] “Extremes” is here used in the sense in which Shakespeare not unfrequently employs it. See “Winters Tale,” act iv., sc. 3; “Troilus and Cressida,” act iv., sc. 2; “Romeo and Juliet,” act iv., sc. 1., &c.

Page 38, line 34. Mistris Annis, M. Thomas, under a tree mending of shoone.] The joke seems to be that the fool, at the commencement of each line, inserted some of the names of the parties before whom he was singing: the song by itself ran thus:—

“*As I went to Derries Faire  
There was I ware of a jolly begger,  
Under a tree mending of shoone,  
Night-braue beggars every one.*”

According to the license in the rhyming of old ballads, “begger,” or “begare,” as it would be spelt, would be sufficient rhyme for “Faire.” We have no other trace of this song; but as Armin does not insert it, and adds, “And so forward,” we may presume that it was well known.

Page 39, line 5. Buy any FLAWRE.] *Sic* in orig., but perhaps a misprint for some word beginning with the letters p, in the pronunciation of which Jack Miller was “plagued.” Possibly we ought to read *prawnes*.

Page 39, line 10. And euer as he hit the on word.] It may be doubted

whether we ought to read "the *one* word," or to suppose "*on* the" transposed in the printing.

Page 40, line 3. There was no little boot to bid ront.] Some misprint has obscured the sense here. Ought we to read "There was no little boot to be rid on't?"

Page 40, line 31. That Bankes, his horse, with all his strength cannot draw them out.] One of the innumerable allusions to a person of the name of Bankes, who had trained a small horse to perform many wonderful feats. There is hardly a comic writer between 1590 and 1620 who does not introduce some notice of Bankes and his horse Marocco. A supposed dialogue between them, called *Maroccus Extaticus*, was printed in 1595, from which we learn the important fact that the horse was bay. After exhibiting him throughout this kingdom, Bankes took his horse abroad, where it seems to have been suspected that the animal was a fiend in disguise, and Bankes a conjuror. We learn the fate of both in the mock-romance of "Don Zara del Fogo," not printed until 1656, but written much earlier. "Finally," (says the unknown author), having of a long time proved himselfe the ornament of the British clime, travailing to Rome with his master, they were both burned by commandment of the pope." Marginal note to page 114. Bankes's horse is immortalised by Shakespeare in "Love's Labour's Lost," act i., sc. 2.

Page 41, line 9. Forsooth Wil. Sommers.] This well-known Jester of Henry VIII. is made, as it were, the hero of T. Nash's "Summers Last Will and Testament," a comic shew, written about 1593, and printed in 1600. An accurate reprint of it is given in "Dodsley's Old Plays," last edit., vol. ix. "A pleasant History of the Life and Death of Will Summers" was printed early, but no edition of it now seems to be known, but one in 1676, which was reprinted in 1794, with a portrait of Summers looking through a casement. We copy the following jest relating to him from Samuel Rowland's tract, called "Good and Bad Newes," 1622, 4to.

"Will Sommers once unto King Harry came,  
And in a serious shew himselfe did frame  
To goe to London, taking of his leaue.  
Stay, William (quoth the king) I doe perceiue  
You are in haste; but tell me your occasion:  
Let me prevail thus by a friends perswasion.—  
Quoth he, if thou wilt know, Ile tell thee marry:  
I goe to London for Court-newes, old Harry.—  
Goest thither from the Court to hear Court-newes?  
This is a tricke, Sommers, that makes me muse.

Oh, yes (quoth William) citizens can show  
 Whats done in Court ere thou and I doe know.  
 If an Embassador be comming over,  
 Before he doe arrive and land at Dover  
 They know his master's message and intent,  
 Ere thou canst tell the cause why he is sent.  
 If of a Parliament they doe but heare,  
 They know what lawes shall be enacted there.  
 And, therefore, for a while, adue Whitehall.  
 Harry, Ile bring thee newes home, lyes and all."

We quote the above from the original very rare volume in the library of the Rt. Hon. Lord Francis Egerton, M.P.; but a very excellent reprint of it has been recently made by Edward V. Utterson, Esq., consisting, however, of only sixteen copies. Thus, each of these is scarcely less a prize than the original. We may add that Will Sommers figures conspicuously in S. Rowley's "When you see me you know me," a historical play, on the events of the reign of Henry VIII., printed in 1605.

Page 41, line 20. Leane he was, hollow-eyde, as all report.] This description of Will Sommers's person accords very well with the rare print of him by Delaram, described by Granger in his "Biographical History of England" (i. p. 116, ed. 1779), and also with the portrait of him in the frontispiece to the first volume of Sir Henry Ellis's "Original Letters illustrative of English History," which is taken from Henry the Eight's Psalter, preserved among the Royal MSS. in the British Museum. It does not, however, by any means correspond with the admirable picture by Holbein of a merry knave looking through a leaded casement, described in the Guide to the Pictures at Hampton Court, as one of Henry the Eight's jesters, but traditionally said to be a portrait of Will Sommers. A fine copy of this portrait, we understand, is preserved at Audley End, the seat of the Right Honourable Lord Braybrooke.—W. J. T.

Page 42, line 8. Will Sommers, in no little credit at the King's Court.] Our author speaks this with truth, since, notwithstanding Henry's well-known fondness for these motley followers, Will is almost the only one of them whose memory has survived. Patch and Sexton are named in Henry's Household Book; and Mr. Douce, who supposes Patch to be only another name for Fool, states that he was given to Henry by Wolsey. Will Sommers, in all probability, owes his reputation rather to the uniform kindness with which he used his influence over bluff Harry, than to his wit or folly; and one of the latest instances of this conduct is so honourable to the poor

jester, that it is only justice to his memory to repeat it as told by Granger :—

Will Sommers was sometimes a servant in the family of Richard Farmer, Esq., of Eston Weston, in Northamptonshire, ancestor to the Earl of Pomfret. This gentleman was found guilty of a *præmunire* in the reign of Henry VIII., for sending eightpence and a couple of shirts to a priest convicted of denying the king's supremacy, who was then a prisoner in the goal at Buckingham. The rapacious monarch seized whatever he was possessed of, and reduced him to a state of miserable dependence. Will Sommers, touched with compassion for his unhappy master, is said to have dropped some expressions, in the king's last illness, which reached the conscience of the merciless prince, and to have caused the remains of his estate, which had been dismembered, to be restored to him.—W. J. T.

Page 43, line 34. By my *vusse*.] So in the original, but the meaning of the asseveration it is not easy to comprehend: possibly “By my *vows*.”

Page 45, line 1. And are for mirth inserted into stage-playes.] Referring to such dramatic pieces as “When you see me you know me,” by Rowley, before-mentioned.

Page 45, line 3. There are some will affirme it now living at Greenwich.] We have no account of the precise period of the death of Will Sommers, but it might not have happened more than fifty or sixty years before Armin wrote; and people who recollect Sommers and his pranks might still be living in Greenwich and elsewhere.

Page 46, line 9. That remarkable work of his tombe.] P. Martyr, in his *Comment in lib. Samuelis* (2nd Samuel, cap. 18) relates a remarkable anecdote, which may here be very properly introduced. It appears that the Cardinal was in the habit of frequently visiting his tomb at Windsor to watch the progress of the work. On one of these occasions he was accompanied by his fool, or jester, who, seeing him enter the monument, said, You do well to go into your tomb during your lifetime, for you will never enter it when dead.

This was probably the same fool who, congratulating the Cardinal upon receiving that dignity, expressed a wish that he might soon see him Pope. Why so? inquired the Cardinal. Marry replied he, St. Peter, who was a fisherman, instituted fasts that fish might fetch a better price, and, since your eminence was bred a butcher, you would, no doubt, order us to eat meat, instead of fish, for the sake of your trade.

The readers of “Cavendish's Life of Woolsey” will remember the Cardinal's requesting Norris to present the King with this poor fool, and the almost pathetic manner in which he describes the fool's unwillingness to be separated from his old master.—W. J. T.

Page 47, line 9. Had hee not poysoned himselfe.] The notion, founded upon a passage in Cavendish's "Life of Wolsey," that the Cardinal poisoned himself, has been controverted with success, by Pegge. See Gentlemen's Magazine, vol. xxv., p. 25.

Page 48, line 16. O weel to make them great, make ourselves.] There is probably an error of the press in this passage, which renders the sense obscure. The whole paragraph is not very intelligible.

Page 49, line 22. *Lesse* such as let him not alone.] i. e., "Unless such," &c.

Page 49, line 23. As *a liude*, so *a dyde*.] i. e. As *he* liv'd so *he* died. See p. 27, and the note: this is another instance of the same kind.

Page 49, line 27. But neither John a nody, nor *John a dreames*.] "John a-dreams" is mentioned in Hamlet.

"A dull and muddy-mettled rascal, peak,  
Like John a-dreams, unpregnant of my cause."

The commentators introduce notes about Jack-a-Lent, Jack-a-Lanthern, and John-a-Droynes; but they were unacquainted with this passage in Armin's tract about "John a nody and John a dreames," both names, perhaps, meant for the same person.

Page 49, line 29. Like your tobacco to *tast* strong.] The original by an obvious misprint has "to *fast* strong."

Page 50, line 1. Snapping his fingers barber-like.] The snapping, or, as it is sometimes spelt, knacking, of their fingers by barbers is noticed by many old writers. "Amongst the rest let not the barber be forgotten; and look that he be an excellent fellow, and one that can *snap his fingers* with dexterity." "Greenes *Tu Quoque*" in Dodsley's Old Plays, last edit., vol. vii., p. 31. See also Ben Jonson's "Epicoene," act i., sc. 2. Lily, in his "Midas," 1592, introduces a barber, who says to his apprentice, "Thou knowest, boy, I haue taught thee the *knacking of the hands*."

Page 50, line 21. To meet with B. Nowell.] Dean Nowell of course all are acquainted with, but it is questionable why Armin places a capital B. before his name, as he never was a bishop, and his Christian name was Alexander. Afterwards Armin calls him "B. Deane."

Page 50, line 23. He gaue *them* a groat.] We ought to read *him* for "them."

Page 54, line 18. As his picture in Christ's Hospital (now to be seene) can witnesse.] This picture of a domestic fool was in existence some years ago, but nobody was able to state whom it represented. Armin's tract will

enable those who, we presume, now have charge of the portrait to decide the question.

Page 55, line 8. There are, as Hamlet saies, things cald whips in store.] No such passage is to be found in Shakespeare's Hamlet, as it has come down to us, either in the editions of 1603, 1604, or in any later impression. Possibly Armin may refer to the old Hamlet which preceded Shakespeare's tragedy; but this seems unlikely, as he was an actor in the same theatre as that for which Shakespeare wrote.

Page 55, line 14. Least some say *ne sutra*.] Of course a misprint for *ne sutor*. Armin did not add the rest of the proverb, because it was so well known.

Page 55, line 22. Which, well got, deserues a *portague*.] Probably a Portuguese gold coin.

Page 55, line 33.] And glue *Venies* till all smarte againe.] *Venie*, or, as it is sometimes spelt, *Venu* or *Venny*, was a very common fencing term, meaning the onset, from the French *Venir*. See "Loves Labours Lost," vol. ii., p. 347, Collier's Shakespeare, where the word, as in most instances of its use, is figuratively employed.

Page 56, line 3. Like a girle at barley brake, leauing the last couple in hell.] Barley-break seems to have been a game much resembling what is now called Prisoner's Base, or Prisoner's Bars. "Leaving the last couple in hell" was a phrase in it, and the allusions to it, in old writers, are endless.

LONDON :

F. SHOBERL, JUN., 51, RUPERT STREET, HAYMARKET,  
PRINTER TO H. R. H. PRINCE ALBERT.

